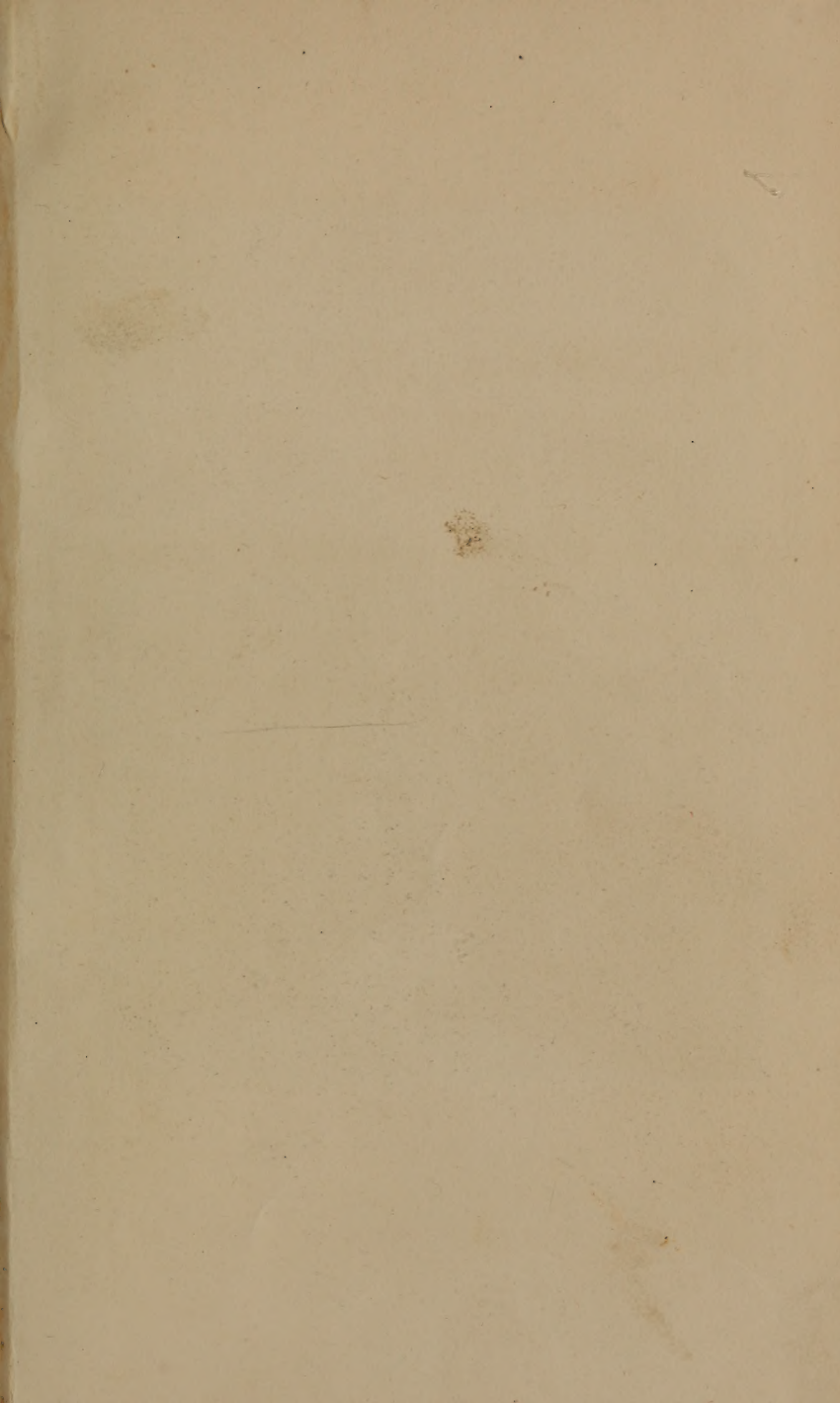


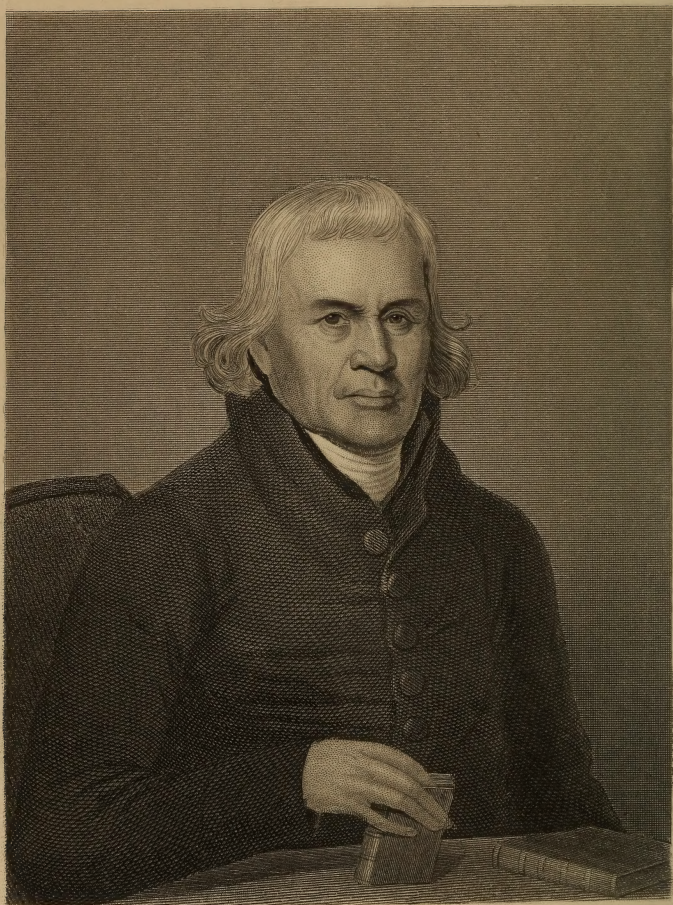
LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



00010310659







Engr^d by A.H. Ritchie.

Francis Asbury

BISHOP OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH

4335.C

THE

CHARACTER AND CAREER

OF

FRANCIS ASBURY,

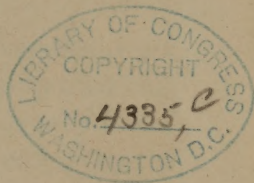
BISHOP OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

Illustrated by Numerous Selections from his Journal,

ARRANGED IN CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER.

BY REV. EDWIN L. JAMES.

COMPILER OF "WESLEY HIS OWN HISTORIAN."



NEW YORK:

CARLTON & LANAHAN.

SAN FRANCISCO: E. THOMAS.

CINCINNATI: HITCHCOCK & WALDEN.

1872.

M

BX8495
A8A4

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1872, by

CARLTON & LANAHAN,

in the Office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington.

[12-30393]

PREFACE.

THE historic feature of Asbury's Journal gives to it a value that cannot be overestimated both in regard to the personal character of this wonderful man, and the marvelous growth of Methodism under his labors and supervision.

In perusing this work the reader will accompany Mr. Asbury from place to place, from State to State, from Conference to Conference—preaching, praying, exhorting, visiting the societies and classes, comforting the sick, burying the dead, holding Conferences, ordaining ministers, founding schools, raising funds, and inspiring the preachers in their self-sacrificing work by word and example.

In accomplishing his difficult and diversified work this great evangelist will be seen constantly traveling, crossing rivers, fording streams, climbing mountains, sleeping on the ground or cabin floor, eating by the wayside, or fasting for want of food.

It will be seen that although performing Herculean labors, Asbury had to contend with imperfect health, and had frequent attacks of sickness—often resorting to severe remedies that he might the sooner resume his work.

Asbury never allowed himself to be idle. If confined within doors he was always busy, writing up his Journal or correspondence, reading theology, teaching the children, preaching to the families, or pleading with God for success in his divine work.

The selections in this volume will show that Asbury's solicitude for the salvation of men was so intense, and his desire for the spread and triumph of Methodism so absorbing, that no obstacle could arrest his progress, no suffering could quench his fervor, no danger intimidate him, nor ease nor friendship detain him for an hour; but with the spirit of his divine Master, and the zeal of an Apostle, he swept through the continent as if possessing the wings of an angel, bearing him with tireless energy and marvelous speed on his course.

Extracts have been made illustrating the primitive simplicity, deep humility, and unfaltering fidelity of this man of God.

Asbury does not conceal his hostility to American slavery, intemperance, and other public sins and follies of his times, but utters strong and sarcastic words against them.

While in his heart he gave the most cordial welcome to professors of every name in whom he could detect true piety, he was severe on the formalism and worldliness of Christians, and contributed largely to guard his beloved Methodism from such a spirit.

The reader of this volume will not fail, we think, to reach the conclusion that Francis Asbury was an

earnest Christian, a successful evangelist, a wise counselor and administrator, and a model Bishop.

In following Mr. Asbury over the continent it has been impracticable to notice every place favored with his presence and labors, but we have indicated every State, showing the frequency with which he visited each State in accomplishing his sublime work.

✱ In his annual or semi-annual journeys he visited Massachusetts twenty-three times after 1791, the date of his first visit, and during the forty-five years of his ministry in America he visited the State of New York fifty-six times, New Jersey sixty-two, Pennsylvania seventy-eight, Delaware thirty-three, Maryland eighty, North Carolina sixty-three, South Carolina forty-six, Virginia eighty-four, Tennessee and Georgia twenty times each, and other States or Territories with corresponding frequency.

In his unparalleled itinerant career he preached about sixteen thousand five hundred sermons, or at least one a day, and traveled about two hundred and seventy thousand miles, or six thousand a year, presiding in no less than two hundred and twenty-four Annual Conferences, and ordaining more than four thousand preachers.

In constructing this work we have made selections that recorded some sentiment or criticism, some incident painful or pleasing, some scene of suffering or exposure, some signal preservation from danger, some temptation or triumph in Christian experience, some name or place illustrious in Methodism, or some victory in the battle for truth fought by our great stand-

ard-bearer and his co-laborers in founding Methodism in the New World. And as one or more of these extracts have been taken from nearly every page of the Journal, and in chronological order, this volume may be said to be an abridgment of the Journal.

As there are thousands of aged Christians remaining in the Militant Church who feel that the name and labors of Asbury are invested with a peculiar interest, and as the present generation may find much in the volume to remind them of the spirituality and simplicity of early Methodism, and of the labor and sacrifice it cost to establish it, we trust it will be read with grateful interest and profit.

There may be found in these pages a few extracts not containing any incident or point of special interest. Such are introduced to preserve a record of the Bishop's visits to the several States or Territories, and the order in which he made them.

The name of the State visited is usually in the heading of the extract. Whensoever omitted, the location is still to be understood to be in the State last indicated.

E. L. J.

CONTENTS.

	Page		Page
Asbury's Motive for Keeping a Diary.....	23	Asbury Visits Prisoners—Reflections.....	41
Asbury Offers to go to America.	23	Asbury's Description of Fredericka.....	42
Supplied with Funds.....	24	The "Forest Home" for the Methodist.....	42
Sails for America.....	24	Asbury in Contact with a Church Minister.....	43
Asbury's Reflections on Ship-board.....	25	Asbury's Outline of a Sermon at Quarterly Meeting.....	44
Asbury, How Employed.....	25	Asbury in Baltimore.....	45
Asbury's Trials on the Voyage.	26	The Doctrine of Perfect Love—Its Tendency.....	45
Lands in Philadelphia.....	26	Asbury preaches at a Tavern ..	45
Asbury Preaches in Philadelphia.....	27	An Old-fashioned Quarterly Meeting.....	45
Visits Burlington and Staten Island.....	27	Asbury at Baltimore.....	46
Reaches New York.....	28	In Philadelphia.....	47
Is Fixed to the Methodist Plan.....	28	In New York.....	47
Asbury's Trip to Westchester..	29	Asbury's Description of New York City.....	48
Asbury at New Rochelle.....	30	Asbury in New Jersey.....	48
Sick—Kindly Treated.....	31	A Letter from Mr. Wesley.....	48
In New York—Self-Consecration.....	32	Has a Christian a Bad Heart?..	49
Visits from House to House.	32	Asbury in Burlington.....	49
On Staten Island.....	32	In New York.....	50
In Philadelphia.....	33	On Staten Island.....	50
In Wilmington.....	34	Destruction of Mr. Whitefield's Orphan House.....	51
Returns to Philadelphia.....	34	A General Conference.....	51
Not to be Guided by Half-Hearted Methodists.....	35	The People of Newcastle.....	52
Again in Burlington.....	35	Great Hope for Baltimore.....	53
Execution at Chester.....	35	An Imputation Hurl'd Back... ..	53
Asbury Visits Prisoners at Burlington.....	36	A Painful Prospect.....	54
At Trenton.....	36	Asbury Raised Up from the Borders of Death.....	54
Warns the People at an Execution.....	37	Preaches after a Month's Intermission.....	55
Begging Money—Church Debt.....	37	Quarterly Conference—Arrangement for the Work.....	55
"Still as a Dumb Man".....	37	Asbury's Solicitude for Baltimore.....	56
Journeys to New York.....	38	A Champion in Sin Wounded by the Spirit.....	57
A Mixed Company.....	39	Using the Ordinances.....	58
Asbury Resolves to be a Disciplinarian.....	40	Asbury Hopeful of Baltimore..	58
Asbury's Plan of a Sermon on the Judgment.....	40	The Revelation of St. John....	59
Asbury Receives a Letter from Mr. Wesley.....	41	Confirmation of the Work of God	60
In Trenton and Burlington..	41		
In Philadelphia.....	41		

	Page		Page
Work of God in Virginia.....	60	An Apology for Mr. Wesley...	81
An Assault from Satan.....	61	Asbury Safe in Philadelphia—	
Asbury at Newcastle.....	61	A Journey of Three Thou-	
Conference at Philadelphia....	61	sand Miles.....	81
Asbury Again in New York....	62	Sufferings of Christ.....	81
A Blessed State of Heart.....	63	Asbury Prays for God's Help in	
A Temptation of Satan.....	63	the War Struggle.....	82
Heavy Work for a Sick Man... 64		Again in New Jersey.....	82
A Page of Personal History... 64		Appointed to Baltimore.....	83
Descendants of the French Prot-		An Impenetrable Congregation	83
estants.....	66	Asbury Fined for Preaching the	
Asbury's Soul Longing for		Gospel.....	84
Heaven.....	66	Soaring too High—a Casualty	84
A Great Folly.....	67	Decides to Visit the Warm	
Berridge and Fletcher.....	67	Springs.....	85
Waiting to Hear what the Blun-		The Burden of the Lord upon	
derer had to Say.....	67	Him.....	85
Alarm of Fire—Reflections.... 68		Decided Results from his Labors	
Too Much for Both the People		at the Springs.....	85
and Preacher.....	68	An Unusual Programme for an	
Delightful Intercourse with		Invalid.....	86
God.....	69	Asbury's Limited Accommoda-	
Asbury Meets with a Fellow-		tions.....	86
Passenger.....	69	Opposition from the Parson..	86
Asbury in Philadelphia.....	70	A Characteristic Description... 87	
A Small Congregation.....	70	A Just Discrimination.....	87
Asbury at a Quaker Meeting... 70		Asbury's Salary—Six Pounds	
An Affliction—Satan Busy..... 71		per Quarter.....	87
Asbury Ill, but Employed in		Asbury always Prepared for the	
Reading.....	72	Worst.....	88
Pantings of Heart to Labor for		Asbury's Private Devotions... 88	
God.....	72	A Dangerous Practice.....	88
New House and Old Friends in		Asbury's Heavy Temptations.. 89	
Baltimore.....	72	A Troublesome Little Irish-	
Asbury Preaches with Great		man.....	89
Pathos.....	73	A Deistical Audience at Annap-	
Statistics of Circuits and Preach-		olis.....	89
ers.....	73	Asbury Suffering from Natural	
Baltimore Ninety-six Years ago 74		Timidity.....	90
Asbury on his way to Philadel-		Asbury's Private Prayer—Seven	
phia.....	74	Times a Day.....	90
In Norfolk.....	74	A Higher Rule.....	91
Ballast Necessary—Puffs of Ap-		Asbury's Temptation—Prayer. 91	
plause.....	75	An Attempt to Shoot Asbury.. 91	
The Power of Christian Simp-		Satan's Attacks Repulsed..... 92	
licity.....	76	Conference at Deer Creek..... 92	
Love of Souls Stronger than		“What Have I Done?”..... 94	
Love of Country.....	76	Mr. Rankin's Last Sermon in	
Marines in Norfolk—Reflection 77		America.....	94
A Just Observation.....	77	Asbury on Predestination..... 94	
A Retrospect.....	78	Visits a Prisoner under Sen-	
Asbury Entering on a New		tence of Death.....	95
Year.....	78	Panting after Holiness..... 96	
Burnet's History of His Own		“Poor Rich Sinners”..... 96	
Times.....	78	A Peaceful and Passive Spirit.. 96	
“Ended where we Began”.... 79		An Awful Storm—Reflections.. 97	
Baltimore Alarmed—Reflection 79		Asbury will Live and Die a	
Heaven and Earth Contrasted.. 80		Methodist.....	97

	Page		Page
Comotions Without—Peace		Asbury Preaching for Souls,	
Within	98	not for Silver	117
"Calm on Tumult's Wheels I		"A Lame Separation"	118
Sit"	98	The Doctor's Means very Suc-	
Divine Contentment	98	cessful	118
Asbury on the Eastern Shore ..	99	Reading, Praying, Preaching,	
A Happy Christmas Season...	99	and Sea-bathing Combined	118
Asbury Reading Josephus—A		Asbury a Bible Student	119
Reflection	100	An Old-fashioned Quarterly	
Asbury's Dark Prospects—		Meeting	119
Strong Confidence	100	"People Will and Will Not" ..	120
Estimate of Wesley's Works	101	Asbury an Early Riser	120
Asbury under Weariness of		Prefers the Episcopal Mode	
Mind—Cause	101	of Ordination	121
How Employed at T. White's.	102	Brother Hartley Determined to	
Changes his Place of Retirement	102	Marry	121
Cause of Concealment Stated.	104	"The Devil will Let us Read	
Asbury Returns to his First		if we Will not Pray"	121
Asylum	104	Not to be Converted by Thunder	
Asbury's Mind "Twisted and		and Lightning	122
Tortured"	104	A Curious Motive for Pro-	
"The Mighty Debt of Praise" ..	105	claiming a Fast	122
Two of the Preachers Appre-		The Work Deepens and Spreads	123
hended	105	Difficulties of Supplying the	
Asbury Preaches in the Neigh-		Work	123
borhood of his Retreat	106	An Aged Man Deaf to Script-	
Delaware to Become the Garden		ure and Reason	123
of the Lord	106	A Funeral Sermon	124
An Improvised Circuit	107	Quarterly Meeting in Edward	
Asbury No Dreamer	107	White's Barn	124
Asbury's Firm Trust amid the		Friday Asbury's Fast-day	125
Gloom and Darkness	108	Asbury's Apportionment of	
"Sweet Gales of God's Love" ..	108	Time	125
Asbury's Weighty Words on		Asbury prefers Death to a God-	
Church Discipline	109	forsaken People	126
Asbury Restless in his Limited		Brother Hartley Married	126
Work	110	Asbury's Estimate of Fletcher	127
A Stupefying and Dangerous		Cromwell a Prodigy	127
Sentiment	110	Satan is a Liar, Christ is True	127
Asbury Must Work for the		The Nicolites	128
Sake of Example	111	Lawyer Basset	129
Hervey and Fletcher	111	Freeborn Garrettson in Jail ..	129
Asbury's Field of Labor Ex-		Warburton against Wesley and	
panding	112	Whitefield	130
The Two Extremes	112	Garrettson Released	130
Almost a Prophecy	114	One State too Small a Field for	
Asbury's Sensitive Conscience	114	Asbury	130
Strong Impression	115	Asbury Weather-bound	131
Trusting in Past Experience ..	115	"Report, say They, and We	
Asbury's Wandering Thoughts		will Report it"	131
in Prayer	116	Asbury Prays for Good Weather	
Conference for the Northern		er	132
Stations	116	"John's People Fishing"	132
Asbury Seeks to Prevent a		Asbury Sets Off for Baltimore.	133
Separation in the South ..	116	The Act against Non-Jurors ..	133
"Why should we Lose One		A Happy Thought	133
Hour?"	117	The Virginia Conference—Reconciliation	135

	Page		Page
Asbury Wanted in Every Part of the Work	137	A Thousand at Quarterly Meeting	160
“Always on the Wing”	137	Asbury in Baltimore	160
Great Commotion	138	Party Spirit Among the People	160
Slavery—A Petition Answered	138	Asbury's Rule in Praying for the Church	161
John Dickins	139	Asbury Expecting Better Entertainment	161
Kingswood School in America	139	The Best Antidote	162
Asbury Fording Creeks and Sleeping on the Floor	140	Philip Adams	162
A Question Answered	141	Mr. Kennon—His Religion and Creed	162
Over Rocks, Hills, Creeks, and Pathless Woods	142	Asbury Successful as a Peacemaker	163
Chatham County	142	Rejoices in the News of American Independence	163
Too Lazy to Ride a Circuit	143	Baltimore Conference—General Statistics	164
Isaac Rawlins Brought to Terms	143	Asbury Sick and Weary	164
“Cromwell is the Man”	144	“My Poor Horse”	165
A Running Life	144	Asbury's Inactivity Embittered Philadelphia a Noisy, Disagreeable Place	166
A Retrospect	145	Poor Gospel-hardened Trenton William Tennent	166
A Sensible View	146	Asbury's Labors—Begging for Church Debt	166
Intermittent Fever	146	White's New Chapel	167
Asbury Writes to Mr. Wesley—His Answer	147	Williamsburg the Former Capital	167
Asbury's Traveling Companion Sick	147	A Cold State of Things	168
Melancholy Tidings	148	The Barn a Closet for Prayer	168
Asbury Mourns the Death of his Friend	149	No Fodder, no Supper, no Prayer	168
Primitive Way of Traveling	149	Peace Confirmed between England and America	169
Asbury at Mr. Gough's once More	150	Love-feast Testimony in Favor of African Liberty	169
Quarterly Meeting at Dover	151	Cruelty to a Negro—Asbury's Protest	169
A Record of Six Months	151	Hunger and Hard Work not the Worst of It	170
Asbury's Work Laid Out	151	Quarterly Meeting—Asbury's Aspiration for Holiness	170
Fervent Prayer for the Work of God	152	Asbury in New York	171
Bleeding and Blistering	152	Hard Lodging for a Sick Man	171
The Wilds and Swamps of Delaware	153	A Wild Chase	171
Bad Habits Soon Learned	153	Quakers Help Build the Salem Church	172
Asbury True to his Colors	153	From North to South	172
In Philadelphia	154	Eight Years Ago	172
Benjamin Abbott	154	Asbury in Dover Again	173
Asbury a Rapid Reader	155	On the Banks of the Potomac	173
Again in Philadelphia	155	At Alexandria Court-house	173
Review of his Travels	155	Letter from Mr. Wesley—Preaches at Edenton	174
Twenty Preachers at Conference	156	A Ride of Forty Miles—A Congregation of Fifteen	174
Harmony of the Preachers	156		
Harry, the Black Man	156		
Wicked Whisky Drinkers	156		
Wonderful Caves	157		
Asbury Sleeping among the Rocks	158		
Sick—Severe Treatment	158		
Persecution—Spiritual Prosperity	159		
Asbury soon Tires of the City	159		
Harry in Danger	159		

Contents.

II

	Page		Page
Asbury Wonderfully Enter- tained	174	Asbury at Bath	189
Sweeps through the Counties	175	A New Chapel in Baltimore ..	189
Northward Again	175	Asbury in Philadelphia	189
Glendenning Foiled	176	In New York	189
Asbury Ascending the Alle- ghany	176	At Salem—A Baptism	190
A Mixed Congregation	176	In Chester and Wilmington.	190
One Hundred and Sixty Miles of Rough Roads	177	In Dover	191
Asbury at Fredericktown and Winchester	177	At Kent Old Chapel	191
Philadelphia Circuit	177	Exchanges his Jersey Wagon for a Sulky	191
Asbury at Burlington and Trenton	178	Unwilling to be Idle	192
Growing into Good Methodists	178	Swampy Routes and Crazy Bridges	192
John Budd—Fellowship and Prayer	179	Asbury at Newbern and Beau- fort	193
Asbury Exhorting the Boys at School	179	Charleston Eighty-six Years Ago	193
Asbury's First Visit to Kent Island	179	A High Breakfast	193
Three Days' Work	180	Asbury when with the Poor ..	194
Asbury Meets Coke and What- coat	180	Allows Nothing to Detain Him	194
Dr. Coke Reviews Asbury's Field of Labor	181	Asbury's Cool Reception at Hillsborough	195
Asbury Meets with T. Vasey ..	181	A Reinforcement	195
Asbury's Approaching Eleva- tion	181	Financiering	195
Methodist Episcopal Church Organized—Asbury's Elec- tion and Ordination	182	Asbury's Interview with Mr. Otterbein	196
Asbury's First Sermon after Ordination	183	Asbury Going to the Frontiers	196
Asbury off to Virginia	183	Specially Wicked at Court Time	197
Afraid of Self-Estimation ..	184	Bad Roads—Little to Eat—Un- comfortable Lodgings ...	197
Administering the Ordi- nances	184	Asbury at Bath for Health, but Hard at Work	198
"Here and There a Horse Thief"	185	Slow Progress with the College	198
Asbury Baptizes by Immersion	185	Northward Again	198
A Week in Charleston	185	Asbury Ill in New York—His Journals	199
An Oasis in the Desert	186	Among the Sands of New Jersey	199
Merry, Drinking Raftsmen ...	186	At Cape May	199
"His Sermon was his Own"— Proof	187	Meets with Whatcoat in Philadelphia	200
Agitation—Dr. Coke—O'Kelly —Slavery	187	Asbury's Flying Visit to New Jersey	200
Asbury Lodges in the Poor- house	187	Asbury Back to Philadelphia.	200
Coke and Asbury Wait on General Washington	188	In Dover	201
Dr. Coke Takes Leave of America	188	At Garrettson Chapel	201
Asbury Preaches the Founda- tion Sermon of Cokesbury College	188	At Lewiston Court-house ..	201
		Good News from Talbot Circuit	201
		The College and Book Concern	202
		Asbury Off to Virginia	202
		Begins the Year with Hard Work	202
		A Famous Heroine for Christ.	203
		Asbury's Trust in Providence Confirmed	203
		Newbern—Left the People as He Found Them	203

	Page		Page
Methodism Obtains a Foot- hold in Georgetown and Charleston.....	204	Methodists Emancipate their Slaves.....	220
Coke and Asbury in Company Rapid Movements.....	204	A Shout Among the People...	220
Dr. Coke at Elizabethtown and New York.....	206	Attempt to Burn Cokesbury College.....	220
Asbury on Long Island.....	206	An Offensive Smell of Rum...	221
Finds the Right Kind of Hearers.....	206	The Lord at Work—Good Times	221
Ordains Ezekiel Cooper Dea- con.....	206	Hunger, Fatigue, and Fever...	221
In Great Union with the Church and the Lord.....	207	Coke and Asbury Find a Pul- pit Competitor.....	222
“Will it Always be So?”....	207	Georgia Conference on Educa- tion.....	222
West Point.....	207	Charleston Conference—Un- kind Attack.....	222
Asbury Stimulated by Large Congregations.....	208	Asbury Cares for the Indians.	223
Firebrands in Philadelphia....	208	Conference at Leesburg.....	223
Asbury at the Springs.....	208	Conversions in Baltimore and Cokesbury College.....	224
A Good Time at Bell's and Barratt's.....	209	Conference at Trenton.....	224
“At Jones's all Death! Death! Death!”.....	209	The Work Opens in New York State and in New England	224
“Life a Weariness without God, Love, and Labor”....	209	Dr. Coke Sails for England...	225
A Week of Haste in Business.	210	Asbury in Dutchess County...	225
Asbury in Philadelphia.....	210	“The Poor First”.....	225
Jacob Brush and Ira Ellis Or- dained Deacons.....	211	“No Desire to See Them Again”.....	226
Opening of Cokesbury College	211	Asbury Not Satisfied with Re- sults in Philadelphia.....	226
Brother H. was Glad to Resign	211	Not Cordially Received at Carlisle.....	226
“When I Awake I am Still With Thee”.....	211	Candidates for the Ministry Increasing.....	227
Peter's Denial of His Master..	212	Asbury “Not Born to Riches”	227
Conference at Charleston—Ri- otous Demonstrations.....	212	A High Day at Shepherdstown	227
Conference in Georgia.....	213	“A Wonder-working Time”..	228
Asbury Journeying in South Carolina.....	213	A Death at Cokesbury.....	228
—An Awful Journey.....	214	A New Church at Burlington.	229
Asbury in Virginia.....	215	Dedication at Wilmington...	229
Conference in Tennessee.....	215	A Charity School.....	229
Forty-five Miles a Day.....	216	The “Saints of the World Displeased”.....	230
Asbury Can Bear Methodist Noise.....	216	Cokesbury—Council Held in Baltimore.....	230
Conference in Virginia.....	217	Faithfully Warned.....	231
Asbury Crossing the Alleghany	217	James O'Kelly—Restless....	232
“The Lame and the Blind”..	218	Asbury Sweeps Through the Counties.....	232
Asbury at Work for Cokesbury College.....	218	Good News—All Partake of the Joy.....	233
Conference at Philadelphia....	218	Charleston Conference Res- olves to Establish Sun- day-Schools.....	233
Asbury at Elizabethtown.....	218	Preachers' Salaries and Defi- ciencies.....	234
Conference at New York.....	218	Wesley and Whitefield School	234
Asbury Returns Through New Jersey.....	219	Six Hundred Miles in Three Weeks.....	234
Again in Dover.....	219	Asbury Contemplating Death.	235
For and Against Slavery.....	219		

	Page		Page
Thunder and Lightning and Yelling of Wolves.....	235	Conference in New York—Asbury Preaches on the Death of Wesley.....	253
Condition of the Preachers....	236	Asbury in Connecticut — A Close Observer.....	254
A Great Load for a Little Horse	236	Asbury's Reception at Stratford	255
A Poor Sinner Highly Offended	236	Reception at New Haven...	255
Two Thousand Five Hundred Miles in Two Months....	237	Asbury Favored by the Standing Order at Middletown..	256
Indian Murders.....	237	New London.....	257
A Guard from Kentucky—Asbury's Dream.....	238	Churches and Religion at Newport.....	258
Journey Through the Wilderness—Graves of the Slain.	238	Providence in 1791.....	258
Conference in Lexington.....	239	Mr. Snow—Tennent and Whitefield.....	258
Return Journey—Asbury Adjutant and Quartermaster.	240	Boston in 1791.....	259
General Russell's a Favorite Stopping-place.....	241	Lynn the Perfection of Beauty	259
Conference on Yadkin River..	241	Asbury's Sympathy for the Inhabitants of Marblehead..	260
Conference at Petersburg.....	241	Asbury Visits Salem.....	260
"Alone Before the Lord"....	242	An Annual General Conference Proposed.....	261
Conference at Uniontown....	242	A Characteristic of the People.	261
Asbury's Spirit of Meekness..	243	"See if the Methodists do not Work their Way".....	261
Students at Cokesbury—Exercises.....	243	A Constant Walk with God...	262
A New Chapel in Philadelphia	244	Nature's Carpet and Umbrella.	262
"I Must Needs Go Through Samaria".....	244	Asbury in Salisbury and Sharon	262
The Wicked Rage—God Triumphs.....	244	"All for God, and Christ, and Souls".....	263
The New Church.....	245	Brief Definition of Christian Perfection.....	263
Asbury in Philadelphia.....	245	Monmouth and Long Branch.	264
Sister Dickinson.....	245	Asbury Rejoicing.....	264
Weighty Matters.....	246	"Not a Moment's Desire of Any Thing but God"....	264
"If They Will Shout, Why Let Them Shout".....	246	Asbury Begging Money for Cokesbury.....	265
Henry Ennalls Converted and His Slaves Freed.....	247	Crossing the Potomac.....	265
Cokesbury—Students Examined.....	247	Norfolk and Portsmouth.....	266
A Comprehensive Wish.....	247	Asbury's Route through North Carolina.....	266
The Lord at Work in Virginia	248	Mr. Hammett's Objections....	267
"Hail, Happy Dead!".....	248	Conference at Charleston....	267
"As Happy as Princes in a Palace".....	248	Georgia Conference—Searching and Sifting.....	267
A Great Change in Six Years.	249	A Day's Ride of Fifty Miles..	268
Dr. Coke Returns to America.	249	Antinomianism in Doctrine and Practice.....	268
The Work in Georgia Dead—Causes.....	249	Crossing Streams.....	269
White and Red Indians.....	250	Indian Depredations.....	269
Dr. Coke and Asbury Working Together.....	250	A Wakeful, Watchful Night..	269
Wesley's Death! Asbury's Estimate of His Character....	251	"Rest, Poor House of Clay"...	270
Conferences at Baltimore and Duck Creek.....	252	"Hail, Happy Death!".....	271
Asbury's Last Interview with Dr. Coke.....	253	A Pleasant Change.....	271
Eighteen Years Ago.....	253	A Seminary Founded at Uniontown.....	271
		Peace and Holiness.....	272

	Page		Page
Mr. Hammett and T. Morrell	272	Albany—No Sympathy from	
"Our Old New Church".....	272	the Rich.....	298
"Some Too Wise".....	273	A Day of Small Things in Con-	
Asbury's Early Years.....	273	necticut and Rhode Island	299
The Poor Have the Gospel		A Spectacle to Men and Angels	300
Preached to Them.....	278	"Pain Begets Invention"....	301
Conference at Lynn.....	279	Conference at Tolland—Asbury	
Pittsfield with its Grand Meet-		a Sufferer.....	301
ing-house.....	279	New Divinity Intolerant.....	302
"A Joyful, Happy Conference		Asbury in a Mill-Race.....	302
at Albany".....	281	Sick, but Hard at Work....	303
Asbury at Governor Van Cort-		At Burlington.....	303
landt's.....	281	In Philadelphia in the Midst	
Conference in New York—		of Contagion.....	304
"Happy Poverty".....	282	"The People Pretended to be	
Unkind Act from a Kind Friend	282	Afraid".....	305
Philadelphia a Wicked City—		"O the Plague of Sin!".....	305
The Mobility.....	283	Asbury Speaks in Self-Defense	305
Asbury Resting at Home....	284	Conference at Petersburg....	306
A Comfortable Conference and		Preachers Loyal to the General	
a "Burning Love-feast"....	284	Conference.....	306
A Day at Judge White's.....	285	A Room Twelve Feet Square	
Dr. Coke's Arrival—General		for Conference, Sleeping,	
Conference.....	285	and Hospital.....	307
Asbury's Note to the General		Asbury Declines Going West.	308
Conference.....	286	Gordon's History of the Revolu-	
Mr. O'Kelly Withdraws from		tion.....	308
the Connection.....	287	Poor Beverly Allen.....	308
Increase of Methodism.....	287	"How Good were the Potatoes	
Mr. Hammett and Dr. Coke...	288	and Fried Gammon".....	309
Asbury Between Two Fires...	288	A Cordial Reception—"Wife,	
Ruins of Whitefield's Orphan		Get Up".....	310
House.....	289	The Care of All the Churches.	311
Seceders and Revilers.....	289	Why Some Left the Methodist	
Asbury's Difficulty in Finding		Episcopal Church.....	312
Entertainment.....	289	"I Took my Staff and Faintly	
Membership in the United		Ascended the Hill".....	312
States Fifty Thousand....	291	Asbury Submits to have his	
Restless Men—Asbury's Spirit	291	Likeness Taken.....	313
Journey Over the Mountains..	292	At the New African Church	
Respect of Presbyterians for		in Philadelphia.....	314
Ministers.....	293	Philadelphia to New York....	314
"None Need Desire to be an		Important Distinction—Asbu-	
American Bishop".....	294	ry Firm.....	314
Discipline Read in Conference	294	Asbury's Rate of Services....	315
Another Journey Through the		The Old Prophet.....	315
Wilderness.....	295	Asbury in Boston—Jack Tars.	315
Much Travel and Many Trials	295	Asbury Not Free to Eat and	
Peace in the Conference and		Drink in Providence....	316
Happiness in the Cabin....	296	New London Church Building	316
Preachers Leaving the Itiner-		Ecclesiastical Chains—Prophecy	317
ancy.....	296	The New Chapel in Wilbraham	318
Asbury at Bath.....	297	Through Connecticut.....	318
Conference at Oldtown.....	297	Methodist Church in Brooklyn	319
The Difference Between the		Asbury Overworked.....	319
True and False Minister..	298	Malignant Fever and Whisky	
"They Suspected we were		Insurrection.....	320
Preachers".....	298	Asbury Soon Tires of the City.	321

Page	Page
Cokesbury in Debt—A Christian School or None..... 321	Asbury Happy with the Poor Slaves..... 343
Sable Sons of Africa—The Question now Answered.. 322	The Seventh Commandment.. 343
General Conference Action on Slavery..... 323	Asbury's Labors in Charleston 344
"Still Onward—Fainting but Fighting"..... 323	"If They Could Hear Me Think"..... 344
Charleston Conference..... 324	Asbury a Friend of Learning.. 345
Asbury on Berridge..... 325	Asbury's Wig..... 346
Prospective Work..... 325	A Mountain Wedding..... 346
The Third Revival..... 325	Conference—Parting with the Preachers..... 347
New Still-House—A Warning. 326	The Workmen Falling in Death 348
A Comprehensive Prayer.... 326	"I Expect a Crown"..... 348
"From White's to Nelson's". 326	Indian Barbarities—A Thrilling Narrative..... 349
A New Meeting-House..... 327	"Ah, If I were Young Again!" 352
The "Hope" of Asbury now Realized..... 327	Conference at Uniontown.... 354
Harper's Ferry—Its Impending Rocks..... 328	A Review..... 354
Death of Judge White—His Character..... 328	Large Congregations in Delaware..... 355
Asbury Subject to Depression. 329	Asbury Originates a Fund for the Support of the Ministry 356
Evening with Dr. A. Ridgeley. 330	Laying a Corner-Stone near Schooley's Mountain.... 356
Asbury Spends Three Days in Meeting Classes..... 330	Preaches Three Times and Meets Six Classes in One Day..... 357
Brother Morrell Sick but Recovering..... 330	Asbury's Definition of Heresy and Schism..... 357
The Bishop at Work in the Classes..... 331	Old Haddam..... 358
Asbury Preaches in Dr. Edwards's Meeting-house.... 331	Conference of Thirty Preachers 359
Conference at New London... 331	Asbury Preaches with Deep Emotion..... 359
"Either Cursing or Blessing". 332	Wearry and Unwell, yet Cheerful..... 360
Departure from Lynn—Brother Roberts..... 333	"Great Love and Great Riches" 360
Asbury's Plan for 1797..... 333	Asbury Seldom Travels on the Sabbath..... 360
Ashgrove—Philip Embury... 334	General Conference of 1796... 361
Difference whether in Company with Saints or Sinners.... 334	Coke, Whatcoat, and Asbury. 361
Plattsburg Asking for Methodist Preachers..... 335	Rejecting Mr. Wesley—Asbury's Statement..... 362
Methodism at Coeyman's Patent 335	"Noble Animal—Poor Slaves" 363
Brother Garrettson Spiritually Rich..... 336	Serious News from Baltimore. 363
Conference at White Plains—Forty-three Present..... 336	Asbury's Depression of Spirits Constitutional..... 364
Through New Jersey Again.. 337	"The Pain of Parting"..... 364
Extensive Conference Appointments..... 338	Church Building in Charleston 364
Conference in Baltimore..... 338	Generosity of a Poor Black... 365
Methodism Regains its Proper Tone..... 339	"Hail, Ye Solitary Pines.... 365
"If there were no Sinners"... 339	Asbury Preaches Sitting..... 366
Christmas Day—Only an Apple to Eat..... 340	Crossing Toe River..... 366
Cokesbury College Burned... 341	"Live or Die, I Must Ride"... 367
President Washington..... 342	A List of Sympathizing Friends 368
	"A Worthless Lump of Misery and Sin"..... 369
	"My Bow is Weak if not Broken"..... 370

	Page		Page
Asbury Cannot be Inactive...	370	A Visit to the Sea.....	389
A Living Fire Kindled in New Brunswick	370	Newbern Originally Settled by Germans.....	389
Asbury at Mr. Sherwood's....	371	Asbury Moving Rapidly Through the Counties....	390
"Awfully Dumb Sabbaths"....	371	Raising Blood—Unable to Preach	390
Asbury Going Down into Egypt	372	Journeying Toward Baltimore	391
An American Bishop in Principle and Practice.....	372	A Home Offered Asbury.....	391
Asbury's Honorable Mention of Elijah Crawford	373	A Legacy from a Living Friend	392
Asbury Sick, but Traveling and Visiting Families	373	Asbury Advised to Suspend Preaching	392
Great Times at Duck Creek...	373	E. Cooper appointed Book Agent	392
Baltimore Conference—All the Preachers Satisfied.....	374	Asbury Sweeps Through New Jersey.....	393
Asbury Opens the New Church Advised by the Conference to Rest.....	375	Conference for New York and the New England States...	393
Declines to Rebaptize.....	375	Asbury Thinks of Resigning the General Superintendency.....	393
Book List for 1798.....	376	A Group of Honored Names...	394
Asbury Never Idle.....	376	Asbury in Orange County....	394
Importance of Asbury's Journal	376	In Pain and Heat, Hungry and Sick.....	394
Local Preachers—Their Relation to Slavery	377	"A Balm for Every Sore"....	395
Half-yearly Conference at Baltimore.....	378	Venerable Names	395
Conference in Philadelphia—Trouble with City Societies	378	Revival State of the Districts.	396
News of the Death of Asbury's Father.....	379	A Trip Through Nine Counties	396
The Parting Scene Twenty-seven Years Ago.....	379	James O'Kelly's Plan of Union	396
Children Dying—Rain Needed	380	"Weary World! When Will it End?"	397
How Asbury was First Called Bishop.....	380	Asbury's American Birthday .	397
No Adequate Pay but Souls..	381	Asbury Crossing Rivers	398
Asbury's Reflections on Pestilence	381	Asbury's Burden.....	398
Whitefield's Tomb.....	382	Ecclesiastical Revenue.....	398
Portsmouth a Well-fortified Town	382	The Bishop Turns Nurse.....	399
The First Conference ever Held in Maine.....	383	A Gloss upon Joshua xiv, 8...	400
Place of Mr. Whitefield's Last Sermon.....	383	An Intestine War	401
Conference at Granville.....	384	Conference in Charleston....	401
Asbury Compares his Travels to a Flight.....	384	Death of Washington—Matchless Man.....	401
Awful Times in Philadelphia and New York.....	385	Asbury Remains in Charleston Awhile	402
Death of John Dickins.....	385	At Work With his Pen.....	402
His Character.....	385	Leaves Charleston	403
Mortality Among the Preachers	386	At Camden	403
Asbury Hard at Work Again..	386	"Revived" at Sight of the Lawyers.....	404
"It Will Make Death Welcome"	387	Preaches at the State-House at Raleigh	404
Cooling Breeze from the North	388	"Hail, Ancient Virginia, Once More!"	405
Great Harmony and Good Humor in Conference.....	389	"He might as well have asked me for Peru"	405
		The Effigy of Washington....	405
		Five Hundred Miles in Nineteen Counties.....	406

	Page		Page
Eleven Hundred Miles.....	406	Only Twenty Appointments in a Thousand Miles.....	424
General Conference at Balti- more — Whatcoat Elected Bishop	406	Augusta—Prospects of Meth- odism	424
Conference at Duck Creek— One Hundred Conversions	407	General Conference Address on Slavery.....	425
A Year of Pentecost.....	408	Between Two Fires — “Poor Bishop”	425
Two Bishops and Almost a Third.....	408	Conference at Camden.....	426
Knotty Subjects Talked Over in Plainness, Harmony, and Love.....	408	Asbury Dining on the Sand Hills on Bread and Bacon.	427
“A Mighty Stir in the Bowery Church”	409	“Murmurs of Partiality”—As- bury’s Defense.....	427
Betsey Sherwood Gone to Glory	409	N. Snethen’s Answer to James O’Kelly.....	428
Connecticut One Continuity of Landscape.....	410	“No More of Solomon than the Name”	428
Methodism Getting Foothold in New Haven.....	410	Wilmington—The Tabernacle Crowded	428
Asbury’s Estimate of New En- gland Women.....	411	“An American-made Method- ist”	429
General Lippelt’s Chapel	411	A “Flight Through Several Counties”	430
A New Church in Boston.....	412	Ostervald’s Christian Theology	430
Heavy Work Accomplished... ..	412	Asbury Preaches the Funeral Sermon of Mr. Jarratt....	431
Asbury and Whatcoat Preach in the New Tabernacle ...	412	Conference at Pipe Creek ...	431
The Parsonage in Spencertown	413	“How Strange!—How Merciful!”	432
Madam Livingston.....	413	“Pressing Out Life with La- bor”	432
Goshen, Cornwall, Sharon... ..	413	Large Congregation in Dover.	433
F. Garrettson’s Residence.....	414	Philadelphia Conference—As- bury “in Patience and in Pain”	433
Two Bishops Dine on a Water Melon.....	414	Asbury Goes Southward Again	434
The Lieutenant-Governor and Lady.....	415	Sick at Perry Hall.....	434
A Slight Accident.....	415	Out-door Preaching	435
Through New Jersey Again... ..	416	Episcopal Plan.....	435
Dutchmen Make Lively Meth- odists.....	416	Asbury and the Local Preachers	436
Mr. and Mrs. Gough Not at Home	416	“Our Host Became Our Guide”	436
Revival on the Western Shore of Maryland	417	“Why Should it Not Always be Thus?”	436
Good News from Virginia	417	“Lame Feet and Old Feeble Joints”	437
“Only Now and Then Sending Up a Message to Heaven”	418	“Cotton Sells High — More Gold than Grace”	437
Bethel and Cokesbury not Well Located.....	418	A Plan for Future Labors and Travels.....	438
Running Blister and a Long Ride	419	Methodism Flourishing in Au- gusta.....	438
Good Quarters, Fire, and Food	420	Asbury an Englishman—Can’t Help It.....	439
A Trio of Good and Great Men	420	Another Episcopal Plan.....	439
Asbury Reaches his Thirtieth Year of Labor in America.	421	“Why Should a Living Man Complain?”	440
Christian Union and Primitive Simplicity	421	Strong Faith for the Prosperity of Zion.....	440
The Wilderness as the Garden of God to Asbury.....	422		
Asbury’s First Visit to Knox- ville.....	422		
“An Ugly Accident”	423		

	Page		Page
An Observation of John Wesley	441	Improved Tents.....	458
Conference in Camden	441	Asbury Meets with an Accident	458
Pains and Pleasures in a Small		Lifted from his Horse like a	
Compass.....	442	Helpless Child.....	459
Asbury's Expectation Realized	442	Preaches to a Group of Trav-	
"Farewell to that House For-		elers.....	460
ever"	442	Visits from House to House.	460
Encouraging Prospects at New-		"Two Sticks and a Good Prov-	
bern.....	443	idence"	461
Conference at Salem—Defi-		Six Thousand Miles Nearly	
ciency of Preachers	443	Completed.....	461
John Lee's Funeral Sermon ..	444	Conference at Camden—Statis-	
Conference at Baltimore—Sta-		tics	462
tistics	444	"I Smile at the Simplicity of	
Death of Asbury's Mother—		our Friends"	462
Tribute to Her Memory ..	445	Cake and Cheese by the Way.	462
Eastern Shore of Virginia.....	446	An Objection as Old as Meth-	
Great Time at Bowen's Chapel	447	odism	463
A Trip Through Delaware....	447	Bad Roads and Hungry Trav-	
Conference in Philadelphia—		elers	463
The Academy.....	447	Baltimore the Banner Confer-	
A Sudden Choice of Subjects.	448	ence in Finances.....	464
Asbury at Pittsgrove.....	448	Asbury's Estimate of the Su-	
At "Crosswicks".....	448	perintendency.....	465
On Staten Island.....	449	Caprice and Display Unaccept-	
"Wonders Will Never Cease"	449	able to the Bishop.....	465
Memorable Names in the Early		A Conference of One Hundred	
History of Methodism....	449	Preachers.....	466
Yearly Conference in John-st.	450	A Searching Sermon at St.	
Asbury Journeys Eastward....	451	George's.....	466
Students of "Yale" Under the		No Improvement Discernible.	467
Ministry of Samuel Merwin	451	The Bishops neither Popes nor	
Meeting at Cranston.....	452	Politicians	467
Asbury in Boston	452	Boston Conference—Ordina-	
Across the State.....	452	tion of Joshua Soule.....	468
Conference in an Upper Room.	453	What Industry and Economy	
Geo. Pickering's Name Appears	453	will Do.....	468
The Law of Church Rates Op-		Quarterly Meeting—Elder Os-	
posed.....	454	trander.....	469
Asbury's Footsteps in Litch-		Quite in the Old Style.....	469
field County	454	Seventy Preachers in Confer-	
Asbury at Traveler's Rest—		ence.....	469
Billy Hibbard.....	455	Statistics—Asbury's Ambition	470
Three Sermons in New York City	455	Asbury Preaches at Trenton..	470
A Brief Stop—"A Word or		"Heat, Dust, and Turnpike	
Two and Prayer".....	455	Gates"	470
Asbury's First Sermon in the		Asbury at Carlisle.....	471
Academy at Philadelphia.	456	Religious Condition of Penn-	
Trials from Every Point of		sylvania	471
the Compass.....	456	Asbury's Legacy—Who Wants	
A House of Worship at Last..	456	It?.....	472
Asbury's Interview with Mr.		Camp-Meeting on the Monon-	
O'Kelly.....	456	gahela.....	472
"Fourteen Times Over the		Pittsburg—"It is Time we	
Mighty Mountains"	457	had a House of our Own" ..	473
Nearly Five Thousand Miles !.	458	An Aged Presbyterian.....	473
Presbyterian Ministers Preach-		Asbury in Brook and Ohio	
ing at Conference	458	Counties.....	473

Page	Page
Asbury Preaches in a "Pres- byterian Tent"..... 474	Thirty-four Days' Illness.... 492
Introduction of Slaves Prohib- ited 474	Asbury More Tender of Others than of Himself..... 492
American Enterprise in Ohio.. 475	Death of Wilson Lee..... 493
Conference and Conversions.. 475	An Empty Purse..... 494
Missionaries Appointed to Natchez and Illinois..... 476	"Wandering Without Friends or Food"..... 494
A Description of Western Em- igration..... 476	Friend Tomkins Expelled for Selling a Slave..... 495
Asbury's Return from the Western World..... 476	Four Hundred Conversions in Four Days..... 495
A House of Worship Built by One Man..... 477	Asbury Happy in the Solitary Woods 496
Preachers' House in Charleston a Paradise 477	Nearly Three Thousand Miles since General Conference. 497
News of the Progress of the Work of God..... 478	Asbury Crossing Tar River... 497
Difference Between a Pope and a Methodist Bishop.. 478	O'Kelly on Government, Mon- archy, and Episcopacy... 497
Coke at the Augusta Conference 479	Conference Statistics..... 498
Asbury's Reasons for a Life of Celibacy..... 479	"I Hear, I See, I Feel"..... 499
Work Oppresses Him..... 480	City Congregations "Preached to Death"..... 499
Lot in Sodom..... 481	The Bishops Preaching before Judges and Counselors... 500
A Female Charitable Society.. 481	Difficult to Walk Officially Straight..... 500
A New Chapel—"I Named it Ebenezer"..... 482	Mr. Leecraft Entertains Asbury 500
A Retrospect..... 482	Mr. Wesley's Journal..... 501
General Conference in Baltimore 483	Conference at Ashgrove..... 501
Conference at Soudersburg... 484	A Ride in Vermont..... 502
From Philadelphia to New York 484	A Sad Disproportion..... 502
Thos. Lyell Proposes to Leave the Methodists..... 484	Some of the First Fruits..... 503
A False Friend..... 485	The Times Changed in Boston 503
Asbury Watchful of the Preachers..... 486	Dr. Coke's Marriage..... 504
Through Rhode Island..... 486	Asbury on the Wing Through Connecticut..... 504
Once More in the "Pleasant Town of Lynn"..... 486	"Bent on Great Designs for God"..... 504
Asbury Sweeping Through the Towns..... 486	Through New Jersey..... 505
"Robed in His Gown"—The Contrast..... 487	"Then Away to the West" 505
Conference at Buxton..... 487	A Cordial Reception and Chris- tian Parting..... 506
Asbury Passes through Towns and States Comet-like... 488	Five Thousand at Camp-Meeting 506
Suffers from Hunger—Sym- pathy for the Preachers.. 488	"O Thou Pattern of Celibacy, Art Thou Caught!"..... 507
One Thousand and Fifty Miles 489	A Four Hours' Meeting at Philip Gatch's..... 507
"Farewell to Tommy Lyell". 489	Conference Sabbath—Three Thousand Hearers..... 508
Elder M'Clasky..... 490	Asbury Crossing the Mountains In Fellowship with a Presby- terian Minister..... 509
"Forty-five Miles To-day"... 490	Preaches at Salem on Hosea x, 12..... 510
Street Preaching and Female Prayer-Meetings..... 491	A Marvelous Contrast..... 510
Me'ancholy End of J. Cromwell 491	The Highest Steeple..... 511
A High Compliment to Local Preachers..... 492	Northern Letters—Dr. Chand- ler's Wonderful Report... 511

	Page		Page
Asbury's Observations on Ha-		Asbury Crossing Green Mount-	
weis's Church History....	512	ain—Imminent Danger...	531
Asbury in the Fortieth Year of		Difficulty of Finding Enter-	
his Ministry.....	513	tainment.....	532
Twenty-six Sermons during		Fifty-nine Ordinations.....	532
Conference.....	513	Asbury One Hundred Miles up	
A Somber View of Matrimony.	513	the Mohawk.....	532
Rapid Traveling.....	514	First Visit Through Genesee	
Frightened Horses—God Pre-		and Tioga Counties.....	533
serves.....	514	An Uproar Among the People.	533
A Healthful Increase in Vir-		Entertained Like Kings....	534
ginia Conference.....	514	Reading in 1807—Formality...	534
Preliminary Measures for a De-		"What Hath God Wrought in	
legated General Conference	515	America?".....	535
Asbury at Accomac.....	515	Asbury on Virginia Soil.....	535
From Milford to Wilmington.	515	"Every Family Shall Know	
From Baltimore to Philadel-		Me by Prayer".....	536
phia—Conference.....	516	Chillicothe Conference Statistics	536
Asbury at Sharptown and Salem	517	Asbury Young Again.....	536
Great Camp-meeting.....	517	Camp-meeting at Mt. Gerizim.	537
An Important Paper.....	518	Asbury Weary and Faint, but	
"Sister Thatcher".....	519	Disposed to Sing and Shout	537
A New Chapel in West Boston	519	Through Five States.....	537
Camp-meeting in Maine.....	519	"A Sick, Weak Old Man"....	538
New England Conference....	520	Conference at Charleston....	538
"Why Did I Not Visit this		The Balance in Asbury's Favor	538
Country Sooner?".....	520	A Methodist Patriarch.....	539
"Not Made for Such Scenes"	521	Conference at Alexandria....	539
Fourth of July.....	521	Five Thousand Miles a Year..	539
Death of Bishop Whatcoat...	521	"Will Bonaparte Conquer the	
Asbury Preaches at North East	522	World?".....	540
A Thankful Sickness.....	522	Asbury did not Please Every	
Diversity, Charity, Unity.....	523	Body.....	540
Asbury's Generous Nature....	523	Swiftly Through New Jersey.	540
Over the Mountains.....	523	Conference in Amenia.....	540
Wesley's Sermons Wake the		At New London.....	541
Powers of Asbury's Soul.	524	Methodism Advancing.....	541
Asbury Bound for Charleston.	524	From New York Southward..	541
How Employed in Charleston	525	Death of Mr. Gough—Character	542
"I Shall Take Care of These		General Conference.....	543
Youngsters".....	525	Henry Boehm.....	543
Asbury's Independence.....	526	Asbury Disabled.....	543
"A Rumpus—Lawyers and		A Decree, but Not of the Medes	
Doctors in Arms".....	526	and Persians.....	544
Conference at Sparta.....	527	Disadvantages of a Local Epis-	
"Redeeming the Time".....	527	copacy.....	544
"Cold, Sick, and Faint".....	527	Conference at Green Hills—	
Asbury at Newbern Conference	528	Slavery.....	544
"A Cut of Dry Bread on the		Jesse Richardson, the Veteran	545
Cold Ground".....	528	Henry Boehm and a Shout....	545
Baltimore Conference.....	529	Asbury, Boehm, M'Kendree..	546
Asbury Sick, but Traveling...	529	"Great News—Baltimore Tak-	
Milford the Place of Bishop		en Fire".....	546
Whatcoat's Last Sermon..	529	Glorious Prospects in Charleston	546
Philadelphia Conference.....	530	Wesley Mr. Asbury's Model..	547
Great Prosperity at Bethel....	530	Two Bishops in Partnership..	547
Grandfather Budd.....	530	Three Hundred Preachers at a	
Conference at Coeyman's Patent	531	Camp-meeting.....	547

	Page		Page
A Sabbath at Camden.....	548	Conference and Camp-meeting	
But Three Married Men in the		United.....	565
Virginia Conference.....	548	Asbury Appeals to Southern	
Conversion of J. Ryall Bradley	549	Methodism in Aid of Boston	565
Asbury Glad to See the Preach-		Jesse Lee's History—Correction	566
ers, but —.....	549	"Who Shall Reform the Re-	
Graves of Departed Friends... 549		formers?".....	567
Names Sacred to Methodism... 550		Conference Invalids Curable.. 567	
Philadelphia Conference —		A Heavy Week's Work..... 568	
Eighty-four Appointments	550	Asbury's Interview with Revo-	
New Jersey Methodism in 1809	551	lutionary Officers.....	568
One Hundred and Twenty		Faithful Ministers—Good News	
Preachers in Conference.. 551		—Statistics.....	569
The Quakers are Offended... 552		A Sight of the Slaves Prevents	
Want of Enterprise in New		Complaining.....	569
London.....	552	Old Friends are Departing... 570	
Asbury's Visit to Fort Wolcott	553	Conference Held in a Senator's	
"Not Half Enough to Do"... 553		House.....	570
Asbury in Boston Again..... 553		Conference at Raleigh..... 571	
Conference at New Gloucester. 554		"O the Clover of Baltimore	
"O! the Rocks, Roots, Pole-		Circuit".....	571
Bridges, and Mosquitoes!" 554		Eight Young Preachers Re-	
Asbury Obligated to Sit while		cently Married.....	572
Preaching.....	555	Drs. Rush and Physic Visit	
A New Route.....	555	Asbury.....	572
"A Despised People Will Pos-		Limited Success in New Jersey	572
sess the Land".....	556	Conference in New York.... 573	
Asbury Depressed, but Rejoices		Opposite Views of Adam	
in God.....	556	Clarke and Asbury.....	573
A Bishop Unable to Stand or		How the Preachers Accepted	
Kneel.....	557	their Appointments.....	574
Church Building in Virginia.. 557		Asbury's Horse Sinks in Mud	
Col. Zane an Extraordinary Man	557	and Water.....	574
Multiplicity of Camp-meetings	557	Asbury in Canada—Old Friends	575
Western Conference—Statistics	558	"Well, I have Been in Canada" 576	
Asbury Five Hundred Miles		A Discovery by Wise Men.... 576	
from Cincinnati.....	559	A Bishop's Salary.....	577
The Baptists Indebted to Meth-		Asbury Sick, but Away to the	
odist Camp-meetings.....	559	Camp-meeting.....	577
Asbury Cares for the Various		Conference at Cincinnati.... 577	
Interests of Methodism... 559		"Perfect through Sufferings" 578	
Brother Boehm—Conference at		"Great Snethen is Chaplain to	
Petersburg.....	560	Congress".....	578
Statistics of West Maryland... 561		Conference at Camden..... 578	
Asbury at Baltimore Conference	561	"This Life is Not Eternal"... 579	
Statistics—The Peninsula in		Asbury Charged with Ordain-	
1810.....	562	ing a Slave.....	579
Asbury Must Preach.....	562	Forty Miles to Breakfast.... 580	
Philadelphia Conference at		A Happy, Loving Conference. 580	
Easton.....	563	Death of Martin Boehm..... 581	
Some Displeased with Their		Philadelphia Conference.... 581	
Stations.....	563	General Conference of 1812... 581	
"Twelve per Cent. Interest on		Honorable Mention of Sister	
Loans".....	564	Seney.....	582
Old John-street Must Come		Conference at Albany..... 582	
Down.....	564	Through Connecticut..... 583	
Through Dover to Egremont.. 564		Conference at Lynn—Procla-	
Missionaries Sent to Michigan. 565		mation of War.....	583

	Page		Page
Conference at Lyons	583	Conference in Norfolk—	
Sweet Revenge	584	“Mighty in Talk”	597
Whisky the Prime Curse of the		A Retrospect	597
United States	584	Funeral Discourse on the Death	
Asbury Preaches to the “Union		of the Great Otterbein....	597
Volunteers”	584	Joseph Pilmoor	598
Ten Thousand at Camp-meeting	585	Philadelphia Conference in the	
Six Thousand Miles in Eight		Spirit and Peace of God..	598
Months	585	Great Kindness and Attention	
Asbury in the Representative		in New Jersey	599
Chamber	586	J. W. Bond—A Rich Present..	599
A “Sickly, Serious Congrega-		A Series of Mishaps	599
tion” at Louisville....	586	A High State of Christian Ex-	
Asbury in North Carolina....	586	perience	600
“Brandy and the Bible—One		Cincinnati Conference—Bish-	
was Enough”	586	op M’Kendree Injured....	601
Conference at Charleston—		Poor Bishops—“Sick, Lame,	
“What is Coming?”	587	and in Poverty”	601
“Camp-meetings the Great		Asbury’s Traveling Compan-	
Instrument”	587	ion Unequaled	601
Fever and Pain	588	Old Friends—Reminiscences	602
Asbury Preaching and Ordain-		Little Jersey Wagon his Pulpit	602
ing on his Knees	588	Asbury at Conference Work,	
Conference at Newbern—As-		but Feeble	602
bury on Crutches	588	Expectorates Blood	603
English Conf. Invites Asbury		A Cold Time at Newbern	603
to Visit his Native Land..	589	A Temporary Paradise	603
Otterbein—Baltimore Confer-		Conference at Lynchburg—	
ence	589	Treaty of Peace	604
Asbury at Governor Bassett’s.	589	“A Few Scattering Shot”	604
Small Increase in the Phila-		Asbury at Baltimore Conference	604
delphia Conference	590	Curiosity to See Asbury	605
A Question Respecting Bur-		Asbury’s Trials and Consola-	
lington and Trenton	590	tions	605
A Tavern Turned into a Church	590	A New Chapel in Philadelphia	605
New York Conference at Amenia	591	Mr. M’Dowell	606
Bishop M’Kendree and Joshua		Asbury Preaches Dr. Coke’s	
Marsden	591	Funeral Sermon	606
Through Connecticut	591	George Pickering Presides at	
Asbury at Pittsfield	591	the Unity Conference	607
Asbury’s Will	592	Asbury’s Last Visit to New	
Asbury at Bristol and Provi-		York City	607
dence	592	Journal a History of Early	
Venerable Names in Methodism	593	Methodism	607
Conference at Westmoreland ..	593	Camp-Meeting Sermon	608
Asbury with an Infidel Family	593	Politics and Piety do not Mingle	
The Tomb of Henry Willis....	594	Well	608
Father Everhard	594	Ohio Conference at Lebanon..	609
Conference at Brownsville....	594	Asbury in Earnest Talk with	
Blistering the Head to Draw		Bishop M’Kendree	609
Methodism out of the Heart	595	M’Kendree and “The Boys on	
Tennessee Conference	595	the Wing”	609
Asbury Preaches with Great		Conference in Tennessee—As-	
Power	595	bury Failing	609
In Savannah	595	Asbury Made Perfect by Labor	
A Present of an Old Gig	596	and Suffering	610
Bishop Coke Sails for the East		Last Entry in Asbury’s Journal	610
Indies	596	Last Scenes of Asbury’s Life.	610

CHARACTER AND CAREER

OF

REV. FRANCIS ASBURY.

Asbury's Motive for Keeping a Diary.

IN the month of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy-one, I embarked in England for America, at which time the memoirs I have written of my life commenced. As I considered my station on the American continent, in the order of Divine Providence, as a situation in which I should frequently be exposed to censure and jealousy, I thought it highly expedient, for my own satisfaction and the confirmation of my friends, to keep an impartial diary of my intentions, resolutions, and actions as a Christian and a minister, that I might have, through this medium, a constant and reasonable answer for mine accusers.

Offers to go to America.

On the 7th of August, 1771, the Conference began at Bristol, in England. Before this, I had felt for half a year strong intimations in my mind that I should visit America, which I laid before the Lord, being unwilling to do my own will, or to run before I was sent. During this time my trials were very great,

which the Lord, I believe, permitted to prove and try me in order to prepare me for future usefulness. At the Conference it was proposed that some preachers should go over to the American Continent. I spoke my mind and made an offer of myself. It was accepted by Mr. Wesley and others who judged I had a call. From Bristol I went home to acquaint my parents with my great undertaking, which I opened in as gentle a manner as possible. Though it was grievous to flesh and blood, they consented to let me go. My mother is one of the tenderest parents in the world, but I believe she was blessed in the present instance with divine assistance to part with me. I visited most of my friends in Staffordshire, Warwickshire, and Gloucestershire, and felt much life and power among them. Several of our meetings were, indeed, held in the spirit and life of God. Many of my friends were struck with wonder when they heard of my going, but none opened their mouths against it, hoping it was of God. Some wished that their situation would allow them to go with me.

Asbury Supplied with Funds.

I returned to Bristol in the latter end of August, where Richard Wright was waiting for me, to sail in a few days for Philadelphia. When I came to Bristol I had not one penny of money; but the Lord soon opened the hearts of friends, who supplied me with clothes and ten pounds: thus I found, by experience, that the Lord will provide for those who trust in him.

Sails for America.

On *Wednesday, September 4*, we set sail from a port near Bristol, and, having a good wind, soon passed

the Channel. For three days I was very ill with the sea-sickness, and no sickness I ever knew was equal to it. The captain behaved well to us. On the *Lords Day, September 8*, Brother W. preached a sermon on deck, and all the crew gave attention.

Asbury's Reflections on Shipboard.

Thursday, 12. I will set down a few things that lie on my mind. Whither am I going? To the New World. What to do? To gain honor? No, if I know my own heart. To get money? No; I am going to live to God, and to bring others so to do. In America there has been a work of God; some moving first among the Friends, but in time it declined; likewise by the Presbyterians, but among them also it declined. The people God owns in England are the Methodists. The doctrines they preach, and the discipline they enforce, are, I believe, the purest of any people now in the world. The Lord has greatly blessed these doctrines and this discipline in three kingdoms: they must, therefore, be pleasing to him. If God does not acknowledge me in America I will soon return to England. I know my views are upright now; may they never be otherwise!

How Employed.

On the *Lord's Day, September 22*, I preached to the ship's company on John iii, 23, but, alas! they were insensible creatures. My heart has been much pained on their account. I spent my time chiefly in retirement, in prayer, and in reading the Appeals, Mr. De Renty's life, part of Mr. Norris's Works, Mr. Edwards on the Work of God in New England, the Pilgrim's

Progress, the Bible, and Mr. Wesley's Sermons. I feel a strong desire to be given up to God—body, soul, time, and talents—far more than heretofore.

September 29. I preached to the ship's company again on these words, "To you is the word of this salvation sent." I felt some drawings of soul toward them, but saw no fruit. Yet still I must go on. While they will hear, I will preach as I have opportunity. My judgment is with the Lord. I must keep in the path of duty.

Asbury's Trials on the Voyage.

October 13. Though it was very windy, I fixed my back against the mizzen mast and preached freely on those well-known words, 2 Cor. v, 20: "Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God." I felt the power of truth on my own soul, but still, alas! saw no visible fruit; but my witness is in heaven that I have not shunned to declare to them all the counsel of God. Many have been my trials in the course of this voyage from the want of a proper bed and proper provisions, from sickness, and from being surrounded with men and women ignorant of God and very wicked. But all this is nothing. If I cannot bear this, what have I learned? O, I have reason to be much ashamed of many things which I speak and do before God and man. Lord, pardon my manifold defects and failures in duty.

Pa.]

He Lands in Philadelphia.

October 27. This day we landed in Philadelphia, where we were directed to the house of one Mr. Francis Har-

ris, who kindly entertained us in the evening, and brought us to a large church where we met with a considerable congregation. Brother Pilmoor preached. The people looked on us with pleasure, hardly knowing how to show their love sufficiently, bidding us welcome with fervent affection, and receiving us as angels of God. O that we may always walk worthy of the vocation wherewith we are called! When I came near the American shore, my very heart melted within me to think from whence I came, where I was going, and what I was going about. But I felt my mind open to the people, and my tongue loosed to speak. I feel that God is here, and find plenty of all we need.

Asbury Preaches in Philadelphia.

Tuesday, November 6. I preached at Philadelphia my last sermon before I set out for New York, on Romans viii, 32: "He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him freely give us all things?" This also was a night of power to my own and many other souls.

N. J.] Visits Burlington and Staten Island.

November 7. I went to Burlington on my way to New York, and preached in the court-house to a large, serious congregation. Here also I felt my heart much opened. In the way from thence to New York I met with one P. Van Pelt, who had heard me preach at Philadelphia. After some conversation, he invited me to his house on Staten Island; and as I was not engaged to be at New York on any particular day, I went with him and preached in his house. Still I believe God hath sent me to this country. All I seek

is to be more spiritual, and given up entirely to God—to be all devoted to him whom I love.

Asbury Reaches New York.

On *Monday* I set out for New York, and found Richard Boardman there in peace, but weak in body. Now I must apply myself to my old work—to watch, and fight, and pray. Lord, help!

Tuesday, 13. I preached at New York to a large congregation on 1 Cor. ii, 2: "I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified," with some degree of freedom in my own mind. I approved much of the spirit of the people; they were loving and serious; there appeared, also, in some a love of discipline. Though I was unwilling to go to New York so soon, I believe it is all well, and I still hope I am in the order of God. My friend B. is a kind, loving, worthy man, truly amiable and entertaining, and of a child-like temper. I purpose to be given up to God more and more, day by day. But O! I come short.

N. Y.]

He is Fixed to the Methodist Plan.

Tuesday, 20. I remain in New York, though unsatisfied with our being both in town together. I have not yet the thing which I seek—a circulation of preachers, to avoid partiality and popularity. However, I am fixed to the Methodist plan, and do what I do faithfully as to God. I expect trouble is at hand. This I expected when I left England, and I am willing to suffer, yea, to die, sooner than betray so good a cause by any means. It will be a hard matter to stand against all opposition, as an iron pillar, strong

and steadfast as a wall of brass, but through Christ strengthening me, I can do all things.

Thursday, 22. At present I am dissatisfied. I judge we are to be shut up in the cities this winter. My brethren seem unwilling to leave the cities, but I think I shall show them the way. I am in trouble, and more trouble is at hand, for I am determined to make a stand against all partiality. I have nothing to seek but the glory of God, nothing to fear but his displeasure. I am come over with an upright intention, and through the grace of God I will make it appear, and I am determined that no man shall bias me with soft words and fair speeches, nor will I ever fear (the Lord helping me) the face of man, or know any man after the flesh, if I beg my bread from door to door; but whomsoever I please or displease, I will be faithful to God, to the people, and to my own soul.

Asbury's Trip to Westchester.

Saturday, November 24. I went with Brother S. and Brother W. to Westchester, which is about twenty miles from New York. My friends waited on the mayor for the use of the court-house, which was readily granted. On the Lord's day morning, a considerable company being gathered together, I stood up in the Lord's power; yea, I felt the Holy One was nigh. I judged that my audience needed to be taught the first principles of religion, so I spoke from those words, "Now he commandeth all men every-where to repent." Seriousness sat on the faces of my hearers, and the power of God came both on me and them, while I labored to show them the nature and necessity of repentance, and the proper subjects and time

for it. In the afternoon the congregation was increased, both in number and seriousness ; some of the chief men of the town—the mayor and others—were present. I delivered my thoughts on those words, “This is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another.” I felt warmth in my soul while I set forth the nature and necessity of faith, and much enlargement toward my hearers. In the evening I preached at one M.’s, at a place called West Farms, to many persons on the love of God. The next day I preached at Westchester again to a large company, and felt a sense of God resting on my heart, and much love to the people. Being detained another day by the roughness of the weather, I preached another sermon on this text: “Knowing therefore the terrors of the Lord, we persuade men.” In the evening we went to the mayor’s, where we lodged that night, and the next day at noon set out for New York.

Asbury at New Rochelle.

Tuesday, December 10. I rode to New Rochelle, and was received with great kindness by Mr. Deveau and his family, and preached there to a few. The next day, also, I preached to a large company and found liberty, and believe the power of God was among us. From thence I rode to Rye, where a few people were collected together to hear the word, and the next day preached to them again. On *Sunday, 14*, I rode back to Eastchester and preached to a large company, and found some satisfaction in speaking on “The one thing needful.” On the Lord’s day I preached at New Rochelle in the church. My text

was, "All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God." I felt an opening, and was satisfied. I published myself to preach again in the afternoon, and those who had most opposed me before came to hear, and behaved well. In the evening I preached in the house of my friend Mr. D. The next day I preached again at Mr. D.'s, and on Tuesday went to Rye, where I had many to hear, and felt some freedom of spirit. The next day I preached at Mairnock, to a company of people who at first took but little notice of the worship of God ; but I trust some of them felt the power of truth in their hearts. On Thursday I returned to New York and found my friends in peace.

Asbury Sick—Kindly Treated.

Tuesday, the 21st, I preached at my friend D.'s for the last time on "Those things that ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do." The people seemed deeply affected under the word. In the morning of the 22d I set out for the New City, and preached there in much weakness and pain of body, and in the evening went to my friend P.'s. That night I had no rest, and when I arose in the morning the pain in my throat was worse. On the 23d I came in a covered sleigh to my friend B.'s, where I took up my lodging, being unable to go any further. I then applied to a physician, who made applications to my ears, throat, and palate, which were all swelled and inflamed exceedingly. For six or seven days I could neither eat nor drink without great pain. The physician feared I should be strangled before a discharge took place, but my God ordered all things well. I am raised up again, and cannot help remark-

ing the kindness with which my friends treated me as if I had been their own brother. The parents and children attended me day and night with the greatest attention. Thus, though a stranger in a strange land, God has taken care of me. May the Lord remember them that have remembered me, and grant to this family life for evermore !

Asbury in New York—Self-Consecration.

On *Friday*, the 8th, I set out for New York in a sleigh, and my friends seemed glad to see me. I want to be less concerned about any thing except my own work—the salvation of souls. At present I seem determined to consecrate my all to God—body, soul, time, and talents.

He Visits from House to House.

On the *Lord's Day* found myself weak, but Brother P. being ill, I preached in the morning and found life. Stayed at home on Monday, and read in Mr. Wesley's Notes on the Old Testament. On *Monday*, the 11th, I went to the jail and visited a condemned criminal, and preached to him and others with some tender feelings of mind on these words, "Joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth." *Tuesday*, the 12th. This day I have visited many of my friends from house to house, and did not find much evil or much good stirring among them. Now I retire to hold communion with God and to feel his power.

On Staten Island.

On *Thursday*, the 20th, I gave an exhortation in public. Having a desire to visit my friends on Staten Island I set off in the afternoon of the 21st, contrary

to the persuasion of my friends in New York. S. S., who was tender toward me in my illness, and took care of me as if I had been his father, accompanied me. Justice W. received us and entertained us kindly, and though weak and weary, I preached at P. V. P.'s to a few persons with much satisfaction. Mr. D. invited me to preach in his house, to which I consented; and Justice W. sent us there on the Lord's Day with several of his family. I preached twice at that gentleman's house to a large company. Some, it appears, had not heard a sermon for half a year; such a famine there is of the word in these parts, and a still greater one of the *pure* word. I returned in the evening to Justice W.'s, and preached to a numerous congregation with comfort. Surely God sent me to these people at the first, and I trust he will continue to bless them, and pour out his spirit upon them, and receive them at last to himself! *February 23*, I preached again at Justice W.'s to many people, and the Lord was with me. My labors increase, and my strength is renewed. Though I came here weak, yet after preaching three times I felt myself strong. Thanks be to God who hath raised me up from so low a state! On the 24th I preached at A. W.'s, at two in the afternoon, to a large company, and had an invitation to go to the south part of the Island; in the evening, also, I preached at the same place. On the 26th I preached at the ferry, on my way to York, to a few people, though some came two miles on foot.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

April 2. I came to Philadelphia, and finding Brother B. and Brother W. there, was much comforted.

Brother B.'s plan was, that he should go to Boston, Brother P. to Virginia, Brother W. to New York, and that I should stay three months in Philadelphia. With this I was well pleased.

Del.]

Asbury in Wilmington.

Tuesday, 13. Was advised and invited to preach at Wilmington, which I did, though there were but few to hear.

Wednesday, 14. Rode to Chester, and preached in the court-house. The Church minister and many Quakers were present, but the congregation appeared to be the wildest I had seen in America. But I humbly hope the labor was not all in vain. In the morning I visited and spoke with great freedom to four men who were under sentence of death.

Pa.]

Returns to Philadelphia.

Thursday, 15. I rode through a heavy rain to Philadelphia, and preached the next morning with some freedom.

Tuesday, 20. My mind is quiet and serene. I am now free from company, which is very pleasing to me, having found that much company is both disagreeable and dangerous.

Wednesday, 21. Met the society and found both life and liberty among the people. This night Brother W. came in from Virginia. He gives a flaming account of the work there. Many of the people seem to be ripe for the Gospel and ready to receive us. I humbly hope, before long, about seven preachers of us will spread seven or eight hundred miles, and preach in as many places as we are able to attend.

Lord, make us humble, watchful, and useful to the end of our lives !

Asbury not to be Guided by Half-hearted Methodists.

Tuesday, 28. I intended to go out of town, but could not get a horse. So I stayed for Brother W. and heard that many were offended at my shutting them out of society meeting, as they had been greatly indulged before. But this does not trouble me. While I stay the rules must be attended to, and I cannot suffer myself to be guided by half-hearted Methodists. An elderly Friend told me very gravely that "the opinion of the people was much changed, within a few days, about Methodism, and that the Quakers and other dissenters had laxed *their* discipline ; that none but the Roman Catholics kept it up with strictness." But these things do not move me.

N. J.]

Again in Burlington.

Wednesday, 29. Set out for Burlington, where I met with Brother W. and Brother K., and found the people there very lively. Two persons have obtained justification under Brother W., and a certain Dr. T., a man of dissipation, was touched under Brother B.'s preaching last night. I admire the kindness of my friends to such a poor worm as I. O my God ! remember them ! remember me !

Thursday, 30. I humbly hope the word was blessed to a large number of people who attended while I preached at the court-house.

Pa.]

Execution at Chester.

Set out for Philadelphia, but about a mile from the city found that the bridge could not be crossed on

horseback, so I left my horse and walked to the ferry. Brother W. took the horse and went to Burlington on his way to New York. Was desired to attend the execution of the prisoners at Chester, and J. K. went with me. We found them penitent, and two of the four obtained peace with God, and seemed very thankful. I preached with liberty to a great number of people under the jail wall. The sheriff was friendly and very kind. J. K. preached at the gallows to a vast multitude, after which I prayed with them. The executioner pretended to tie them all up, but only tied one, and let the rest fall. One of them was a young man about fifteen. We saw them all afterward, and exhorted them to be careful. We returned to Philadelphia the same night, and I gave an exhortation.

N. J.] Asbury Visits Prisoners at Burlington.

Tuesday, May 5. Set out for Burlington again, and preached to a serious people. But how is my soul troubled that I am not more devoted! O my God! my soul groans and longs for this.

May 6. My heart was much humbled, but the Lord enabled me to preach with power in my soul.

Thursday, 7. Visited some prisoners, and one of them, who is to be tried for his life, seemed much affected. In the evening I preached, and felt my heart much united to this people. Next morning set off for Philadelphia, and got in time enough for intercession, after which I visited a sick friend who rested her soul on God, and then I preached in the evening.

At Trenton.

Wednesday, 20. Went to Trenton; but as the court was sitting, I was obliged to preach in a school-house

to but few people ; and as there were soldiers in the town I could hardly procure lodging.

Asbury Warns the People at an Execution.

Friday, 29. I preached under the jail wall ; and for the benefit of the prisoner, attended him to the place of execution. When he came forth, he roared like a bull in a net. He looked on every side, and shrieked for help ; but all in vain. O how awful ! Die he must—I fear, unprepared. I prayed with him, and for him. How difficult it is (if I may use the term) to drench a hardened sinner with religion ! I saw him tied up ; and then, stepping on a wagon, I spoke a word in season, and warned the people to flee from the wrath to come, and improve the day of their gracious visitation, no more grieving the Spirit of God, lest a day should come in which they may cry, and God may refuse to hear them. We then rode home to Philadelphia, where I exhorted in the evening, and found myself much more drawn out than I expected.

Begging Money--Church Debt.

Thursday, 25. Traveling back toward Gloucester, called at 'Squire P.'s and presented him with a petition for raising £150 to discharge the debt on our preaching-house at Philadelphia. He promised both to give himself, and to propose it to others.

"Still as a Dumb Man."

July 1. Went over the ferry and preached to many people ; among whom were some fine women, who behaved with airs of great indifferency. Return-

ing to Trenton, I preached at night, and the next morning at five, after which I set off for Philadelphia with unprofitable company ; among whom I sat still as a man dumb, and as one in whose mouth there was no reproof. They appeared so stupidly ignorant, skeptical, deistical, and atheistical, that I thought if there were *no other* hell, I should strive with all my might to shun that. Came home late and weary, but preached with some comfort. I have lately been blessed with much purity of intention and fervor of spirit, but greatly thirst after living more in God.

N. Y.]

Asbury Journeys to New York.

Wednesday, July 22. In meeting the small society of about nineteen persons I gave them tickets, and found it a comfortable time. They are a serious people ; and there is some prospect of much good being done in this place. After preaching on Tuesday morning over the ferry, and in the evening at Trenton, I took leave of them on Wednesday morning, and set off for Philadelphia. Left Philadelphia on the Lord's day evening, after preaching on these words, "If I come again, I will not spare ;" and on Monday met with Brother B. Went thence to New-mills, where I preached on Tuesday night and Wednesday morning, and found the people there very affectionate ; then returned to Burlington, and found many friends from Philadelphia. We had power among us at night, and next morning at three I set off for Amboy, and on the way had some conversation with one of Jacob B.'s disciples. We came to the stage-house through much rain and bad roads, about seven o'clock ; thence we went to Amboy, and

took lodging at a tavern. Have been kept in peace through this journey, felt great courage in the work of God, and go toward New York in faith. The congregation at Amboy was small, and they appeared to be such as cared but little for the Gospel ; so that my hope of that place is but slender. On Saturday evening I preached with some power to a large congregation of rich and poor, from these words, " Even from the days of your fathers, ye have gone away from mine ordinances, and have not kept them ; return unto me, and I will return unto you." After preaching with great liberty on the Lord's day to many people at P. V.'s and Justice W.'s on Staten Island, I set off on Monday in a boat for New York ; and arriving about five o'clock, found Mr. W., who that night had preached his farewell sermon, and told the people that he did not expect to see them any more. I have always dealt honestly with him, but he has been spoiled by gifts. He has been pretty strict in the society, but ended all with a general love-feast, which I think is undoing all he has done. However, none of these things move me. My mind is calm, and my soul under a comfortable sense of God ; and I am determined, by his grace, to keep on in the way of my duty, if it should be my lot to stand alone.

A Mixed Company.

Monday, 25. Early in the morning we crossed the North River, in order to go to Staten Island. Many people attended the word, but I know not what to make of them ; for though they seem fond of hearing, yet they do not appear to be much affected. On Tuesday I went to Amboy, and dined with a mixed

company of Assemblymen, Churchmen, Quakers, etc. Many of them came to hear me in sport, but went away very still. On my return I preached at Mr. W.'s, to many people; on Thursday returned to York, and preached in the evening with some life. Friday my soul was kept in peace and love; and while preaching at night, both myself and others felt the power of God in our souls.

Asbury Resolves to be a Disciplinarian.

Thursday, 10. Mr. D. accompanied me as far as Kingsbridge, on my way to York, where S. S. met me, and rode with me the rest of the way.

I preached in the evening, and rose to preach next morning at five. It appears to me that trouble is at hand; but I fear nothing, being conscious of having acted uprightly before them all, and having no by-ends in view. Whoever has, must answer for it. Whatever comes, I am determined, while here, by the grace of God, to proceed according to the Methodist doctrine and discipline.

Plan of a Sermon on the Judgment.

Lord's Day, 27. Preaching this morning on "building the tower," I had some assistance; but experienced some heavy exercises of mind this day. In the evening I was enabled to preach with power on the awful subject of the judgment; attempting,

I. To prove that the judgment will be universal.

II. To describe the person of the Judge.

III. To describe the awful events preceding and attending that period.

IV. To point out the business of the day.

V. To show the decision and consequences.

Asbury receives a Letter from Mr. Wesley.

Saturday, 10. I received a letter from Mr. Wesley, in which he required a strict attention to discipline, and appointed me to act as assistant. He also enjoined that Mr. W. might not print any more books without his consent. I likewise received a letter from Mr. W., informing me of the state of matters in Maryland, and that it was appointed for me to winter there. For this I intend to prepare.

N. J.]

In Trenton and Burlington.

Thursday, October 22. In the morning I preached over the river, and in the evening at Trenton, with some assistance. And many young people attended.

Saturday, 24. Leaving my horse at Bristol, I went to Burlington; and on the Lord's day my spirit was much dejected, though in preaching I felt greatly assisted, and Divine truth reached the hearts of the people.

In Philadelphia.

Monday, 26. After preaching at five, I left them, and preached in the evening at Philadelphia. All things considered, the people here seemed to be quiet and in good order.

Del.]

Asbury Visits Prisoners—Reflections.

On *Tuesday*, preached both morning and evening. R. S. and myself set out on Wednesday for Bohemia, and on our way we found a few friends at Newcastle that had not deserted the cause. In this journey I called at Chester jail, and saw the prisoners, who all seemed hardened to a man, and among them were the wretched three that I saw escape the gallows before; two of these had behaved so badly they were now in

chains. Lord, what is man ! And what am I without thy grace ! Keep me, keep me, holy Lord, and never let me go ! Let me die rather than live to sin against thee ! I spoke freely to one of them, who was a murderer.

Md.]

Description of Frederica.

Thursday, 19. Friend D. and I set off for Frederica. We came to G. S.'s, where I expected to have preached, but there was a disappointment ; so we pursued our way, though my little horse was unwell and very weary. A poor, unhappy man abused me much on the road ; he cursed, swore, and threw stones at me. But I found it my duty to talk to him, and show him his danger. Frederica is a neat little town, having one main street and three cross streets. It contains about a thousand houses, and the inhabitants are chiefly Germans. There are two German churches, one Calvinist, and one Lutheran. There is also one English church, and one Roman chapel. Many people came to hear me in this town.

The "Forest Home" for the Methodist.

Wednesday, 25. We rode about twenty miles to my old friend Joshua Owing's, the forest-home for the Methodists at that time, and found a very agreeable house and family. The old man is "an Israelite indeed." He was once a serious Churchman, who sought for truth ; and now God has revealed it to him. The Lord has also begun to bless his family. He has one son a preacher, and the rest of his children are very thoughtful. Though it was a rainy day, there were many people, and my heart was greatly enlarged toward them in preaching.

Asbury in Contact with a Church Minister.

Wednesday, 9. Preached to many people, rich and poor, at J. R.'s, and at another place in the evening.

Friday, 11. Went twelve miles into Kent county, and had many great people to hear me. But before preaching, one Mr. R., a Church minister, came to me and desired to know who I was, and whether I was licensed. I told him who I was. He spoke great, swelling words, and told me he had authority over the people, and was charged with the care of their souls. He also told me that I could not and should not preach; and if I did, he would proceed against me according to law. I let him know that I came to preach, and preach I would; and further asked him if he had authority to bind the consciences of the people, or if he was a justice of the peace; and told him I thought he had nothing to do with me. He charged me with making a schism. I told him that I did not draw the people from the Church; and asked him if his church was then open? He told me that I hindered people from their work; but I asked him if fairs and horse-races did not hinder people from their work? and, further, told him that I came to help him. He said he had not hired me for an assistant, and did not want my help. I told him, if there were no swearers or other sinners, he was sufficient. But, said he, What did you come for? I replied, to turn sinners to God. He said, Cannot I do that as well as you? I told him that I had authority from God. He then laughed at me, and said, You are a fine fellow, indeed! I told him I did not do this to invalidate his authority; and also gave

him to understand that I did not wish to dispute with him ; but he said he had business with me, and came into the house in a great rage. I began to preach, and urged the people to repent, and turn from all their transgressions, so iniquity should not prove their ruin. After preaching, the parson went out, and told the people they did wrong in coming to hear me, and said I spoke against learning. Whereas, I only spoke to this purpose—when a man turned from all sin, he would adorn every character in life, both in Church and State. I left him, and preached at John R.'s at seven o'clock.

Outline of a Sermon at Quarterly Meeting.

Tuesday, 22. On my way to Susquehanna, a person came for me to visit Mrs. T. in a dropsy. I then proceeded to J. D.'s ; and the next day set off for J. P.'s, to attend our quarterly meeting. Many people attended, and several friends came many miles. I preached from Acts xx, 28 : "Take heed, therefore, unto yourselves," etc. After showing to whom the charge was given, I proceeded to enforce the subject thus :

- I. Take heed to your spirits.
- II. Take heed to your practice.
- III. Take heed to your doctrine.
- IV. Take heed to the flock.
 1. Those that are under deep conviction.
 2. Those that are true believers.
 3. Those that are sorely tempted.
 4. Those that are groaning for full redemption.
 5. Those that have backslidden.

I then urged the motives to this duty.

Asbury in Baltimore.

January 3. Rode to Baltimore, and had a large congregation at the house of Captain Paten, at the Point. Many of the principal people were there, and the Lord enabled me to speak with power. At night I preached in town. The house was well filled with people, and we have a comfortable hope the work of the Lord will revive in this place. Bless the Lord, O ye saints! Holiness is the element of my soul. My earnest prayer is, that nothing contrary to holiness may live in me.

The Doctrine of Perfect Love—Its Tendency.

Lord's Day, January 10. Many people attended at J. P.'s, to whom I preached twice with some life, and then went three miles into the Neck, and felt much power while preaching on perfect love. The more I speak on this subject, the more my soul is filled and drawn out in love. This doctrine has a great tendency to prevent people from settling on their lees.

Preaches at a Tavern.

Saturday, 30. Perceiving the great wickedness of the people who were swearing and drinking in a tavern, great struggles arose in my mind about preaching there; however I broke through every difficulty, and felt both life and power in dispensing the word among them.

An Old-fashioned Quarterly Meeting.

Monday, 29. Rode twenty miles to Susquehanna, and just got in, almost spent, time enough to preach at three o'clock. Hitherto the Lord hath helped me. Praised forever be his dear and blessed name!

Tuesday, 30. Our quarterly meeting began. After I had preached we proceeded to business, and in our little conference the following queries were propounded, namely :

1. Are there no disorderly persons in our classes ?
It was thought not.

2. Does not dram-drinking too much prevail among our people ?

3. Do none contract debts without due care to pay them ? We found that this evil is much avoided among our people.

4. Are the band-meetings kept up ?

5. Is there nothing immoral in any of our preachers ?

6. What preachers travel now, and where are they stationed ? It was then urged that none must break our rules under the penalty of being excluded from our connection. All was settled in the most amicable manner. Mr. S. preached a good and useful sermon from Joel ii, 17, "Let the priests, the ministers of the Lord, weep between the porch and the altar," etc. Many people were present at our love-feast, among whom were some strangers ; but all were deeply serious, and the power of God was present indeed. Brother O. preached a very alarming sermon, and Brother S. gave a moving exhortation. The whole ended in great peace. And we all went, in the strength of the Lord, to our several appointments.

Asbury at Baltimore.

Saturday, 3. Preached at Baltimore, where we had a comfortable meeting. *Lord's Day, 4.* I delivered a funeral discourse, but was much shut up in my mind.

Went thence to the Forest, and preached at seven o'clock with great comfort. Several rich people attended preaching the last three days, and did not seem displeased with the plain truths of the Gospel. One or two persons here seem to be groaning for full redemption. My heart is grieved that I have not been entirely devoted to God, but have great reason to be thankful that I feel more and more desire after God.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

Wednesday, 14. Came very weary to Philadelphia, but the sight of my friends greatly revived me, and all seem to be in peace.

Tuesday proved to be a day of peace to my soul, part of which I spent in visiting the people. The next day I was employed in writing to England, and after preaching in the evening with power, I went to rest in sweet peace, and awoke in the morning in the same frame of spirit. May this day be spent to the glory of God, and may my soul yet praise him more and more!

N. Y.]

In New York.

On *Thursday* there was an appointment for me to preach at Newtown. Brother S. and myself crossed the East River, but it was with difficulty we obtained horses. We then attempted to proceed on our way, but it was a severe morning, with much snow and wind. The snow came full in our faces, so that after riding a few miles we were lost in the storm, and imperceptibly turned our course back toward New York, which we never discovered till we overtook some people on the road. We then crossed the river back to the city, where I continued till Monday.

Asbury's Description of New York City.

New York is a large city, and well situated for trade; but the streets and buildings are very irregular. The inhabitants are of various denominations, but nevertheless of a courteous and sociable disposition. There are several places of divine worship: the Episcopalians have three, the High Dutch one, the Low Dutch three, the Lutherans two, the French Protestants one, the Presbyterians two, the Seceders one, the Baptists one, the Moravians one, the Methodists one, and the Jews one. The city abounds with inhabitants, but the exact number I could not ascertain.

N. J.]

In New Jersey.

From *Saturday*, 17, till *Thursday*, 22, was spent in the Jerseys, where I preached at different places, and often to large congregations. The Lord was frequently with me in mercy and power, and my heart was greatly enlarged. How I long to be more holy—to live more with God, and for God! Troubles encompass me about, but the Lord is my helper. Before my return to Philadelphia I had the pleasure of seeing the foundation laid of a new preaching-house, thirty-five feet by thirty. Then I returned and preached on Thursday evening, the Lord being with me.

Pa.]

A Letter from Mr. Wesley.

Thursday, 6. After spending a few days in a country tour, preaching to many people at Goshen, Marlborough, and other places with some assistance, I returned and preached in Philadelphia this evening, on the subject of the stony-ground hearers. Some perhaps were displeased with me. But I must declare

the whole counsel of God, and leave the event to him. This day a letter from Mr. Wesley came to hand, dated March 2, in which he informs me that the time of his coming over to America is not yet, being detained by the building of the new chapel.

Has a Christian a Bad Heart?

Thursday, 13. Through much rain I returned, wet and weary, to Philadelphia, after having preached at several places in the Jerseys, and sometimes with much freedom and power. Many people attended this evening, while I described an honest and good heart, under the similitude of the good ground which received the seed and brought forth fruit. This was free from the hardness of the way-side, from the shallowness of the stony ground, and from the obstructions of the thorny ground. The honesty of the heart appears in its conduct toward God, toward all mankind, and toward itself. As our Lord is pleased to denominate such a heart *good* as well as honest, is it not very wrong for a Christian to say he has a *bad* heart? Is not all that the Holy Ghost produces *good*? And so far as that blessed Spirit has changed the heart of a believer, is it not *good*? Through the unmerited grace of God I have no desire to seek any thing but him, and that which may lead me to him.

N. J.]

Asbury in Burlington.

Lord's Day, 6. After preaching both yesterday and this morning at Burlington, I went to church in order to receive the sacrament. But the parson gave us a strange discourse, full of inconsistency and rail-

lery. Leaving him to answer for his own conduct, I took no further notice of it, but preached at night from these words, "The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God," etc., and showed, first, what the things of the Spirit of God are. Secondly, described the natural man. And, thirdly, showed how they appear to be foolishness to him, and that he cannot know them by the strength of his natural or acquired abilities. The little society in Burlington appears to be in a comfortable and prosperous state. On my way to Trenton I met A. W. on the road. We stopped at a house, and in the course of conversation I found he was much dejected in his mind, but before we parted he appeared to be somewhat comforted. Many people attended the preaching at Trenton, though the notice was but short.

N. Y.]

Asbury in New York.

Friday, 11. Mr. R. came to Trenton. After dinner and prayer we set off together for Princeton. On Saturday we reached New York, and our friends there, having previous notice of our coming, kindly met us on the dock where we landed. The sight of Mr. W., with some other occurring circumstances, affected Mr. R. so that he appeared to be rather cast down in his mind.

On Staten Island.

Saturday, 26. Having preached a few times in New York since my return, I set off for Staten Island, but the heat was so extremely powerful that I stopped at my old friend J. W.'s, and on the *Lord's Day* heard Mr. P., a Presbyterian minister, preach twice, but

thought he was too metaphysical and superficial. In the evening I preached in Mr. W.'s yard, from Heb. v, 12: "Ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God." My mind is filled with the peace of God, and is drawn out in love to him and all mankind. Blessed be the Lord!

Destruction of Mr. Whitefield's Orphan House.

Thursday, July 1. Set off for New York, and having a tedious passage over the North River, I spent some time in serious conversation with two men in the boat, and hope it was not in vain. Then I came safe to New York, and preached from Habakkuk iii, 2: "O Lord, revive thy work in the midst of the years!" On *Friday* arrived the sorrowful news of the destruction of Mr. Whitefield's Orphan House. As there was no fire in the house, it was supposed to have been set on fire by lightning, which had been in the morning, as some say, accompanied with a sulphurous smell. It broke out in a rapid flame about seven or eight o'clock at night, and consumed the whole building except the two wings.

Pa.]

A General Conference.

Wednesday, 14. Our General Conference began, in which the following propositions were agreed to:

1. The old Methodist doctrine and discipline shall be enforced and maintained among all our societies in America.
2. Any preacher who acts otherwise cannot be retained among us as a fellow-laborer in the vineyard.
3. No preacher in our connection shall be permitted to administer the ordinances at this time except

Mr. S., and he under the particular direction of the assistant.

4. No person shall be admitted more than once or twice to our love-feasts or society-meetings without becoming a member.

5. No preacher shall be permitted to reprint our books without the approbation of Mr. Wesley, and the consent of his brethren. And that R. W. shall be allowed to sell what he has, but reprint no more.

6. Every assistant is to send an account of the work of God in his circuit to the general assistant.

There were some debates among the preachers in this Conference relative to the conduct of some who had manifested a desire to abide in cities and live like gentlemen. Three years out of four have been already spent in the cities. It was also found that money had been wasted, improper leaders appointed, and many of our rules broken.

Del.]

The People of Newcastle.

On *Monday*, Brother Y. rode in company with me to Mr. S.'s, where I preached with sweet freedom to a few attentive people. We took friendly counsel together, and our time was profitably and comfortably spent. On *Tuesday* morning my heart was still with the Lord, and my peace flowed as a river. Glory be given to God! On *Wednesday*, at Newcastle, the company was but small, though great power attended the word. Perhaps the Lord will yet visit this people, though at present too many of them appear to be devoted to pride, vanity, and folly. But, through abundant mercy, my heart is devoted to God and to his work. O that it may never depart from him!

Md.]

Great Hope for Baltimore.

On *Wednesday* I set out for Baltimore, but was taken very sick on the road ; however, I pursued my way, though it was sometimes through hard rain and heavy thunder, and preached in Baltimore on *Thursday*, in Mrs. Tribulet's new house, which she freely lent for that purpose. There appeared to be a considerable moving under the word. After preaching the next morning at the Point, I went to see a woman once happy in several respects, but now under distressing circumstances. Her husband was driven from her, and she was left with four children for three months.

Many people in general attend the preaching in Baltimore, especially after we have been long enough in town for the inhabitants to receive full knowledge of our being there. And I have great hope that the Lord will do something for the souls in this place, though the little society has been rather neglected for want of proper persons to lead them.

An Imputation Hurl'd Back.

Saturday, 25. While preaching to a large company at Mr. Gibbs's we had a moving, melting time. After preaching at nine o'clock the next morning at the same place I went to church, and thought the minister intended to point at me by speaking against idleness, and people who follow an unwarrantable employment, and doing what they have no business with. But, can any employment be more unwarrantable than the charge of souls without any real concern for their salvation ? And, bad as idleness is, it is far preferable to leading immortal souls astray. The

world can judge whether he is most like an idle man who reads a dry harangue every Lord's day, or he who toils and labors both day and night to save the souls of men. But these things I leave with the Lord. Many people attended my preaching in the evening, while I took occasion, from 2 Cor. v, 20, to show, among other things, the evangelical mission and life of a true ambassador of Christ.

A Painful Prospect.

Thursday, 30. Though very weak and low, the Lord favored me with a good opportunity, life, and liberty, at Daniel Ruff's.

Friday, Oct. 1. I was exceedingly ill at Mr. D.'s; and now began to think my traveling would be interrupted. This is my greatest trouble and pain, to forsake the work of God, and to neglect the people, whose spiritual interest and salvation I seek with my whole soul. The next day, finding myself too weak to travel, I sent Brother E. in my place; and must content myself to abide here awhile, where they treat me with the greatest care and kindness. My present purpose is, if the Lord spares and raises me up, to be more watchful and circumspect in all my ways. O Lord, remember me in mercy, and brace up my feeble soul!

Asbury Raised Up from the Borders of Death.

Wednesday, 6. My disorder has increased, and for several days my indisposition has been so great that I kept no journal. My friends wept around, and expected my dissolution was near. But the Lord thought on both them and me, to raise me up from

the borders of death. O that my few remaining days may be spent to his glory!—that every valuable end may be answered by my future life!

Preaches after a Month's Intermission.

Monday, 15. Found myself much better in health, and concluded to set off on my Master's business as soon as I should be properly equipped. On *Thursday* my heart was fixed, trusting in the Lord; and as my body was gathering strength, I set out on *Monday* for Baltimore, and on *Friday* reached William Lynch's, who entertained me with the greatest kindness. Here I had the pleasure of seeing our new church begun on Back-river Neck. The next day he conducted me in his carriage to the Point, where I was enabled to preach with some power. Then returned to the Neck, and met with Mr. J. He heard the word of God with great freedom of mind; and I believe his false peace was broken. My spirit was greatly refreshed by meeting Brother Y. at Baltimore on Monday; and the next day I was much assisted in preaching to a large number of people in town, both rich and poor. May the Lord arise and show himself gracious to these people! Through abundant grace I feel nothing contrary to the purest intention, nor the least desire for any thing but God. Bless the Lord, O my soul!

Quarterly Conference—Arrangement for the Work.

Lord's Day, 30. It appears that the people have a great desire to know the truth; for though it rained, and froze as it fell, yet a great many attended to hear. It was a very solemn time at night, while I

discoursed on the awful day of judgment. Samuel Owings is tenderly affected for the salvation of his soul. And William Moore and Philip Rogers seem to be in earnest about this important matter. Glory to God for these things! Set out on *Monday* for our quarterly meeting, and met the preachers at Brother Owings's. They all appeared to have their hearts fixed on promoting the work of God for the ensuing quarter, and we consulted together with great freedom and love. On the first day I inquired into the moral character of the local preachers, appointed them their work, and gave them written licenses to officiate. The preachers who spoke at this meeting manifested great earnestness and zeal for the salvation of souls, and many of the people were much affected; all was harmony and love. For the next quarter we had our stations as follows: P. Eberd, E. Drumgoole, and Richard Owings in Frederick circuit; Brother Yerbery and Brother Rawlings in Kent circuit; Henry Watters and Brother W. in Baltimore circuit; and myself in Baltimore town. We appointed our next quarterly meeting to be held in Baltimore on the first day of May next. Much fatigued in my feeble frame by various exercise, I returned to town and visited Mrs. Moore, who was afflicted in body and distressed in mind.

Asbury's Solitude for Baltimore.

Friday, Feb. 18. While preaching at the house of Mr. Moore, his father and mother were moved by the word of God. But after lying down at night to rest, my heart was oppressed with inexpressible feelings for the inhabitants of Baltimore. I am pressed under

them as a cart full of sheaves, and would rather be employed in the most servile offices than preach to them, if it were not from a sense of duty to God, and a desire to be instrumental in saving their souls. If honor and worldly gain were held out as motives to this painful work, they would to me appear lighter than vanity. But, Lord, thou knowest my motives and my ends ! O prosper thou the work of my heart and my hands !

A Champion in Sin Wounded by the Spirit.

Tuesday, March 1. Several went with me to John Waters's, where we found a large company of people collected, who appeared both ignorant and proud. While attempting to preach to them from these words, "May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?" my mind was oppressed above measure, so that both my heart and my mouth were almost shut ; and after I had done, my spirit was greatly troubled. O my soul ! if confined to the society of the wicked, what couldst thou find but vexation and grief? But "where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty." Having frequently sixteen or twenty miles to ride, and then to preach before dinner, which is often as late as four o'clock, it shakes my constitution, and is painful to the flesh. But I cheerfully submit to these things for the sake of precious souls. What did the blessed Jesus suffer for me ! The next day a champion in sin, a man who had been a famous ringleader in absurd and diabolical sports, was deeply wounded by the Spirit of God, while in the course of my sermon I was describing the horrible torments to which those would be

exposed in hell who had been instruments in the hands of Satan to train up others in sin and disobedience. He afterward invited me home, and we had some serious conversation. I then returned to Baltimore.

Using the Ordinances.

Friday, 11. On my way to Joseph Presbury's my horse tired, and fell down with me on his back, but I was not in the least hurt. Calling at Dr. Henderson's, I met with I. R., a Quaker, who said it gave him pain to think that Joseph Pilmoor should go home for ordination, and expressed his disapprobation of our going to the Church for the ordinances, supposing we might have them among ourselves. But this was all a farce. He would rather that we should drop them altogether. And in the course of conversation he labored to overthrow them entirely. But when I told him it might appear to me as a duty to use them, though I should not suppose that all went to hell who did not use them, he asked why we use them if they are not essential to salvation. What weak reasoning is this! Do they think laying them aside is thus essential, or wearing their clothes in such a shape, or using (as they call it) the plain language? Why then do they follow these practices? But what makes them so contracted and bitter in their spirit as some of them are? There is One that knoweth.

Hopeful of Baltimore.

Monday, 18. My soul was in peace, but my body weak. This day the foundation of our house in Baltimore was laid. Who could have expected that two men, once among the chief of sinners, would ever

have thus engaged in so great an undertaking for the cause of the blessed Jesus? "This is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes." He hath touched and changed their hearts. He hath moved them to this acceptable undertaking; and he will surely complete it, and raise up a people to serve him in this place.

The Revelation of St. John.

Saturday, 23. Though weak in body, I have been able for a few days past to go through my public exercises, and was both instructed and delighted to-day in reading the Revelation with its comment. There we see the rise and spread of the Christian religion through the extensive and idolatrous empire of the Romans, the wars of the Saracens, the gradual rise and artful progress of Popery. What an amazing prophetic history is this, of all people and nations, in epitome! How expressive are the differently-colored horses and surprising representations seen by St. John! In this book extraordinary events are foretold, as well as the proper rule of our faith and practice revealed. If this deep book were fully understood, need we go any further after knowledge?

Friday, 29. What a miracle of grace am I! How unworthy, and yet how abundantly blessed! In the midst of all temptations, both from without and from within, my heart trusteth in the Lord. I was greatly delighted to-day in reading Dr. Guise on the Reign of Christ, which on earth will be spiritual, and in glory personal and eternal. O the beauties and joys of which I have some prospect in that celestial world! It seems rather strange that, till lately, I could discover no beauties in the Revelation of St.

John. But now I think it is the grand key of all mysteries, whether pure or impure ; opening to view all the revolutions, persecutions, and errors of the Church from that time till the end of the world. And then it favors us with a glimpse of what shall remain forever.

A Confirmation of the Work of God.

Friday, 6. I preached from Matt. xii, 50, but felt my mind dejected. Not meeting with success in this town as my soul ardently longs for, I rather feel a desire to depart, and to try some other people. But let the will of the Lord be done. My heart has been deeply affected by reading the Life of Col. Gardiner. Blessed be God for so many who experience the same work of grace which we preach, and at the same time are not of us ! This is a great confirmation of the work of God. And “ whosoever doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven,” of every denomination, “ the same shall be my brother, and sister, and mother.”

Work of God in Virginia.

Mr. W. arrived to-day from Virginia. He gave us a circumstantial account of the work of God in those parts. One house of worship is built, and another in contemplation ; two or three more preachers are gone out upon the itinerant plan ; and in some parts the congregations consist of two or three thousand people. But some evil-minded persons have opposed the act of toleration, and threatened to imprison him. May the Lord turn their hearts, and make them partakers of his great salvation !

An Assault from Satan.

Friday, 13. I packed up my clothes and books to be ready for my departure, and had an agreeable conversation with Mr. O. The next day some of my friends were so unguarded and imprudent as to commend me to my face. Satan, ready for every advantage, seized the opportunity, and assaulted me with self-pleasing, self-exalting ideas. But the Lord enabled me to discover the danger, and the snare was broken. May he ever keep me humble, and little, and mean in my own eyes!

Del.]

Asbury at Newcastle.

Thursday, 19. I am happy in God after all my labors. But when among my friends my mind inclines to a degree of cheerfulness bordering on levity. O for more watchfulness! a more constant, striking sense of an omnipresent God! Preached to-day in the market-house at Charleston. The congregation was somewhat large, and many of them very attentive. The company was large at Bohemia on *Friday*, and my own heart was deeply affected, and much drawn out while speaking from Rev. iii, 3. At Newcastle, on *Saturday*, Satan was there, diverting the people by a play. However, several came to hear me enforce these words, "Be not ye partakers with them."

Conference at Philadelphia.

Monday, 23. After preaching yesterday at Newport and Red Clay Creek, I rode to-day to Chester; and though weary, spoke from Gal. vi, 14. Here my old friends, Mr. M. and Mr. S., from New York, met

me, and the next day we rode to Philadelphia. Hitherto the Lord hath helped.

Wednesday, 25. Our conference began. The overbearing spirit of a certain person had excited my fears. My judgment was very stubbornly opposed for awhile, and at last submitted to. But it is my duty to bear all things with a meek and patient spirit. Our conference was attended with great power; and, all things considered, with great harmony. We agreed to send Mr. W. to England; and all acquiesced in the future stations of the preachers. My lot was to go to New York. My body and mind have been much fatigued during the time of this conference. And if I were not deeply conscious of the truth and goodness of the cause in which I am engaged, I should by no means stay here. Lord, what a world is this! yea, what a religious world! O keep my heart pure, and my garments unspotted from the world! Our conference ended on Friday with a comfortable intercession.

N. Y.]

Asbury again in New York.

Lord's Day, 29. This was a day of peace, and the Lord favored me with faith and energy while preaching to the people. I visited Mr. W., who is going to England, but found he had no taste for spiritual subjects. Lord, keep me from all superfluity of dress, and from preaching empty stuff to please the ear, instead of changing the heart! Thus has he fulfilled as a hireling his day. We had a very solemn love-feast to-day, and on *Monday* my friends and I set off in the stage for New York, where we arrived on Tuesday evening about eight o'clock. We had some trifling company on the way, who talked much but to

little purpose. My old friends in New York were glad to see me. But I still fear there is a root of prejudice remaining in the hearts of a few. May the Lord prepare me for all events, that I may act and suffer, in all things, like a Christian ! Captain W. preached a good sermon in the evening.

A Blessed State of Heart.

Tuesday, 14. My heart seems wholly devoted to God, and he favors me with power over all outward and inward sin. My affections appear to be quite weaned from all terrestrial objects. Some people, if they felt as I feel at present, would perhaps conclude they were saved from all indwelling sin. O my God, save me and keep me every moment of my life ! The next day my soul was under heavy exercises, and much troubled by manifold temptations ; but still, all my care was cast on the Lord. I find it hurtful to pore too much on myself. True, I should be daily employed in the duty of self-examination, and strictly attend both to my internal and external conduct ; but, at the same time, my soul should steadily fix the eye of faith on the blessed Jesus, my Mediator and Advocate at the right hand of the eternal Father. Lord, cause thy face to shine upon me, and make me always joyful in thy salvation !

A Temptation of Satan.

Lord's Day, 10. My bodily weakness has been such, for a few days past, as to prevent my officiating much in public ; however, I ventured to preach twice to-day, but in the evening was so weak that I could scarce stand in the pulpit ; but while preaching on the parable of the prodigal son, the Lord greatly

refreshed and strengthened me, though I went to bed very ill at night. Satan tempted me to-day to think much of my gifts. Alas ! what poor creatures we are ; and to what dangers we are exposed ! What are all our gifts, unless they answer some good purpose ! Unless properly improved, they neither make us holier or happier. We have nothing but what we have received ; and, unless we are humble in the possession of them, they only make us more like devils, and more fit for hell.

Heavy Work for a Sick Man.

Thursday, 14. My mind is in peace. I have now been sick near ten months, and many days closely confined ; yet I have preached about three hundred times, and rode near two thousand miles in that time, though very frequently in a high fever. Here is no ease, worldly profit, or honor. What, then, but the desire of pleasing God and saving souls, could stimulate to such laborious and painful duties ? O that my labor may not be in vain ! that the Lord may give me to see fruit of these weak, but earnest endeavors, many days hence ! After preaching this evening with some warmth of heart, I was very close and pointed in meeting the society.

A Page of Personal History.

Lord's Day, 24. Ended the parable of the prodigal son. Does it not appear from this parable that some who, comparatively speaking, have all their life-time endeavored to please God, and are entitled to all his purchased, communicative blessings, are nevertheless not favored with such rapturous sensations of divine

joy as some others? I remember when I was a small boy and went to school I had serious thoughts, and a particular sense of the being of a God, and greatly feared both an oath and a lie. At twelve years of age the Spirit of God strove frequently and powerfully with me; but being deprived of proper means, and exposed to bad company, no effectual impressions were left on my mind. And, though fond of what some call innocent diversions, I abhorred fighting and quarreling: when any thing of this sort happened I always went home displeased. But I have been much grieved to think that so many Sabbaths were idly spent, which might have been better improved. However, wicked as my companions were, and fond as I was of play, I never imbibed their vices. When between thirteen and fourteen years of age, the Lord graciously visited my soul again. I then found myself more inclined to obey, and carefully attended preaching in West Bromwick, so that I heard Stillingfleet, Bagnel, Rylan, Anderson, Mansfield, and Talbott, men who preached the truth. I then began to watch over my inward and outward conduct; and having a desire to hear the Methodists, I went to Wednesbury, and heard Mr. F. and Mr. I., but did not understand them, though one of their subjects is fresh in my memory to this day. This was the first of my hearing the Methodists. After that another person went with me to hear them again: the text was, "The time will come, when they will not endure sound doctrine." My companion was cut to the heart, but I was unmoved. The next year Mr. M. came into those parts. I was then about fifteen; and, young as I was, the word of God

soon made deep impressions on my heart, which brought me to Jesus Christ, who graciously justified my guilty soul through faith in his precious blood, and soon showed me the excellency and necessity of holiness. About sixteen I experienced a marvelous display of the grace of God, which some might think was full sanctification, and was indeed very happy, though in an ungodly family. At about seventeen I began to hold some public meetings ; and between seventeen and eighteen began to exhort and preach. When about twenty-one I went through Staffordshire and Gloucestershire, in the place of a traveling preacher, and the next year through Bedfordshire, Sussex, etc. In 1769 I was appointed assistant in Northamptonshire, and the next year traveled in Wiltshire. September 3, 1771, I embarked for America, and for my own private satisfaction began to keep an imperfect journal.

Descendants of the French Protestants.

August 1. Some of my good friends accompanied me as far as Kingsbridge, on my way to New Rochelle. I visited my little flock with some satisfaction. Here are some of the offspring of the French Protestants, who, on account of their religion, fled from Rochelle in France ; and God has mercifully remembered them unto the third and fourth generation.

Soul longing for Heaven.

Rose early the next morning, but found myself weak both in body and mind. In this tabernacle I groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with the

house which is from heaven. My soul longs to fly to God, that it may be ever with him. O happy day, that shall call a poor exile home to his Father's house! But I must check the impetuous current of desire, for it is written, "He that believeth shall not make haste."

A Great Folly.

Wednesday, 10. I was very low, but met my class, and preached in the evening. There appeared to be but little depth of religion in the class. It is a great folly to take people into society before they know what they are about. What some people take for religion and spiritual life is nothing but the power of the natural passions. It is true, real religion cannot exist without peace, and love, and joy. But then, real religion is real holiness. And all sensations without a strong disposition for holiness are but delusive.

Berridge and Fletcher.

Mr. L. waited on Mr. P. and told him he appeared to be more taken up in reading Mr. Berridge's *Christian World Unmasked* than the Bible. Mr. Berridge kept his room in a very gloomy state of mind about five years ago, and now he is come forth with his facetious pen to dictate to the Christian world. But Mr. Fletcher, in his *Fifth Check*, has fully answered all his witty arguments. Mr. Berridge was a good man, no doubt, but unfortunately drank deep into the principles of Antinomianism.

Waiting to Hear what the Blunderer had to Say.

Lord's Day, 18. Losing some of my ideas in preaching, I was ashamed of myself, and pained to see

the people waiting to hear what the blunderer had to say. May these things humble me, and show me where my great strength lieth! In meeting the society I urged the necessity of more private devotion, and of properly digesting what they hear. Set off the next morning for New Rochelle, and found E. D. in distress of soul. This is an agreeable family, and the children are both affectionate and obedient to their parents. I hope she and the rest of them will become true Christians, and be finally bound up in the bundle of life. I preached from 2 Tim. iv, 2, and many strangers were present. Satan is frequently assaulting me with his temptations, but the Lord enables me to discover and resist his first attacks.

Alarm of Fire—Reflections.

At two o'clock in the night we were all alarmed by a fire which burned down a house in Peck Slip. What a resemblance of the general judgment! But if the cry of fire alarms us, how much more shall we be alarmed by the archangel's trumpet! When all the ungodly shall have ten thousand times more cause to fear than the loss of houses, and goods, and life, how will they endure the cutting anguish? But they are after the flesh, therefore they mind the things of the flesh, and them only.

Too Much for Both the People and Preacher.

Friday, 14. My heart was much devoted to God. But having been here now four months, preaching or exhorting every day, and twice on the Lord's day, besides society meetings, it seems to be too much for both the people and the preacher. We have now

more unity in the society here than we have had for some time past. But we want more of the life and power of religion among us.

Delightful Intercourse with God.

Lord's Day, '30. I kept close house till evening. And O what happiness did my soul enjoy with God! So open and delightful was the intercourse between God and my soul, that it gave me grief if any person came into my room to disturb my sweet communion with the blessed Father and the Son. When my work is done, may I enter into that fullness of joy which shall never be interrupted in the blissful realms above! In the evening I ventured to preach from 1 Cor. i, 21, and spoke with great freedom and plainness, and felt better afterward than could have been expected. Found myself something better on *Monday*, and met two classes.

Asbury Meets with a Fellow-passenger.

Monday, Nov. 28. After taking my leave of my good friends in New York the last evening from Phil. i, 27, Captain W. and myself set off this morning for Amboy. We met with a person who came a passenger with us from England in the character of a gentleman, by the name of Wilson, but now he calls himself Clarkson, and since then he has called himself Lavingston. He was apprehended for passing a counterfeit bill, for which he was both imprisoned and whipped. When he saw me he knew me, and I knew him, but he was in such perplexity that he could eat no breakfast, and went off in the first wagon he could meet with. To what fears and anxiety are poor

sinner exposed! And if the presence of a mortal man can strike such terror into the minds of guilty sinners, what must they feel when they stand without a covering before a heart-searching and righteous God.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

Friday, December 2. My soul enjoys great peace, but longs for more of God. We visited the prisoners again, and Captain W. enforced some very alarming truths upon them, though very little fruit of his labor could be seen. Mr. R. came to Burlington to-day, and desired me to go to Philadelphia. So, after preaching in the evening from Prov. xxviii, 13, I set off the next morning for the city, and found the society in the spirit of love.

A Small Congregation.

Wednesday, 14. Mr. R. was sick, and Captain W. was busy, so I spent my time in study and devotion, and enjoyed a blessed sense of the Divine Presence. But what need can there be for two preachers here to preach three times a week to about sixty people? On Thursday night about sixty persons attended to hear Captain W. preach. This is indeed a very gloomy prospect. But my heart delighteth in God. He is the object of my hope, and I trust he will be my portion forever.

At a Quaker Meeting.

Lord's Day, 15. I visited the Quaker meeting, but wondered to see so many sensible men sit to hear two or three old women talk. In the latter part of the day I was much indisposed, and kept at home.

But the next morning I found myself something better, and earnestly longed for purity of heart, and perfect resignation to all the will of God.

An Affliction—Satan Busy.

From the twenty-third of *January* till the first of *February* my affliction was so severe that I was not able to write. There were several small ulcers on the inside of my throat, and the pain of the gatherings was so severe that for two weeks I could not rest of nights. My friends were very kind, and, expecting my death, they affectionately lamented over me. But on the 29th of January I was happily relieved by the discharge of near a pint of white matter. For awhile my mind was in great heaviness, but after some severe conflicts with the powers of darkness I was calmly resigned to the will of a wise and gracious God. O Lord, how wonderful are thy works! It is my desire to know the cause of this affliction, that, if it is in my power, I may remove it. Is it that I may know more of myself, and lie in the dust? Or for my past unfaithfulness? But whatever may be the cause, I humbly hope that all those painful dispensations will work together for my good. In the course of this affliction I found that when my spirit was broken, and brought to submit with cheerfulness to the will of God, then the disorder abated, and I began to recover, though Satan was very busy, and, like Job's impious wife, suggested to my mind that I should curse God and die. Nevertheless, through grace, I am more than conqueror, and can give glory to God.

Asbury Ill, but Employed in Reading.

Thursday, Feb. 9. My body continues to recover. But I discover many weaknesses and failures in my inner man. When shall my soul be adorned as a bride for her bridegroom? When shall all within and all without be holiness to the Lord? Notwithstanding my illness, I have read Neal's History of the Puritans, consisting of four volumes, in about two months.

Friday, 10. How great a blessing is health! though of late it is but seldom enjoyed by me. But, through mercy, my body now feels like being restored; and I am afraid of being thereby too much elated. The Lord shows me the excellency of affliction, and enables me to exercise resignation in all conditions of life. I am now reading Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History; but as a writer he is too dry and speculative.

Pantings of Heart to Labor for God.

Tuesday, 14. My heart pants to labor for God; to be once more employed in building up his spiritual house. O that he may strengthen me, set me to work, and greatly bless my poor endeavors! Preaching the glorious Gospel seems to be my proper employment; and when I am long detained from it I appear to be out of my element. But hope, a blessed hope, revives, that before long I shall be of some service in the Church of Christ.

Md.] New House and Old Friends in Baltimore.

Thursday, March 2. We called at the house of Mr. J. D., and rested about an hour. Sister D. has treated

me with all the tenderness of a mother toward a son ; and may He that will not forget a cup of water given in his name, abundantly reward her ! We then pursued our journey to Baltimore, and my heart was greatly refreshed at the sight of my spiritual children and kind friends there, for whose welfare my soul had travailed both present and absent. The next day I had the pleasure of seeing our new house and my old friends, with some new ones added to their number. Here are all my own with increase.

Asbury Preaches with great Pathos.

Saturday, 18. Peace and pure desires filled my soul, and Christ was the object of my love. Glory be to thee, O Lord ! The next day the Spirit of the Lord God was with me in preaching at the Point, and with great pathos I was enabled to deliver the truth at night in town. Many of the audience felt the weight of God's word. May they yield to the sacred touch, and be saved !

Statistics of Circuits and Preachers.

Tuesday, 28. Mr. O., the Dutch minister, accompanied me to I. O.'s, where we had a blessed and refreshing season. The next day, at town, I met with Brother W. from Virginia, who gave me a great account of the work of God in those parts—five or six hundred souls justified by faith, and five or six circuits formed ; so that we have now fourteen circuits in America, and about twenty-two preachers are required to supply them. Thus we see how Divine Providence makes way for the word of truth, and the Holy Spirit attends it. May it spread in power, and cover these lands !

Baltimore Ninety-six Years ago.

Lora's Day, 16. The Spirit of God attended our endeavors both in town and Point. My heart was greatly enlarged in town especially. There is a very apparent alteration in this place. There is not so much drunkenness and neglect of the ordinances as in former times, and the people are much more inclined to attend the places of public worship. So that, on the whole, I entertain a lively hope that the Lord will yet arise up for himself a large society in the town of Baltimore. On Monday my frame was weak and weary ; nevertheless I had to preach once in town, and once in the country, about seven miles off.

Asbury on his Way to Philadelphia.

Thursday, 11, was appointed as a general fast. I preached on the occasion, and the Lord made it a solemn, heart-affecting time, so that we did not conclude till about three o'clock. The next day I reached Bohemia ; but as it was late, some of the congregation had departed. I therefore exhorted those that were left, and then proceeded to Newcastle.

Lord's Day, 14. Both last night and this day, I hope my skirts were clear of the blood of the people in this little town, whether they reject or accept of an offered salvation. After stopping to preach at Chester the next day, I then went on to Philadelphia.

Va.]

In Norfolk.

Monday, 22. Having preached the last evening with some sweet enlargement, I left Philadelphia

this morning, and set off for Norfolk. Preached at night to a few people in Chester, and was conducted the next morning in a friend's chaise to Cecil Court-house, where I embarked for Norfolk.

Monday, 29. With a thankful heart I landed at Norfolk, after having been much tossed about by contrary winds in the bay. My accommodations on board the vessel were also very indifferent, so that it was a disagreeable and fatiguing passage ; but

“ In hope of that immortal crown
I now the cross sustain ;
And gladly wander up and down,
And smile at toil and pain.”

Here I found about thirty persons in society after their manner ; but they had no regular class-meetings. However, here are a few who are willing to observe all the rules of our society. Their present preaching-house is an old, shattered building, which has formerly been a play-house. Surely the Lord will not always suffer his honor to be trampled in the dust. No ; I entertain a hope that we shall have a house and a people in this town. My heart is filled with holy thoughts, and deeply engaged in the work of God. On *Tuesday* evening about one hundred and fifty souls attended to hear the word, and about fifty at five o'clock on *Wednesday* morning, which, by the presence of the Lord, was found to be a good time. I then went over to Portsmouth, and found my spirit at liberty in preaching to a number of souls there.

Ballast Necessary—Puffs of Applause.

Friday, June 2. The Lord is pleased to show me the danger which a preacher is in of being lifted up

by pride, and falling into the condemnation of the devil. How great is the danger of this ! A considerable degree of ballast is highly necessary to bear frequent and sudden puffs of applause. Lord, fill me with genuine humility, that the strongest gusts from Satan or the world may never move me !

The Power of Christian Simplicity.

Wednesday, 26. I preached to a small company at Brother W.'s, and before the congregation was dismissed an honest Christian, who had been justified about twelve months before, rose up and spoke a few broken words, which affected the people more than all that had been said. What an excellent thing is simplicity of heart ! How ready is God to own and bless it ! It would be well for professors of some standing to inquire impartially if they have not lost their first simplicity. Old professors are very apt to become wise in their own esteem, and fools in God's esteem.

Love of Souls Stronger than Love of Country.

Monday, 7. I received a letter from Mr. T. R., in which he informed me that himself, Mr. R., and Mr. D. had consulted, and deliberately concluded it would be best to return to England. But I can by no means agree to leave such a field for gathering souls to Christ as we have in America. It would be an eternal dishonor to the Methodists that we should all leave three thousand souls, who desire to commit themselves to our care ; neither is it the part of a good shepherd to leave his flock in time of danger ; therefore I am determined, by the grace of God, not to leave them, let the consequence be what it may.

Our friends here appeared to be distressed above measure at the thoughts of being forsaken by the preachers, so I wrote my sentiments both to Mr. T. R. and Mr. G. S.

Marines in Norfolk—Reflection.

Lord's Day, October 1. Preached in Portsmouth, for the first time since my illness, and the hearts of many were touched.

Tuesday, 3. My heart is fixed, trusting in the Lord. I sincerely desire to be entirely his—to spend the remnant of my days and strength altogether for God. A company of marines have been ashore at Norfolk, ransacked the printing-office, and taken the printers and press with them. The inhabitants soon after embodied and got under arms. The people are also repairing the fort, which, if put in order, may sink all the ships that shall attempt to come into the harbor. But if it is thought expedient to watch and fight in defense of our bodies and property, how much more expedient is it to watch and fight against sin and Satan in defense of our souls, which are in danger of eternal damnation! But small dangers at hand have a greater effect on fallen man than the greatest dangers which are thought to be at a distance. But, alas! the one may be as near as the other!

A Just Observation.

Tuesday, 14. Preached at Mr. C.'s and Mr. B.'s, and met with a few inquisitive people. It is a just observation, that those matters which are the least disputed in religion are the most essential, and those who are the most fond of controverted trifles have the

least real religion. Satan will help us to the shell, if we will be satisfied without the kernel.

A Retrospect.

Wednesday, 20. I have now been twelve years a preacher, three years in a local capacity, and nine years in the traveling connection ; about four years and eight months in England, and about four years and four months in America.

Entering on a New Year.

Monday, January 1, 1776. I am now entering on a new year, and am of late constantly happy, feeling my heart much taken up with God, and hope thus to live and thus to die. Or, if there should be any alteration, may it be for the better, and not for the worse ! This is my earnest desire and prayer to God.

“ My residue of days or hours,
Thine, wholly thine, shall be ;
And all my consecrated powers
A sacrifice to thee.
Till Jesus in the clouds appear
To saints on earth forgiven,
And bring the grand sabbatic year,
The jubilee of heaven.”

Burnet's History of His Own Times.

Tuesday, 30. The weather has been very cold, though I have attended every place in course ; and both the people and myself have been frequently blessed. I have been reading Burnet's History of His Own Times, and am amazed at the intrigues of courts, and the treachery of men. There is reason to fear the same cause produces the same

effects at this time, for there is no probability of peace, and a great army is expected from England in the spring. May the Lord look upon us and help us!

"Ended where we Began."

Lord's Day, 18. I preached twice at Petersburg. The last subject was the rich man and Lazarus, which struck the people with great solemnity, and many seemed to feel the power of God. On *Monday* there were two Baptist preachers among the congregation. After the sermon was ended they desired to speak with me. So we conversed about three hours on experimental, practical, and controversial divinity, but ended where we began. I thank the Lord, my mind was kept in peace and coolness. No doubt but Satan is very active in promoting religious controversies. Many take a controversial spirit for the spirit of religion, while others dispute away what little religion they have. "Only by pride cometh contention. The wisdom that cometh from above is pure and peaceable."

Md.]

Baltimore Alarmed—Reflection.

Left Leesburg on *Monday*, 4, and, by the good providence of God, arrived safe at Baltimore on *Thursday*, but found the people greatly alarmed by the report of a man-of-war being near. Many of the inhabitants were moving out of town. Brother W. preached in the evening.

Thursday, 7. My heart mounts heavenward on wings of strong desire for more of God; and the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, keepeth my spirit in his knowledge and love. Here I met

with Brother R., and found him under some exercises of mind toward Mr. T. R. However, the temptation was removed before we parted. On *Friday* the town was all in commotion. It was reported that the man-of-war was in the river, which excited the serious attention of all the inhabitants; so that some were moving off, while others were getting under arms. Alas for fallen man! He fears his fellow-creatures, whose breath is in their nostrils, but fears not Him who is able to destroy body and soul in hell. If fire and sword at a small distance can so alarm us, how will poor impenitent sinners be alarmed when they find, by woeful experience, that they must drink the wine of the wrath of God, poured out without mixture?

Heaven and Earth Contrasted.

Lord's Day, 10. The congregations were but small, so great has the consternation been. But I know the Lord governeth the world; therefore these things shall not trouble me. I will endeavor to be ready for life or death; so that, if death should come, my soul may joyfully quit this land of sorrow, and go to rest in the embraces of the blessed Jesus. O delightful felicity! There is no din of war; no unfriendly persecutors of piety; no enchanting world with concealed destruction; no malevolent spirit to disturb our peace; but all is purity, peace, and joy. Adapting my discourse to the occasion, I preached this evening from Isaiah i, 19, 20: "If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: but if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it."

Pa.] Safe in Philadelphia—A Journey of Three Thousand Miles.

Tuesday, 19. Under the divine protection I came safe to Philadelphia, having rode about three thousand miles since I left it last. But heaven is my object, not earth. This springs my mind, and makes my burden light.

“ The things eternal I pursue,
A happiness beyond the view
Of those that basely pant
For things by nature felt and seen :
Their honors, wealth, and pleasures mean,
I neither have nor want.”

An Apology for Mr. Wesley.

Here I met with Mr. T. R. in the spirit of love, and received a full account of what related to the unhappy Mr. D. I also received an affectionate letter from Mr. Wesley, and am truly sorry that the venerable man ever dipped into the politics of America. My desire is to live in love and peace with all men ; to do them no harm, but all the good I can. However, it discovers Mr. Wesley's conscientious attachment to the government under which he lived. Had he been a subject of America, no doubt but he would have been as zealous an advocate of the American cause. But some inconsiderate persons have taken occasion to censure the Methodists in America on account of Mr. Wesley's political sentiments.

Sufferings of Christ.

Friday, 5. I heard a Moravian preach, but it was only a historical faith. And this being Good Friday, I preached from these pathetic words of Christ :

“Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me : nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.” What mortal can form any idea of the blessed Saviour’s feelings at that time, when his agony was so great as to express from his sinless body great drops of blood and water ! Was it ever heard before that any man sweat blood ? If Jesus found the punishment due to sin to be so severe, how will poor sinners themselves bear the eternal damnation of hell ?

Asbury Prays for God’s Help in the War Struggle.

Tuesday, 16. My heart was sweetly enlarged toward God both in my private exercises and my public preaching. A friend from New York informed us that troops were raised and intrenchments made in that city. O Lord, we are oppressed ; undertake for us ! I received a letter from friend E. at Trenton, complaining that the societies in that circuit had been neglected by the preachers.

Wednesday, 17. My soul loves God and all mankind, but I cannot please all men. However, my conscience is void of offense both toward God and toward man. On *Thursday* we heard of a skirmish between the Philadelphia fleet and the Glasgow man-of-war. What will be the end of these things ? Lord, think upon us for good, and show us mercy ! Preaching this evening, the powers of my soul were at full liberty, and I trust it was made a blessing to many.

N. J.]

Again in New Jersey.

Thursday, May 2. Some melted under the word at Mount Holly, though at first they seemed inattentive and careless. The grace of God kept my spirit this

day in sweet seriousness, without any mixture of sourness.

Saturday, 4. At New Mills I found Brother W. very busy about his chapel, which is thirty-six feet by twenty-eight, with a gallery fifteen feet deep. I preached in it from Matt. vii, 7, with fervor, but not with freedom, and returned to W. B.'s the same night.

Lord's Day, 5. I preached at New Mills again, and it was a heart-affecting season; then returned to Philadelphia, but went under a heavy gloom of mind, and found my spirit much dejected and shut up.

Pa.l Appointed to Baltimore.

Monday, 27. Expecting the preachers were on their return from the conference, I appointed preaching at my lodgings, but had to preach myself to a small, attentive, tender company, and felt much quickened in my own soul. At night Brother R. arrived, and informed me that I was appointed for Baltimore; to which I cheerfully submit, though it seems to be against my bodily health.

An Impenetrable Congregation.

Tuesday, 11. Rose with a deep sense of God resting on my mind, and set off for Mr. L.'s, which is about twenty miles from the house where I lodged; but by losing our way, we made it about thirty miles, and did not reach the place till about two o'clock. The Lord then rewarded me for my toil, while I was preaching to a serious, tender people; and I afterward endeavored to unite the society, which Satan, by his diabolical wiles, had divided. On *Wednesday*

the congregation at I. O.'s were so impenetrable that neither promises or threats could move them. Nor did the people at M. W.'s seemed to have much more sensibility, though I was greatly affected myself while preaching to them from 2 Corinthians vi, 2. The Lord has blessed me of late with much assistance in preaching, and with purity of heart.

Md.] *Asbury Fined for Preaching the Gospel.*

Thursday, 20. Went to Nathan Perrig's, and was fined five pounds for preaching the Gospel ; but found my soul at liberty both in preaching and class-meeting. We then went to W. L.'s, and found N. L. under uncommon exercises of mind.

Saturday, 22. Returned to Baltimore ; and although my peace is not broken, neither is any wrong temper or desire indulged, yet I lament the want of more spirituality. My soul, like the rising flame, would continually ascend to God.

Soaring too High—A Casualty.

Thursday, 27. This was a day of trials. Satan drew my thoughts into a train of reasoning on subjects which were out of my reach ; for secret things belong to God, but things which are revealed belong to us and our children. Thus, while I was soaring out of the region of my duty, I became inattentive to what immediately concerned me, and oversetting my chaise, broke it very much ; though, blessed be God ! my body was preserved. May the Lord keep my soul united to himself, as its proper center ! However, I was greatly blessed in speaking to the people ; and the power of God rested on the congregation.

Asbury Decides to Visit the Warm Springs.

I have now come to a determination, God willing, to go to the warm springs, and make a trial of them for the recovery of my health ; perhaps my strength may be thereby so restored for future services that upon the whole there may be no loss of time. R. W., W. L., and I. F. will supply the circuit in the mean time.

Va.] The Burden of the Lord upon Him.

Thursday, 18. After riding forty miles to-day we reached the springs, and at first we found it difficult to obtain lodgings. But after awhile I procured a good lodging with Mr. M. Here was work enough for a preacher if he desired to be faithful. My soul was happy ; and I felt myself totally delivered from the fear of man—determined, by the grace of God, to discharge my duty.

Friday, 19. My soul was in peace ; but the burden of the Lord rested upon me. I could not be satisfied till I declared to the people their danger and duty : which I did from Isaiah lv, 6, 7. They all behaved with decency, though it is more than probable that some of them had enough of my preaching.

Decided Results from his Labors at the Springs.

Wednesday, 24. The congregation was rather increased ; many were affected, and one man fell down. It clearly appears that I am in the line of my duty in attending the springs : there is a manifest check to the overflowing tide of immorality, and the prejudices of many people are in a great degree removed. So that I hope my visit to this place will be

for the benefit of the souls of some, as well as for the benefit of my own body ; though preaching in the open air, to a people who are almost strangers to a praying spirit, is more disagreeable to my feelings, and a much greater cross, than traveling and preaching in a circuit.

An Unusual Programme for an Invalid.

Monday, 29. My present mode of conduct is as follows : to read about a hundred pages a day ; usually to pray in public five times a day ; to preach in the open air every other day ; and to lecture in prayer-meeting every evening. And if it were in my power, I would do a thousand times as much for such a gracious and blessed Master. But in the midst of all my little employments, I feel myself as nothing, and Christ to me is all in all.

Limited Accommodations.

The house in which we live, at the springs, is not the most agreeable : the size of it is twenty feet by sixteen ; and there are seven beds and sixteen persons therein, and some noisy children. So I dwell among briars and thorns ; but my soul is in peace.

Opposition from the Parson.

Tuesday, 13. I found the parson had been encouraging the gentlemen to oppose me, and intimating that it was very improper to permit me to preach. My soul is among lions, but the God of Daniel is with me. I attempted to preach in the day, but my mind was shut up ; though my spirit was revived in the evening lecture. It is strange to see a priest conducting

persecution against the people of God! When did a persecution take place in which men of that character had no hand? But although Satan may be permitted to transform himself into an angel of light for a season, yet he will not always have his own way in this matter.

A Characteristic Description.

Tuesday, 27. Having taken my leave yesterday, in discoursing on the parable of the sower, I this day turned my back on the springs, as the best and the worst place that I ever was in; good for health, but most injurious to religion.

A Just Discrimination.

Lord's Day, 29. There were five or six hundred people at the Forks, to whom I discoursed on the judgments of God; and showed who are the provoking cause—not religious people, as the ignorant say, but those who transgress the laws of God, in defiance of his justice. Thus it was with the antediluvians, with the Egyptians, with the apostate Israelites in the wilderness, with the inhabitants of Jerusalem after the coming of Christ, and thus it is with us.

Asbury's Salary—Six Pounds per Quarter.

Wednesday, 9. Having received a letter from Mrs. M. of Middle River Neck, requesting me to go and preach a funeral sermon at the burial of her sister, I set out this morning in compliance with her request. We found it a serious, awful season, and after all was over she offered me some money; but being in a place where I could receive my six pounds per

quarter, which was sufficient for keeping me in clothes and a horse, I thankfully refused to take it. She was capable of making an excellent, useful Christian, and appeared to be under religious impressions.

Always Prepared for the Worst.

Saturday, 30. Returning to Baltimore, I preached from Rom. vii, 38, 39. The congregation was small, but there was power in the word. It was now reported that the British troops were on their march to Philadelphia. Troubles may be at hand. But my design is, through grace, so to improve my time as to be always prepared for the worst. Poor sinners have cause to tremble at the approach of death; but even in that dreaded hour the righteous can rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Private Devotions.

Lord's Day, 8. My present practice is, to set apart about three hours out of every twenty-four for private prayer; but Satan labors much to interrupt me. Nevertheless, my soul enjoys a sweet and peaceful nearness to God, for the most part, in these duties. I found some at the Point mourning for an interest in Jesus Christ. May the Lord, whom they seek, come suddenly into the temple of their disconsolate hearts!

A Dangerous Practice.

Thursday, January 16, 1777. A certain person passed great encomiums, and sounded my praise as a preacher to my face. But this is a dangerous practice; for it is easier for a preacher to think too much of his gifts than too little. St. Paul, describing the true Israelite, saith: "Whose praise is not of men, but of God."

Heavy Temptations.

Thursday, 20. The weather was exceedingly severe, and I had twenty-five miles to ride, which almost benumbed both body and soul. But my mind was so exercised by the way, with various and heavy temptations, and such a deep sense of my demerit and unprofitableness, that I thought my suffering was much less than my desert. Satan frequently assaults me on every side, and with every species of temptations. Surely it is through great tribulation we must enter into the kingdom of God. The righteous have great cause to rejoice that a rest remaineth for them.

A Troublesome Little Irishman.

Lord's Day, 23. After riding twenty miles to I. W.'s I spoke from these words: "How long halt ye between two opinions?" Many of the people displayed, by their looks, the carelessness of their hearts; but a few from among them have been brought to Christ, and some more are coming. On *Tuesday* we had some severe weather, with a cold and dirty house, but my soul was much blessed in my little sufferings. On *Wednesday* I was kindly entertained by old Mr. M. and his wife, though a troublesome little Irishman seemed much inclined to altercation. But as Solomon says, "A soft answer turneth away wrath," so by coolness and meekness the ferocity of his temper was in a great degree subdued.

A Deistical Audience at Annapolis.

Lord's Day, March 2. Though the weather was very cold, several members of the convention attended to hear the word at the Widow D.'s; and I afterward preached in the play-house, now converted

into a church. In the beginning of the ensuing week I was requested to preach in the assembly-room, but some of the members opposed it ; so I returned to the play-house, and found my ideas contracted while preaching to a deistical audience from Rom. viii, 7, 8. Lord, if thou hast called me to preach to these souls, grant me divine assistance ! But how difficult it is to declare the plain truth to ungodly and sensual men in such a manner as not to be dismayed at their countenance ! Our sufficiency is of God.

Asbury Suffering from Natural Timidity.

Friday, 14. My natural timidity depressed my mind at the thought of preaching in Annapolis, where many people openly deny the Holy Scriptures, as well as the power of inward religion. But the Lord inspired me with a degree of evangelical courage ; and I felt a determination to adhere to the truth, and follow Jesus Christ, if it should be even to prison or to death.

Private Prayer—Seven Times a Day.

Saturday, 22. As sure as we draw nigh to God in sincerity, he will draw nigh to us. I have given myself to private prayer seven times a day, and found my heart much drawn out in behalf of the preachers, the societies, especially the new places, and my aged parents. And while thus exercised, my soul has been both quickened and purified. Let the glory be given to God ! But alas ! after all, my heart is not so filled with generous gratitude as it should be !

“ Eternal are thy mercies, Lord ;
Eternal truth attends thy word ;
Thy praise shall sound from shore to shore,
Till suns shall rise and set no more.”

A Higher Rule.

Thursday, 27. I have been variously exercised with the carelessness of the people, and the troubles of the times, though my soul has had intimate access to God. I received a letter from Brother S., intimating that, according to rule, the time was drawing near for us to return. But St. Paul's rule is, that our spiritual children should be in our hearts, to live and die with them, (2 Cor. vii, 3.) Then, doubtless, we should be willing to suffer affliction with them. May the Lord give me wisdom sufficient to direct me in this and every intricate case!

Temptation—Prayer.

Saturday, 5. Much temptation has urged me to much prayer, so that I have lately retired as often as ten or twelve times a day to call upon my God. When the tempter finds that his violent assaults only drive us nearer to God, perhaps he will not be so maliciously officious.

An Attempt to Shoot Asbury.

Monday, 14. This was a day of rest to my fatigued frame, and of consolation to my immortal part. On *Tuesday* there was great decency in the congregation at Annapolis, though Satan, by his emissaries, had raised an opposition. But Israel's God is above them all.

Wednesday, 16. God was with us, and the people were happy at Mr. M.'s. On my way I called and dined with Mr. R., who gave great attention to my explanatory and pointed conversation on the new birth. Riding after preaching to R. P.'s, my chaise was shot

through, but the Lord preserved my person. The war is now at such a height that they are pressing men for the sea service.

Satan's Attacks Repulsed.

Monday, 21. My heart was comforted in the company of an old friend, but on *Tuesday* Satan raged against my soul as if he would immediately destroy it; but my divine Protector is too strong for him. The Lord visited and blessed my soul in the evening while I was describing the faithful and wise servant.

Wednesday, 23. I found myself very unwell on my going to T. W.'s, but my spirit was at liberty in preaching. Though still unwell I rode twenty miles to I. W.'s on *Thursday*, and was blessed with a tranquil mind by the way. Satan cast several infernal darts at my soul, but I was enabled to repel them by the shield of faith and the power of prayer.

Conference at Deer Creek.

Monday, 12. Set out for our yearly conference, and having preached at Mr. P.'s, by the way, came safe to Mr. G.'s, and was glad to see the preachers who were there. We had some weighty conversation on different points, and among other things it was asked whether we could give our consent that Mr. R. should baptize, as there appeared to be a present necessity. But it was objected that this would be a breach of our discipline, and it was not probable that things would continue long in such a disordered state. The next day, with great harmony and joint consent, we drew a rough draught for stationing the preachers

the ensuing year. And on *Friday* we conversed on the propriety of signing certificates avouching good conduct for such of the preachers as chose to go to Europe. But I could not see the propriety of it at this time. We also conversed on such rules as might be proper for the regulation of the preachers who abide on the continent. And it was judged necessary that a committee should be appointed to superintend the whole. And on *Monday* we rode together to attend the conference at Deer Creek.

So greatly has the Lord increased the number of traveling preachers within these few years, that we have now twenty-seven who attend the circuits, and twenty of them were present at this conference. Both our public and private business was conducted with great harmony, peace, and love. Our brethren who intend to return to Europe have agreed to stay till the way is quite open. I preached on the charge which our Lord gave his apostles: "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves." Our conference ended with love-feast and watch-night. But when the time of parting came, many wept as if they had lost their first-born sons. They appeared to be in the deepest distress, thinking, as I suppose, they should not see the faces of the English preachers any more. This was such a parting as I never saw before. Our conference has been a great time—a season of uncommon affection. And we must acknowledge that God has directed, owned, and blessed us in the work. A certificate, as mentioned above, had been acceded to and signed in the conference.

"What Have I Done?"

Friday, 27. I went to Mr. H.'s, and intended to preach in Annapolis, but there was no house open for me. The next day two of the members of the assembly promised to use their influence in procuring me a house to preach in, but expected they could not succeed. Alas! what have I done? Whose ox or ass have I taken, or whom have I defrauded? But the Lord permits it to be so, therefore I peaceably submit, and will not fear the face of man, nor even a prison, while employed in the cause of God and of truth. However, contrary to my expectation, I preached in the church, though the congregation was small, and the soldiers made a great noise before the door. I then concluded to preach the next time in the commons. But the rain which fell the next day prevented me, and there were but few people at Mrs. D.'s.

Mr. Rankin's Last Sermon in America.

Monday, 21. Heard Mr. Rankin preach his last sermon. My mind was a little dejected, and I now felt some desire to return to England, but was willing to commit the matter to the Lord. There was a large congregation, and some prospect of good things at Mr. S.'s, where I told the people, from the authority of Jesus Christ, "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish." Luke xiii, 3.

Asbury on Predestination.

Friday, 25. We kept our general fast as appointed by conference, and my soul was enabled to cast all its little cares, both spiritual and temporal, on Him that careth for me. May the Lord direct me how to

act so as to keep myself always in the love of God ! I have lately been reading an account of Theodosius and his sons, with several of the ancient Fathers, which also communicates much information relative to the Eastern and Western Empires for about three hundred years—so long were idolatry and Arianism kept out of the Church of Christ. And while Chrysostom was bishop an Arian church was burned at Constantinople. But since that time, absolute, unconditional predestination has made its way into the Church, which nullifies all laws, human and divine ; for if men cannot do otherwise than they do, why should any law inflict punishment for their crimes ? Must quadrupeds be punished because they do not fly ? How easily might men, believing this doctrine, ascribe their envy, malice, and most cruel inclinations to the effect of Divine predestination, and conclude that their most malignant dispositions were eternally decreed, and, therefore, not to be conquered but complied with, though they should produce the most pernicious and destructive consequences in human society !

Visits a Prisoner under Sentence of Death.

Lord's Day, 27. After explaining the parable of the sower at Mrs. D.'s, I preached at Annapolis to a large company—some serious, and some gay and trifling—on these compassionate words of Christ, "How often would I have gathered thy children together, and ye would not !"

Monday, 28. As the rain prevented my attending the appointment, I visited the jail, and found an unhappy mortal under sentence of death, who was very ignorant, but so susceptible of religious

advice that he was melted into tears and shook like a leaf.

Panting after Holiness.

Friday, August 1. The Lord gave me spiritual peace, but my soul was on stretch for a greater degree of holiness, and deeper communion with God.

“I pant to feel thy sway,
And only thee to’ obey;
Thee my spirit gasps to meet;
This my one, my ceaseless prayer—
Make, O make my heart thy seat!
O set up thy kingdom there!”

“Poor Rich Sinners.”

Lord’s Day, 3. In the forenoon the poor rich sinners were very attentive in the school-house on Elk Ridge, and it is *possible* the Lord may raise a people among them to fear and love him. But at Mr. R.’s, in the afternoon, the congregation was very dull, though I spoke strong words from the Almighty’s awful declaration concerning the ungodly: “These shall go away into everlasting punishment.”

A Peaceful and Passive Spirit.

Wednesday, 13, was spent at Mr. G.’s, and after some conversation I found Brother S. was not to go with me, because Mr. R. did not choose to spend a quarter in Baltimore circuit. Indeed, he has not taken a regular circuit since we have been in America; so I was obliged to go into a new circuit with a young exhorter who had deserted me once before. But all contentions wound my spirit, so I passively submitted.

An Awful Storm—Reflections.

Monday, 25. My soul confided in God, but was sweetly distressed with an ardent desire for more complete holiness. I have lately read Walker's Sermons with much pleasure. We had an awful storm this evening at nine o'clock. The thunder, lightning, and sweeping winds were all in commotion. With reverence, I turned my mind on the dread majesty and power of God, who, by the elements in which we live, contends with man. Such a scene as this was enough to strike the boldest sinner with terror, and make him even shudder at a wicked thought. And how dare wicked men sin at any time before a God so terrible? Is he less present at one time than another? No, verily! But they desire not the knowledge of God. Their surprise must be great beyond all expression when, disembodied, they suddenly find themselves, by woful experience, acquainted with nothing pertaining to their offended God but his inexorable justice and vengeful power, of which the awful scenes we now behold in the contending elements are but a faint resemblance. Then how much better is it to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season!

Asbury will Live and Die a Methodist.

Tuesday, 26. T. O. informed me that they had made choice of me to preach in the Garrettson Church. But I shall do nothing that will separate me from my brethren. I hope to live and die a Methodist.

Commotions Without—Peace Within.

Monday, 13. Commotions and troubles surrounded me without, but the peace of God filled my soul within. We seemed to be in a strait; but my heart trusted in the Lord. These distressing times have lately induced many people to pay a more diligent attention to the things of God. So I have hopes that these temporal troubles will prepare the way for spiritual blessings.

“Calm on Tumult’s Wheels I Sit.”

Wednesday, 5. After riding thirty-seven miles I came to Baltimore, but was very weary, though my mind was calmly stayed on God.

Friday, 7. Went to Mr. G.’s, and on Saturday preached on 3 John 4: “I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.”

Lord’s Day, 9. After preaching with freedom of spirit and speech at the Forks, I returned to Mr. G.’s and declared, “Ye are the salt of the earth.” My soul has been kept by the grace of God, and

“Calm on tumult’s wheels I sit.”

Divine Contentment.

Wednesday, 19. Rode to Risterstown, and found that God was my sufficient portion, and my exceeding great reward. I wanted nothing pertaining to this world more than I possessed; neither clothing, nor money, nor food. Blessed be God for his parental love and tender care toward me!

“Nothing on earth I call my own :
A stranger, to the world unknown,
I all their goods despise ;
I trample on their whole delight,
And seek a country out of sight,
A country in the skies.”

Asbury on the Eastern Shore.

Wednesday, 26. I came to Mr. G.'s, on my way to the Eastern Shore. On *Saturday* I intended to have crossed the bay, but was prevented by the weather. My soul has lately felt much of the power of God, and I have been enabled to trust him with myself and all my concerns.

Monday, December 1. I left Mr. G.'s, and after crossing the bay, came in safety, at night, to Mr. H.'s, having been absent more than four years, though I was the first of our preachers who carried the Gospel into this neighborhood. My heart was thankful to God for his providential and gracious preservation of me. The next day I went to the island, and preached with some warmth, and then returned. The two following days we had profitable times, both in preaching and class-meetings.

A Happy Christmas Season.

Thursday, January 1, 1778. Though the weather has been very cold for several days, I have had to ride, sometimes a considerable distance, and preach every day. This day I preached a funeral sermon on the death of a daughter of her who was buried last Friday. My text was, “This year thou shalt die.” Death, like a cruel conqueror, spareth none on whom

he seizeth, but sendeth them to the shades of eternity, without respect to age or condition !

Friday, 2. Experienced much of the love of Jesus Christ shed abroad in my heart ; and, through his meritorious mediation, found a delightful nearness to God. Indeed I have found great happiness during this Christmas season, and have endeavored to redeem my time by diligent industry. May the Lord keep me steadfast and faithful to the end, and bless me with an abiding witness that I love him with all my heart !

Reading Josephus—A Reflection.

Lord's Day, 11. By reason of the snow the congregations were small, but the Lord gave us his blessing. My soul has possessed a holy calm ; and I have found the Lord constantly with me, in a greater or less degree. I have just finished the last volume of Whiston's Josephus, and am surprised that, at the age of seventy, Mr. Whiston should spend so much of his time in such a dry, chronological work. How much better was Mr. Baxter employed, when he thought himself near to eternity, meditating and writing on the Saints' Everlasting Rest.

Dark Prospects—Strong Confidence.

Wednesday, 28. My soul had peace, and enjoyed sweet rest in God, after all my trials. May I ever glorify him, even in the fires ! Dark prospects, in temporal matters, present themselves to my view. But "the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous ;" and he hath promised to be "a wall of fire round about" his Church, "and the glory in the midst of her." I preached a funeral sermon at the meeting-

house on 1 Cor. xv, 20: "But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept." There were many people on this solemn occasion, and my heart was enlarged toward them.

Lord's Day, February 1. We had a good time at Frederick in the forenoon, and I found myself at liberty, in the afternoon, at Mr. H.'s. My heart feels nothing contrary to love and purity, and the effect thereof is abundant peace. Troubles stare me in the face; but I have confidence toward God, and without perplexing myself with anxious care, will leave all events to him.

Asbury's Estimate of Wesley's Works.

Thursday, 5. Returned to T. W.'s, with a cold in my head and an inflammation in my throat, which detained me till the *Lord's Day*. But my time was chiefly spent in prayer and reading Flavell's and Hartley's works; though no book is equal to the Bible. I have also received much instruction and great blessings of late in reading Mr. Wesley's Works. There is a certain spirituality in his works which I can find in no other human compositions. And a man who has any taste for true piety can scarce read a few pages in the writings of that great divine without imbibing a greater relish for the pure and simple religion of Jesus Christ, which is therein so scripturally and rationally explained and defended.

Del.]

Under Heaviness of Mind—Cause.

Friday, 13. I was under some heaviness of mind. But it was no wonder: three thousand miles from home—my friends have left me—I am considered by

some as an enemy of the country—every day liable to be seized by violence, and abused. However, all this is but a trifle to suffer for Christ and the salvation of souls. Lord, stand by me!

Lord's Day, 15. My temptations were very heavy, and my ideas were greatly contracted in preaching, neither was my soul happy as at many other times. It requires great resignation for a man to be willing to be laid aside as a broken instrument. But,

“ In all my temptations
He keeps me, to prove
His utmost salvation—
His fullness of love.”

How Employed at Thomas White's.

Monday, 16. I applied myself to the Greek and Latin Testament; but this is not to me like preaching the Gospel. However, when a man cannot do what he would, he must do what he can.

Wednesday, 18. To make the best of my time in this partial confinement, I have attended closely to my studies, spent some time in instructing the children, and intend to lecture frequently in the family. This day I received information that Brother W. was cast in prison at Annapolis.

Asbury Changes his Place of Retirement.

Thursday, April 2. This night we had a scene of trouble in the family. My friend Mr. T. W. was taken away, and his wife and family left in great distress of mind. The next day I sought the interposition of God by fasting and prayer.

Saturday, 4. This was a day of much Divine power and love to my soul. I was left alone, and spent

part of every hour in prayer ; and Christ was near and very precious. The next day I preached with great solemnity at E. W.'s on 2 Cor. vi, 20 ; and on *Monday* found freedom to move. After riding about fifteen miles, I accidentally stopped at a house where a corpse was going to be buried, and had an opportunity of addressing a number of immortal souls. I then rode on through a lonesome, devious road, like Abraham, not knowing whither I went ; but, weary and unwell, I found a shelter late at night, and there I intended to rest till Providence should direct my way. This is something like the faithful saints of old times, mentioned Heb. xi, 37, 38 : " They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins ; being destitute, afflicted, tormented ; of whom the world was not worthy : they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth." Though it must be acknowledged their trials far exceeded.

Tuesday, 7. My soul was kept in peace, and I spent much of my time in reading the Bible and the Greek Testament. Surely God will stand by and deliver me ! I have none other on whom I can depend. And he knows with what intention and for what purpose I came into this distant and strange land, and what little I have suffered for this cause. At night a report was spread which inclined me to think it would be most prudent for me to move the next day. Accordingly I set out after dinner, and lay in a swamp till about sunset ; but was then kindly taken in by a friend. My soul has been greatly humbled and blessed under these difficulties, and I thought myself like some of the old prophets, who were concealed in times of public distress.

Cause of Concealment Stated.

The reason of this retirement was as follows. From *March* 10, 1778, on conscientious principles I was a non-juror, and could not preach in the State of Maryland, and therefore withdrew to the Delaware State, where the clergy were not required to take the State oath; though, with a clear conscience, I could have taken the oath of the Delaware State had it been required, and would have done it had I not been prevented by a tender fear of hurting the scrupulous consciences of others. Saint Paul saith, "When ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ." 1 Cor. viii, 12.

Asbury Returns to his First Asylum.

Wednesday, 29. Ventured to leave my asylum, and under the special providence of God came safe to my old abode, where I purpose spending these perilous days in retirement, devotion, and study. I want for nothing but more holiness, and wonder at the love and care of Almighty God toward such a dead dog as I am. My spirit was greatly comforted by Psalm cvi, 10: "He saved them from the hand of him that hated them, and redeemed them from the hand of the enemy."

His Mind "Twisted and Tortured."

Lord's Day, 3. My mind was strangely twisted and tortured, not knowing what to do. It seems I know not how to fight, nor how to fly; but I am persuaded there will be a speedy change in the wheel of Providence, either prosperous or adverse. Others are

now free, but I am bound. Reading at present no other books on the Lord's days, I have lately read the Revelation, with Mr. Wesley's Notes, three times through.

Monday, 4. Satan hath a desire to destroy, or at least to disturb my soul. But I pray mightily to God against him. O that he may rebuke the tempter, and make a way for my escape!

On *Wednesday* my temptations were so violent that it seemed as if all the infernal powers were combined to attack my soul. Like Elijah, when persecuted by Jezebel, I was ready to request for myself that I might die. However, about noon the storm abated, and my soul was calm. I had felt as though I could neither pray nor read; but the Lord blessed my troubled soul while endeavoring to pray with Brother E. W. My temptations have been such as I never experienced before in the course of my life. But God will help me, and I shall yet praise him!

"The Mighty Debt of Praise."

Monday, 11. My mind was deeply exercised, not knowing what to do. If the Lord delivers me, I shall be bound to praise him; if I had a thousand hearts and tongues, and a million of years to live, all would be insufficient for paying the mighty debt of praise. Time, and language, and numbers all fail in point of praise and adoration for the unmerited mercies of a gracious God.

Two of the Preachers Apprehended.

Saturday, 16. It will be observed that two of our preachers have been apprehended, rather than do

violence to conscience ; and the men by whom they were both taken were dangerously wounded within a few weeks after they had laid hands upon them. I am now resigned to my confinement, and am persuaded that God, by his providence, will show me when and which way to go.

Asbury Preaches in the Neighborhood of his Retreat.

Lord's Day, 7. Being Whit Sunday, I went to the barn, weak as I was, and preached on Rom. viii, 7-9. My heart was enlarged, and the people were greatly melted and alarmed ; and many of them felt the gracious drawings of the Father. But, alas ! I am as gold in the furnace ! though I must not think it strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try me, as though some strange thing had happened unto me. In my patience may I possess my soul ; and the Lord, in his own time, will deliver me. Surely, when this mortal shall put on immortality, then shall there be an eternal day without a cloud, ease without pain, and joy without any mixture of sorrow ! I preached again in the afternoon, and found great liberty in my spirit. Peradventure, the Lord will, in this barren place, raise up a seed to serve him.

Delaware to Become the Garden of the Lord.

Saturday, 13. For a few days past my mind has been variously agitated at certain times by that restless, fallen spirit, who so often attempts to break my peace ; but my soul has been kept by the same omnipotent, gracious arm which has been so frequently displayed in my behalf. I went to R. W.'s, where all our souls were under the softening influence of

Divine grace in the class-meeting. With animation of spirit I preached twice on the *Lord's Day* to large congregations. As the Gospel of Jesus Christ meets with indulgence in this free State, I entertain a hope that it will prove a general blessing to the inhabitants thereof, and that Delaware will become as the garden of the Lord, filled with plants of his own planting.

An Improvised Circuit.

Saturday, 18. I laid a plan for myself to travel and preach nine days in two weeks. This was one step toward my former regularity in what appears to me as my duty, my element, and my delight. On the *Lord's Day* I met a class in the morning, and then preached twice, with earnestness and affection, to large, attentive, and serious congregations. My spirit was afterward refreshed in the company of some of my old friends.

Asbury No Dreamer.

Lord's Day, 9. Having been informed that some of the people were in danger of being led aside by impressions and dreams, and a weak-headed man having already drawn off a few simple souls, I thought it expedient to urge upon them Isaiah viii, 20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them." While in theory, experience, and practice, we keep close to the written word of God, we are safe. And if an angel from heaven preach any other gospel, saith St. Paul, "Let him be accursed." Gal. i, 8.

Dreams may arise from various causes, and even

diabolical impressions may sometimes resemble those made by the Spirit of God. And it is evident that all such impressions as have a tendency to effect division, to interrupt the peace of the Church, to draw us off from any revealed duty, or to make us contented in a lukewarm and careless state, cannot come from God, because they are contrary to the revealed dictates of the Holy Spirit—and the Spirit of truth cannot contradict itself. Therefore all impressions, dreams, visions, etc., should be brought to the standard of the Holy Scriptures, and if they do not perfectly correspond therewith they should be rejected.

A Firm Trust amid the Gloom and Darkness.

Tuesday, 15. This was a day of peculiar temptations. My trials were such as I do not remember to have experienced before, and for some time it seemed as if I scarcely knew whether to fight or fly. My usefulness appeared to be cut off; I saw myself pent up in a corner, my body in a manner worn out, my English brethren gone, so that I had no one to consult, and every surrounding object and circumstance wore a gloomy aspect. Lord, must I thus pine away, and quench the light of Israel? No; though he slay me, yet will I trust him.

"Sweet Gales of God's Love."

Thursday, 24. My frame has been indisposed all this week, so that I am almost a stranger to the enjoyment of health for any length of time. I have been reading the life of Mr.—, but think it quite too pompous. The praise bestowed on him is too much to bestow on mortal dust. What is man, that such

flowers should be strewed on his grave? May I ever be contented with the honor which cometh from God only! My soul at present is filled with his Holy Spirit; I have a glorious prospect of a boundless ocean of love, and immense degrees of holiness opening to my view, and now renew my covenant with the Lord, that I may glorify him with my body and spirit, which are his. Seven times a day do I bow my knees, to utter my complaints before him, and to implore an increase of his grace. But after all, and in the midst of all, I can feelingly say, I am an unprofitable servant. But though unworthy, utterly unworthy, I am blessed with the sweet gales of God's love. Blessed breezes! how they cheer and refresh my drooping soul! What the Lord has for me to do, I know not; but wait to know, and gladly to obey every dictate of his unerring pleasure.

Friday, 25. My soul was still happy in my God, and I am powerfully persuaded that I shall yet live to be more useful than ever in the Church of Christ.

Weighty Words on Church Discipline.

Friday, 30. I put the society in some order at L.'s, turning out the disorderly members, which always are a weight and a curse to any religious community. St. Paul said to the Corinthians, (though alluding to only one disorderly person among them,) "Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?" 1 Cor. v, 6. "And the anger of the Lord was kindled against Israel," for the covetousness of Achan, who then dwelt among them. Josh. vii, 1. And who can tell how often the Lord is displeased with his Church for the wickedness of some of its members? No

doubt but this frequently checks the spiritual progress of the righteous, especially if ungodly members are known and not dealt with according to the Gospel.

Asbury Restless in his Limited Work.

Monday, 9. I rode to T. W.'s, and cannot help esteeming the house as my temporary home, though I met with more spiritual trials than in constant traveling. Lord, point out my way, and show what thou wouldst have me to do!

Saturday, 14. I have spent this week in reading and private exercises, and have been much indisposed in my body. But, glory to God! I have been favored with some access to his gracious presence, and felt strong desires to be abased as in the dust before him.

Lord's Day, 15. This morning I felt very unwell, but ventured to set out for my appointment twenty miles off, and found both my body and mind strengthened far beyond my expectation.

Monday, 16. I preached to a few poor people at W. R.'s, and then returned to my temporary home in a much better state of health than when I went out. Thus is my life at present checkered: I come home and grow sick, then go out and grow better, and return to meet affliction again. So the Lord is pleased to deal with me, to keep my spirit down. Father of mercies, let thy will be done! I am thine, and submit to be dealt with according to thy pleasure.

A Stupefying and Dangerous Sentiment.

Lord's Day, 22. Some souls were affected while I was preaching on 1 Cor. vi, 19, 20, and in a class-

meeting the members of society were greatly quickened. But it is matter of lamentation to me that I do not glorify God more perfectly. On *Monday* I read D.'s paraphrase, and admire his spirit, sense, and ingenuity ; though I disagree with him in respect to the unconditional perseverance of saints. That this doctrine has a pernicious influence on the conduct of many is beyond all doubt. And a man must live above his principles, to be diligent and faithful, under the persuasion of such a stupefying and dangerous sentiment.

Asbury Must Work for the Sake of Example.

Tuesday, 15. The Lord blessed me with sweet peace, though too much company interrupted my private meditations and study. It seems as if I must commit myself to Divine Providence, and go forth to declare the glad tidings of salvation to the children of men, lest others should follow my example of a partial silence without sufficient cause.

Hervey and Fletcher.

Friday, 25. This being the day for commemorating the Saviour's birth, I preached at E. W.'s with much inward freedom, though the audience were not greatly moved.

I have begun to read, for the first time, Mr. Hervey's celebrated Dialogues, and cannot but observe his labored endeavors to establish the doctrine of "the imputed righteousness of Christ." He seems to make it equal at least to the two grand commands of our Lord. And why not supersede them? But Providence has brought forth that eminent man, Mr.

John Fletcher, to manage this subject, whose language appears to be more natural and less studied than Mr. Hervey's, and yet in no respect inferior; and his arguments are incontestable, carrying their own conviction with them. But of this let the public judge.

Pa.] Asbury's Field of Labor Expanding.

Saturday, January 2, 1779. I reached my circuit in Kent, and preached on my favorite subject: "This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners;" and there appeared to be some meltings of heart among the people.

Upon mature reflection, I do not repent my late voluntary retirement in the State of Delaware. Notwithstanding all my afflictions and fears, I entertain a hope that, after the people have been tried and humbled by their present calamities, the Lord will yet visit and bless them with spiritual light, purity, and consolation. Already I am informed that there is a gracious work going on in Sussex in Delaware, and in Accomac and Northampton counties in Virginia.

The Two Extremes.

Tuesday, 26. I spent much of my time in reading the third volume of Mr. Hervey's Dialogues. I like his philosophy better than his divinity. However, if he is in error by leaning too much to imputed righteousness, and in danger of superseding our evangelical works of righteousness, some are also in danger of setting up self-righteousness, and, at least, of a partial neglect of an entire dependence on Jesus

Christ. Our duty and salvation lie between these extremes. We should so work as if we were to be saved by the proper merit of our works ; and so rely on Jesus Christ, to be saved by his merits and the divine assistance of his Holy Spirit, as if we did no works, nor attempted any thing which God hath commanded. This is evidently the Gospel plan of man's salvation : St. Paul says in one place, " By grace are ye saved, through faith ; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God." In another place the same apostle saith, " Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling." But some, who see the danger of seeking to be justified by the deeds of the law, turn all their attention to those passages of Scripture which ascribe our salvation to the grace of God ; and to avoid the rock which they discover on the right hand, they strike against that which is equally dangerous on the left, by exclaiming against all conditions and doings on the part of man, and so make void the law through faith—as if a beggar could not cross the street, and open his hand (at the request of his benefactor) to receive his bounty, without a meritorious claim to what he is about to receive. What God hath joined together let no man put asunder. And he having joined salvation by grace, with repentance, prayer, faith, self-denial, love, and obedience, whoever putteth them asunder will do it at his peril. But it is likewise true that others who see the danger of this, in order, as they imagine, to steer clear of it, go about to establish their own righteousness ; and although they profess to ascribe the merit of their salvation to Jesus Christ, yet think they cannot fail of eternal life because they have

wrought many good deeds of piety toward God, and of justice and mercy toward man ; and they would think it incompatible with Divine justice to sentence them to eternal punishment for what they call the foibles of human nature, after having lived so moral and upright a life. Happy the man who so studies the Holy Scriptures, his own heart, and the plan of salvation, and daily prays with such earnest sincerity to Almighty God, as to see that neither faith without works, nor works without that faith which justifies the ungodly, will suffice in the awful day of universal retribution !

Almost a Prophecy.

Thursday, 28. We had tidings of great troubles in the south as well as the north. The gathering cloud seemed to lower and threaten with great severity. O my God ! I am thine ; and all the faithful are thine. Mercifully interpose for the deliverance of our land, and for the eternal salvation of all that put their trust in thee ! At present my way is measurably hedged in by Providence ; but the time may come when I shall be useful in the Church of Christ. This would afford me more satisfaction than all the riches of the East, with all the pomp and grandeur of empires, and all the pleasures that can gratify both the imagination and the flesh.

A Sensitive Conscience.

Monday, February 1. My conscience smote me severely for speaking an idle word in company. O how frail is man ! It is very difficult for me to check my rapid flow of spirits when in company with

my friends. The tongue is an unruly member ; and St. James spoke a sacred truth when he said, " If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able to bridle the whole body." He that can on all occasions govern his tongue, will have power sufficient to keep his whole body in religious subjection.

A Strong Impression.

Monday, March 1. I have of late, for the most part, had liberty in preaching, and the Spirit of the Lord has been with me : and, from my various and peculiar exercises, I am strongly impressed with a persuasion that the Lord is preparing me for future services. But, alas ! what cause for shame, on account of my great unfaithfulness ! This present life may be well compared to a tempestuous ocean : sometimes the fair wind of prosperity blows a fresh gale ; at other times the cross-wind of adversity rages and threatens a hurricane. How difficult it is, in the midst of such opposing diversity, to pay proper attention to the Divine compass, and still pursue the right course !

Trusting in Past Experience.

Thursday, 25. It appears to me very difficult to keep professors from placing too much confidence in past experience, and to keep them pressing after grace with as much assiduity as at first. How prone is man to start from God, and to embrace every excuse for the neglect of that best of all duties—living in close communion with the Father of spirits ! Though I now pray not less than ten times a day, yet I find I have need to pray without ceasing.

Wandering Thoughts in Prayer.

Lord's Day, 28. My mind was much drawn out in prayer, and I believe I have not spent more time in this exercise for many years past, if ever, than I do now. But my mind has been much perplexed about wandering thoughts in prayer, though Mr. Wesley's deep and judicious discourse on that subject has afforded me no small satisfaction. He hath both shown the causes of those thoughts, which are not sinful, and incontestably proves that they contract no guilt. Yet a devout and tender mind must be grieved to find any kind of temptation in that sublime exercise wherein the whole soul desires to be employed.

Conference for the Northern Stations.

Wednesday, March 28. Our conference for the northern stations began at Thomas White's. All our preachers on these stations were present and united. We had much prayer, love, and harmony, and we all agreed to walk by the same rule, and to mind the same thing. As we had great reason to fear that our brethren to the southward were in danger of separating from us, we wrote them a soft, healing epistle. On these northern stations we have now about seventeen traveling preachers. We appointed our next conference to be held in Baltimore town, the last Tuesday in April next.

Asbury Seeks to Prevent a Separation in the South.

Monday, May 3. Yesterday we had some melting under the word at the house of E. White, and to-day I wrote to John Dickins, Philip Gatch, Edward Drom-

goole, and William Glendenning, urging them, if possible, to prevent a separation among the preachers in the south—that is, Virginia and North Carolina. And I entertain great hopes that the breach will be healed; if not, the consequences may be bad. I am now reading Edwards on the Affections. Excepting the small vein of Calvinism which runs through this book, it is a very good treatise, and worthy the serious attention of young professors. I have now been about thirteen years employed in the work of God as a traveling minister, and, upon a review, I have cause to be ashamed, but, at the same time, great reason to be thankful that I have not yet grown weary, and humbly hope I never shall, while able to travel at all.

“Why Should we Lose One Hour?”

Tuesday, 4. I still find it pleasant and profitable to be employed in my Master’s service both in public and private. My conscience smote me severely for lying in bed till six o’clock this morning, no indisposition of body being the cause. O! why should we lose one hour when time is so short and precious, and so many things to be learned and taught!

Preaching for Souls, not for Silver.

Wednesday, 23. Preached at a new place in a meadow to about one hundred people, who were wild enough; after preaching, had to ride twelve miles for my dinner. In this our labor we have to encounter hunger, heat, and many restless nights with mosquitoes, unwholesome provisions, and bad water. But all this is for souls; were it for silver, I should require a great sum. But the Lord is not unrighteous to forget our labor of love, and our reward is with him.

"A Lame Separation."

Wednesday, 30. I received the minutes of the Virginia Conference, by which I learn the preachers there have been effecting a lame separation from the Episcopal Church, that will last about one year. I pity them. Satan has a desire to have us, that he may sift us like wheat.

The Doctor's Means Very Successful.

Tuesday, 6. I applied to Dr. Ridgely, who prescribed two blisters of great strength: the two following days I was very ill.

Friday, 9. I began to mend, and am persuaded that the doctor's means have been very successful, and feel myself under great obligations to him.

Reading, Praying, Preaching, and Sea-bathing Combined.

Thursday, 15. We rode to the sea-side, about forty miles from Shockley's. I read part of the Life of Mr. De Renty. We came in about two o'clock and found a kind reception. We prayed after dinner in the family and private; afternoon went down to the sea to bathe for my health; at night read a chapter and gave an exhortation. Brother Allfree and myself prayed; we rested well.

Friday, 16. Am kept in peace of soul, yesterday and this day; feel myself as in the presence of God, growing in health of body and soul.

Saturday, 17. I preached on 1 John i, 8, 9, to about fifty people, simple, but teachable. Some poor men in a boat came on shore who had been taken prisoners; were English and Scotch going to York. I called at their tent, read the third of Romans, lect-

ured to them. They seemed kind and humble; I pitied an old man, near seventy, from Devonshire. I went to bathe, called on the distressed people, prayed with them. This morning finished reading the book of Psalms, which has been my regular reading this week past; likewise the eleventh volume of Wesley's Works, and part of the lives of those men of God, Haliburton, De Renty, and Walsh—one of the Church of Scotland, another from the Church of Rome, the latter a Methodist preacher; but the work of God is one in all. To set aside a few particulars, how harmonious does the work of God appear in men of different nations and Churches! I have been in peace, but not so much given up to God. I was humbled and stirred up to be more heartily employed. When shall every thought, word, and action in me be holiness to the Lord?

Asbury a Bible Student.

Friday, 23. Arose, as I commonly do, before five o'clock in the morning to study the Bible. I find none like it, and find it of more consequence to a preacher to know his Bible well than all the languages or books in the world—for he is not to preach these, but the word of God. I preached at G. Bradley's, in the woods, to about two hundred people, on Acts xiii, 26. Had considerable freedom. In the evening, at G. Moore's, on Rev. xxi, 6–8. Great liberty; the serious people much affected.

An Old-fashioned Quarterly Meeting.

Sunday, August 1. Rainy. I rode to church and heard an excellent sermon on Luke xiv, 22. At

three o'clock I preached in the square at Dover; many came to hear. I spoke on Ezek. xxxiii, 30, very plain and pointed: how it was taken I know not. I am easy and clear in my own mind.

Monday, 2. Our quarterly meeting began. I was detained by rain, but came in about one o'clock. Brother Cox preached on Psal. xlvi, 12-14.

Tuesday, 3. In the morning the rain continues; all things look gloomy. We appointed to meet at nine if clear; if not, at twelve o'clock. About twelve it cleared away without such visible tokens as sometimes appear. We went to the arbor; it covers three or four hundred people. It is possible we had six or seven hundred people each day, from Sussex, Somerset, Queen Ann's, Caroline, Kent, Newcastle, and Philadelphia. I preached on Psalm cxxvi, 3-6, and was greatly led out; God was with us.

"People Will and Will Not."

Sunday Morning, 15. Read the law delivered by Moses, and our Lord's sermon on the mount; preached at nine o'clock at Boyer's, then went to the church at Dover, and preached in the woods at three o'clock on Acts xvii, 30. I was plain and faithful, but the people will and will not. Our own people do not keep so close to God as they ought; this injures the work.

Asbury an Early Riser.

Thursday, 26. Rode to Wells's and spoke close, but with little liberty, to a serious but not very lively people, on Matt. xi, 4-6. Brothers Wyatt and Allfree both spoke after me. This morning I ended the reading of my Bible through in about four months. It is hard work for me to find time for this, but all I

read and write I owe to early rising. If I were not to rise always by five, and sometimes at four o'clock, I should have no time only to eat my breakfast, pray in the family, and get ready for my journey—as I must travel every day.

He Prefers the Episcopal Mode of Ordination.

Friday, 10. I have been employed in writing letters to the preachers. Lord, help me to speak and write to thy glory, and the good of the people I have the charge of! I began reading Comber on Ordination. Much pomp was annexed to the clerical order, though plausible in its way. I believe the Episcopal mode of Ordination to be more proper than that of Presbyters; but I wish there were primitive qualifications in all who handle sacred things.

Brother Hartley Determined to Marry.

Tuesday, 14. I went to see Brother Hartley, under his confinement, who was in jail for preaching, and found him determined to marry. He thought it was his duty before God. I could only advise a delay till he was released from imprisonment. Persuaded him to give bail at court, if not released, as I thought he would have no trial. All that the opposers wanted, was to prevent his preaching in the county. We thought his imprisonment was illegal, as he had taken the oath in the Delaware State.

"The Devil will Let us Read if we Will not Pray."

Monday, 20. I read thirteen chapters in Revelation, which was part of what should have been read yesterday, but I had not time. I read also about one hun-

dred pages in Comber on the Consecrating Bishops ; it is very well if properly attended to. Read fifty pages in Salmon's Grammar. It is plain to me the devil will let us read always if we will not pray : but prayer is the sword of the preacher, the life of the Christian, the terror of hell, and the devil's plague.

Not to be Converted by Thunder and Lightning.

Friday, 24. Rode to Lewistown. Am ashamed before God, under a sense of what he has done for me, and how unfaithful and unfruitful I am in every thing. I rode thirty miles, and on my way called to hear Mr. T., an Episcopal minister. He took care to tell the people they were not to be converted by thunder and lightning, like enthusiasts, to know the time and place. In short, I could not tell what he would be at ; but he was legal to all intents and purposes. I went to Abraham Harris's : the people were met, and Brother Allfree preached ; afterward I delivered a discourse on Acts xiii, 26, to an attentive congregation, and found my mind at liberty.

A Curious Motive for Proclaiming a Fast.

Tuesday, 28. I preached to about fifty or sixty people on Acts xxvi, 18. I know not when I was more searching, though but little moving among the people. I was told that Mr. W. proclaimed a fast, to let the people know what the Methodists were, and told them we could not be sent and ordained of God—that we must be sent of the devil. I doubt not but souls will be brought to God here. I rode to Shockley's on *Wednesday*, and preached on Luke xiii, 24-26, to about fifty people ; had great life. The work

of God deepens here, though it is but low with some. I have rode about a hundred miles since this day week, and preached six times to not more than six hundred people.

The Work Deepens and Spreads.

Thursday, 7. I prayed frequently, and read the first epistle to the Corinthians. I am kept watchful, and have some holy breathings after God. I received a letter from Brother Ruff: he says the work deepens in the Jerseys. It spreads in this (Delaware) State, also in Talbot, in Maryland.

Difficulties of Supplying the Work.

Friday, 8. Brother M'Clure came over. We settled a plan for the next half year, in Maryland, Delaware, Pennsylvania, and Jersey. Our difficulties are great; we have not a sufficient number of proper preachers. Some who are gifted cannot go into all the States on account of the oaths; others are under bail, and cannot move far. I have not spent this day as I ought; perhaps not one in my whole life. I read eleven chapters in the second of Corinthians, in course. Brother Hartley being bailed from Talbot jail, after near three months' imprisonment, came to take Kent in my absence. He preached on: "Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed."

An Aged Man Deaf to Scripture and Reason.

Monday, 11. I rose at five o'clock, and returned to my study. I want nothing but devotion to God, and to employ each moment for him. This day I preached at John Cannon's, near the chapel, to about three

hundred people, on Acts xvii, 11. They did not understand much, and felt less. I had a smart contest with a man upward of seventy years of age, deaf to Scripture, sense, or reason, yet one that has been sorely afflicted ; but age, like the word, if it does not soften, hardens. I returned to White Brown's : a few met me ; I prayed and gave an exhortation. God was with us. These I call my children. I find my soul feels the good effects of prayer. O ! what can stand before faith and prayer ?

A Funeral Sermon.

Sunday, 24. Cloudy and rain. This day was appointed for Mrs. Jessop's funeral. There were about three hundred people ; we had the use of the barn. I spoke with great opening on Heb. ix, 27. Was much assisted in showing to my hearers, first, What it is to die ; second, The judgment, with the certain consequences of both ; third, The appointment for all men once to die ; and controverted the argument against being saved from sin, drawn from death—that it is not a punishment to the righteous ; that their constitutions being subject to decay, makes it necessary, and in imitation of Christ, to suffer as he did in death, without sin. I went home with D. Polk.

Quarterly Meeting in Edward White's Barn.

Monday, November 1. Our quarterly-meeting began in Edward White's barn. The three clergymen attended with great friendship. I preached on Isaiah lxvi, 6, 7, and had much liberty : there were about a thousand or twelve hundred people, and the

greater part were serious. Brother Garrettsen and Brother Ruff exhorted.

Tuesday, 2. I preached again on 1 Thessalonians ii, 13, with more power and application to the people. We held our love-feast in the morning ; preaching at twelve o'clock ; Brothers Hartley and M'Clure exhorted. There were as many people, or rather more, than yesterday ; the barn and the treading-floor filled. We had a close conversation with the clergy, who informed themselves of our rules, and were willing to give us all the assistance they could by word and deed.

Friday Asbury's Fast-day.

Friday, 5. Set apart for fasting and prayer. Though tempted at times, I shall not be overcome. I had rather die than sin against God. I read about one hundred octavo pages, then applied to the Bible for the exercises of the remaining part of the day. I began the reading of my Bible through again ; read a few chapters in Genesis, visited the sick in the neighborhood, but ate nothing till six o'clock at night ; had various struggles, but the grace of God is sufficient for me at all times. Glory be to Jesus !

His Apportionment of Time.

Wednesday, 17. I purpose to rise at four o'clock, as often as I can, and spend two hours in prayer and meditation, two hours in reading, and one in recreating and conversation ; and in the evening, to take my room at eight, pray and meditate an hour, and go to bed at nine o'clock : all this I purpose to do when not traveling ; but to rise at four o'clock every morning.

Prefers Death to a God-forsaken People.

Saturday, 27. Was kept in a calm after the devil had been tearing my soul like a lion ; but he hath left me for a season. I looked into Rutherford's Letters, and they were blessed to me : also looked into Doddridge's Rise and Progress of Religion, and that was also blessed to me. My soul is waiting on the Lord for full Christian perfection. I poured out my soul to the Lord for this, and for my brethren in all parts of the world, that the power of religion may continue with us as a people. I tremble to think of the cloud of the Divine presence departing from us. If this should be, I hope not to live to see it, and, with Mr. Wesley, desire that God may rather scatter the people to the ends of the earth. I had rather they should not be, than to be a dead society. Amen, says poor William Spencer. -

Brother Hartley Married.

Tuesday, 28. A stormy, rainy day. Went to Lewis's, but none came. I must spend the whole night in prayer, after the example of my Lord ; for temptation is to try me, perhaps for my good, as I have many things to lift me up. Brother Hartley is now married, and begins to care for his wife. I have spent but little time to-day in reading or writing. There is a prospect of a work of religion in this State if the preachers are faithful, but I fear none more than myself ; yet sure I am that I want to be the Lord's. The hard, cold weather is broke at last. People suffer much more in winter by cold, and in summer by heat, here than in England. I find the care of a wife begins to hum-

ble my young friend, and makes him very teachable. I have thought he always carried great sail ; but he will have ballast now.

Asbury's Estimate of Fletcher.

Thursday, January 13, 1780. Finished reading the First Check. The style and spirit in which Mr. Fletcher writes at once bespeak the scholar, the logician, and the divine.

Cromwell a Prodigy.

Tuesday, February 1. At nine o'clock we had a love-feast—a time of great tenderness. After some time Brother Cromwell spoke. His words went through me, as they have every time I have heard him. He is the only man I have heard in America with whose speaking I am never tired. I always admire his unaffected simplicity. He is a prodigy—a man that cannot write or read well, yet, according to what I have heard, he is much like the English John Brown, or the Irish John Smith, or Beveridge's Shepherd's Boy. I fear he will not stand or live long. The power of God attends him more or less in every place, and he hardly ever opens his mouth in vain. Some are generally cut to the heart, yet he himself is in the fire of temptation daily. Lord, keep him every moment ! I preached on 1 Thess. i, 5, and was much led out ; there were about five hundred people. This meeting will be attended with a great blessing ; rich and poor approved the doctrine.

Satan is a Liar, Christ is True.

Wednesday, 16. A bright, blessed morning, but I am in heaviness through manifold temptations, but

trust the Lord will keep me. Have read in the intervals of these two days twelve of Mr. Wesley's Sermons, and cannot read them without conviction and great instruction. God is with me: he is preparing me for great labors, and I hope yet to endure to the end; but must be more sanctified:

“Lord, hasten the hour, thy kingdom bring in,
And give me the power to live without sin.”

Keep me holy and constant in thy work, always industrious, that Satan may have no fair occasion to tempt. I lectured at Edward White's on John xiv, 19-21, and had great liberty, love, and life; and the people likewise. After all my trials, God blesses me. Satan is a liar, and Christ is true, and will never leave nor forsake me.

The Nicolites.

Sunday, 20. Was solemn in prayer. Spoke on James i, 22-24. I was assisted to be close, moving, and argumentative; but have in general hard labor. Here they are an unsettled people, and weak of understanding. Preached in the afternoon at the Widow Bready's, from James i, 8: “A doubled-minded man is unstable in his ways.” This text was pressed upon me to speak from while at Williams's, and I could not get over it. In the afternoon I found there was a cause; the Nicolites had been working upon several of our friends, and had shook them with their craft. These are a people who sprung from one Nicols, a visionary but I hope a good man; he held Quaker principles, but the Friends would not receive him. A certain James Harris is at present their

leader ; they clothe in white, take every thing from nature, and condemn all other societies that do not conform to the outward. If a man were to speak like an archangel ; if he sung, prayed, and wore a black or a colored coat, he would not be received by these people. They were almost asleep when the Methodists came, but now are awake and working with simple, awakened people. They love, like some other denominations, to fish in troubled water. They oppose family prayer as much as any sinners in the country ; and have much to say against our speakers. Profess what they will, there is nothing in names.

Lawyer Basset.

Sunday, 27. Spoke from Luke xi, 24-27. There were many people, and a good time. I showed how the devil is cast out, and how he returns ; then rode to Dover, and came in just as church was ended. I preached with great labor on Acts xxiv, 25. Some had eaten and drank more than enough, and were fit to go to sleep ; but the greater part were attentive. But O ! what a continual burden have I to come and preach here ! Went home with Lawyer Basset, a very conversant and affectionate man, who, from his own acknowledgments, appears to be sick of sin. His wife is under great distress ; a gloom of dejection sits upon her soul ; she prayeth much, and the enemy takes an advantage of her low state.

Freeborn Garrettson in Jail.

Thursday, 2. Heard of Mr. Peterkin's death ; he died last night. I came to his house, and went to Thomas White's. Find it is a fact that Brother Garrettson was put into jail last Sunday.

Warburton against Wesley and Whitefield.

Wednesday, 15. Brother Garrettson expects to come out of jail, by the favor of the Governor and Council of Maryland, in spite of his foes. So the Lord works for us. In Somerset they are using some of Bishop Warburton's Works against Mr. Wesley and Mr. Whitefield. I was much blessed in speaking at Spencer Hitche's on Titus iii, 2-8, to nearly two hundred serious people. Their prejudices wear off. It is to be observed, bad as these people were, they never persecuted us, as they have done at some other places. It cannot be for our being falsely reported to be tories, for in Somerset some of our greatest enemies are of that stamp.

Garrettson Released.

Friday, 17. Rose at five o'clock, prayed, and read awhile in an old author, who warmly attacks Popery in its capital errors, and in a strong, argumentative manner ; but it is full of Greek and Latin quotations. I rode to Johnstown, and from thence to William Law's ; met Freeborn Garrettson, who came out of jail by order of the Governor and Council of Maryland, who had sent to the Governor of Delaware to know if F. Garrettson were not a fugitive, and had received satisfactory information. Brother Garrettson preached on Matthew xxv, 10 : "And they that were ready went in with him to the marriage : and the door was closed."

One State too Small a Field for Asbury.

Wednesday, 29. Spent what time I had to spare in transcribing from Robert Walker a part of one of his

sermons to the preachers, and put it in my selections. I went to preach at Vincent Dorothy's, and spoke on Luke xxiv, 25, 26. Made a faithful discharge of truth to the people; they were attentive. I have been very much exercised in mind; the time for leaving this place draws nigh. Never was confinement in one State (Delaware) so trying to me. Lord, help me, I am weak! At night I went to Edward White's and gave an exhortation; was greatly troubled in mind.

Weather-bound.

Friday, 31. Waked before three o'clock, though I did not go to bed till after ten o'clock; was weather-bound, and read the second volume of Robertson's History of Scotland. The fate of unfortunate Mary Queen of Scots was affecting, and the admired Queen Elizabeth does not appear to advantage in the Scotch history. Prayed an hour this morning, and retired twice; used abstinence, though not so severe as I commonly use on Fridays.

"Report, say They, and We will Report It."

Monday, 3. Rose at five o'clock, spent some time in prayer, and my reading in course to the twenty-third Psalm. Preached at Thomas Jones's to about sixty careless, ignorant people; had very little comfort; spoke from 2 Tim. ii, 19. Read in the afternoon the Appendix to the History of Scotland. I am in heaviness through the deadness of the people, and the lies of the wicked about us—of which there appear to be enough; and it does seem now as if they could freely shed our blood. Lord, give me faith and patience! The present state of things is,

Report, say they, and we will report it ; nothing can come amiss ; all is fish that comes to the net. The wicked will say any thing ; yes, all manner of evil against us.

Asbury Prays for Good Weather.

Friday, 7. About three days ago I was moved to pray for good weather, when I saw what a condition we should be in. There is a change in the weather. I have peace this morning, and my heart is lifted up to God in thankfulness. An appearance of good weather : blessed be God ! though, when the weather was so uncomfortable, I was tempted to murmur. Lord, pardon me in this also ! Surely, what the Lord does is right, whether he does it against a single person or to a whole nation. Preached at Callaway's, on 2 Peter iii, 18, and was blessed. There were about fifty souls—an attentive, feeling people. After preaching, I rode thirty miles to the sea-side : there met Brother Garrettson, confident that God had, in a vision of the night, sanctified him.

"John's People Fishing."

Monday, 10. I have peace of soul, but too much talk like trifling ; the devil throws his firebrands, but grace is sufficient. I appointed Brother Wyatt to keep the ground against the Baptists, and to supply our places here instead of the traveling preachers that are going to conference ; for John's people intend to come fishing about when we are gone. We had a love-feast at eight o'clock ; many spoke in a very feeling manner. God was with us at eleven o'clock ; I preached on 2 Cor. iv, 12. Brother

Cromwell and Brother Garrettsen exhorted. The people were moved at what was said, though simple, and the same things he frequently says; but he is a man of God, and their spiritual father.

Asbury Sets Off for Baltimore.

Thursday, 20. Set off for Baltimore, and called at Mr. M'Gaw's; we parted in much affection. Called at Mr. Basset's, and had a warm conversation with Warner Mifflin. We prayed, and Mrs. Basset made a confession of finding peace. We rode to Solomon Symon's.

Md.]

The Act against Non-Jurors.

Monday, 24. We made a plan for the appointment of the preachers. Received three epistles from the Jerseys, soliciting three or four preachers, with good tidings of the work of God reviving in those parts. The petitioners I shall hear with respect. I am kept in peace. Praise the Lord, O my soul! Rode to Baltimore, and my friends were much rejoiced to see me; but silence broke my heart. The act against non-jurors reduced me to silence, because the oath of fidelity required by the act of the State of Maryland was preposterously rigid. I became a citizen of Delaware, and was regularly returned. I was at this time under recommendation of the Governor of Delaware as taxable.

A Happy Thought.

Tuesday, 25. Our conference met in peace and love. We settled all our northern stations; then we began in much debate about the letter sent from Vir-

ginia. We first concluded to renounce them ; then I offered conditions of union :

I. That they should ordain no more.

II. That they should come no further than Hanover circuit.

III. We would have our delegates in their conference.

IV. That they should not presume to administer the ordinances where there is a decent Episcopal minister.

V. To have a union conference.

These would not do, as we found upon long debate, and we came back to our determinations, although it was like death to think of parting. At last a thought struck my mind : to propose a suspension of the ordinances for one year, and so cancel all our grievances and be one. It was agreed on both sides, and Philip Gatch and Reuben Ellis, who had been very stiff, came into it, and thought it would do.

Wednesday, 26. Preached on Acts vi, 4, with liberty.

Thursday, 27. Read the advice to preachers. At twelve o'clock we had a melting love-feast ; preachers and people wept like children. At night I preached on Acts ii, 48, with great liberty, to about six hundred people. Joseph Cromwell and Freeborn Garrettson spoke, and at the recommendation of the conference William Watters too. These three volunteered, and were to be my spokesmen. Myself and Brother Garrettson are going to the Virginia conference to bring about peace and union. I am kept in peace through much business ; little sleep, cold weather, and damp. Lord, return, and visit us !

Va.] The Virginia Conference—Reconciliation.

Wednesday, 3. I rode to Georgetown, from thence to William Adams's, in Virginia ; came in late and fatigued.

Thursday, 4. Prepared some papers for Virginia conference. I go with a heavy heart, and fear the violence of a party of positive men. Lord, give me wisdom ! I preached at the chapel in Fairfax, and met Mr. Griffith, an Episcopal minister, who was friendly, and we spent the afternoon together.

Tuesday, 9. The conference was called. Brother Watters, Garrettson, and myself stood back, and being afterward joined by Brother Dromgoole, we were desired to come in, and I was permitted to speak. I read Mr. Wesley's thoughts against a separation ; showed my private letters of instructions from Mr. Wesley ; set before them the sentiments of the Delaware and Baltimore conferences ; read our epistles, and read my letter to Brother Gatch, and Dickens's letter in answer. After some time spent this way, it was proposed to me, if I would get the circuits supplied, they would desist, but that I could not do. We went to preaching. I spoke on Ruth ii, 4, and spoke as though nothing had been the matter among the preachers or people, and we were greatly pleased and comforted ; there was some moving among the people. In the afternoon we met ; the preachers appeared to me to be further off ; there had been, I thought, some talking out-of-doors. When we—Asbury, Garrettson, Watters, and Dromgoole—could not come to a conclusion with them we withdrew, and left them to deliberate on the conditions I offered, which were to suspend the

measures they had taken for one year. After an hour's conference we were called to receive their answer, which was, they could not submit to the terms of the union. I then prepared to leave the house, to go to a near neighbor's to lodge, under the heaviest cloud I ever felt in America. O, what I felt! nor I alone, but the agents on both sides; they wept like children, but kept their opinions.

Wednesday, 10. I returned to take leave of conference and to go off immediately to the north, but found they were brought to an agreement while I had been praying, as with a broken heart, in the house we went to lodge at; and Brothers Watters and Garrettson had been praying up stairs where the conference sat. We heard what they had to say. Surely the hand of God has been greatly seen in all this. There might have been twenty promising preachers and three thousand people seriously affected by this separation; but the Lord would not suffer this. We then had preaching by Brother Watters on "Come thou with us, and we will do thee good;" afterward we had a love-feast; preachers and people wept, prayed, and talked, so that the spirit of dissension was powerfully weakened, and I hoped it would never take place again.

Thursday, 11. I rode to Petersburg, thirty-five miles, through much fatigue and want of rest; found myself indisposed with the headache. With difficulty I spoke at Brother Harding's on "We know that we are of God," but was so unwell I could scarcely speak at all. Though having prevailed with God and man, I yet halt on my thigh.

Asbury Wanted in Every Part of the Work.

Wednesday, 17. Rode to the Widow Heath's; about seventy people were waiting for me; it was twenty miles, my horse lame, and the road rough. The enemy tried me just before I came to the house, as he generally does if the distance is more than I expect. I spoke on Luke xiii, 23, and was pointed, and had liberty; God moved upon the hearts of the people. Met the society, about fifteen pious people; most were blessed, and they seem all on stretch for holiness; spent my afternoon in reading and study. There seems to be some call for me in every part of the work. I have traveled at this time from north to south to keep peace and union; and O if a rent and separation had taken place, what work, what hurt to thousands of souls! It is now stopped, and if it had not, it might have been my fault; it may have been my fault that it took place, but I felt a timidity that I could not get over. Preachers and people making the trial, they see the consequences, and I hope will do so no more. They have suffered for their forwardness. May we all be more prudent!

"Always On the Wing."

Sunday, 21. I have peace of mind, but fear we shall have few hearers to-day. It is not far from the rich and great upon James River. I read and transcribed some of Potter's Church Government, till ten o'clock; was assisted in speaking to about two hundred people, who appeared very ignorant and unfeeling. After awhile I gave them another sermon, not very acceptable to me, and perhaps less so to them: however, I am clear—they are warned. We

then set out at four o'clock, rode sixteen miles over high hills and deep valleys in the dark, but came safe; went to bed at eleven o'clock, and was up at five o'clock. It is well if this will do long; I am always on the wing, but it is for God.

Great Commotion.

Tuesday, 30. I rose at five o'clock, with peace of mind, and was employed in writing letters to my friends in the Peninsula. Then rode to George Smith's, preached on 1 Peter iv, 17, to about sixty people; spent some time in speaking; but had not as much liberty as at some other times. Spoke to the class; the people spoke afterward of the goodness of God. Afterward I rode to Bushell's; some were gone home for fear of the horse-press. Captain Bushell is dead, and the work dies with him. Before I had done prayer there came up soldiers and horses; the people were affrighted, but there was no need. The officers came in, and sat down; one soon tired, the other could not stay it out. I spoke from 1 Peter v, 10, and addressed myself according to my audience; the people were greatly alarmed. I was tempted to go back to the north, there is such a commotion in the country. The troops were going to Camden, South Carolina. But I must go on and not faint in the way. I have been very well off, but am following trouble. What matters it where I go, what comes upon me, if God is with me; or where I live or where I die, if holy and ready!

Slavery—A Petition Answered.

Sunday, 4. I rode twelve miles to Mrs. Merritt's meeting-house; there were about three hundred peo-

ple, white and black. Spoke on Rom. ii, 7-9; after sermon I spoke to the society, some of them are happy souls; but there is a slackness in meeting: the rules of the society have not been kept up here. I spoke to some select friends about slave-keeping, but they could not bear it. This I know, God will plead the cause of the oppressed, though it gives offense to say so here. O Lord, banish the infernal spirit of slavery from thy dear Zion!

N. C.]

John Dickins.

Sunday, 18. I rode fifteen miles to Brother Bustion's, and preached to about five hundred people; was much led out on Isaiah lv, 6, 7. The people were solemnly attentive. I was tempted to think I had done well; but I opposed the devil and overcame him. Brother Dickins spoke on charity very sensibly, but his voice is gone; he reasons too much: is a man of great piety, great skill in learning, drinks in Greek and Latin swiftly, yet prays much, and walks close with God. He is a gloomy countryman of mine, and very diffident of himself. My health is recovered; thank the Lord. Thus he makes my strength sufficient for my day of glory to God!

Kingswood School in America.

Monday, 19. Rose about five o'clock, was a little disturbed in my rest with company. Brother Dickins drew the subscription for a Kingswood school in America; this was what came out a college in the subscription printed by Dr. Coke. Gabriel Long and Brother Bustion were the first subscribers, which I hope will be for the glory of God and good of thousands.

Asbury Fording Creeks and Sleeping on the Floor.

Monday, 3. Very rainy night, with thunder and lightning. I am grieved to see slavery, and the manner of keeping these poor people. I set out for Tar River. After riding about five miles I was told I could not cross Bear swamp; but by the guidance of a Baptist friend, came through that and two very deep creeks. Afterward I left my guide; we had traveled a few miles together, and talked in a friendly manner. Rode three miles further, and was stopped by what was called Bens Creek; the bridge was gone, and a man said it was ten feet deep. I then made for Falcom's bridge, on little Fishing Creek, but the low ground was covered, and no bridge to be seen. Lodged at Mr. Falcom's; was known, and kindly entertained. I labored to make Mrs. Falcom sensible of her danger, and hope not in vain; prayed evening and morning in the family.

Tuesday, 4. I rode by Miller's cross-roads to Great Fishing Creek, a rough way—but got safe along, and was comforted in mind; crossed Great Fishing Creek; stopped at Sandy Creek, where I found a kind old man, Brother Howell; lodged with him, and spent my time peaceably.

Wednesday, 5. Set out to Green Hills; but with difficulty I got along. But this was not all, for in going the distance of four miles I rode eight, and was tried to purpose. On account of the waters, I have ridden about thirty miles out of my way, and am now twenty-six miles from the place of preaching to-morrow. Have been happy till to-day; but when lost, I began to feel like fretting against persons and things.

O, my God, pardon me in this ! I was very kindly entertained, and blessed with fellowship at Green Hills ; but never met with so many difficulties as I have met with in this circuit. I hope for the greater blessings ; am kept by grace, and enjoy health in this hot weather, though so far to the south ; have peace of soul, bless the Lord !

Thursday, 6. Rode twenty-six miles ; exceeding hot, and my horse suffered greatly. When I came to the place about seventy people were met singing and praying. I spoke on Heb. iv, 13-16 ; had not much strength of soul or body. The people appeared inattentive and their minds full of the present troubles.

Friday, 7. A day of fasting, till near three o'clock. I was weak, and lodging on the floor was exceedingly uncomfortable.

A Question Answered.

Sunday, 16. I rose unwell, and somewhat dejected. Lord, keep me from the power of wicked men, devils, and sin ! Sometimes I think, will that Infinite Being we call God, who commands kingdoms, continents, and worlds, take care of such a worm as I ? Then I consider he is INFINITE, and cannot be hurried so as to forget any person. He can keep me as securely as if there were none but myself in the world. Lord, give me faith to trust in thee every moment, even in my greatest dangers ! I spoke on 2 Thess. i, 6-9. I had great light ; but the people seemed hardened. I fear judgment will overtake them before they will be awakened. I never felt more engaged, and hardly a person moved. I read my select Scriptures, and

had my soul much taken up with God ; the few people in society seemed tender at Brother Hartfield's.

Over Rocks, Hills, Creeks, and Pathless Woods.

Saturday, 22. We set out for Crump's, over rocks, hills, creeks, and pathless woods and low land ; and myself in the carriage. The young man with me was heartless before we had traveled a mile ; but when he saw how I could bush it, and sometimes force my way through a thicket, and make the young saplings bend before me and twist and turn out of the way, or path, for there was no proper road, he took courage. With great difficulty we came in about two o'clock, after traveling eight or nine hours, the people looking almost as wild as the deer in the woods. I preached on Titus ii, 10-12.

Chatham County.

Monday, 24. Cool, like the fall. I am kept in peace. Rose with a sense of God's presence ; have only time to pray and write my journal. Always upon the wing, as the rides are so long, and bad roads ; it takes me many hours, as in general I walk my horse. I crossed Rocky River about ten miles from Haw River. It was rocky, sure enough ; it is in Chatham county, North Carolina. I can see little else but cabins in these parts, built with poles : and such a country as no man ever saw for a carriage. I narrowly escaped being upset ; was much affrighted, but Providence keeps me, and I trust will. I crossed Deep River in a flat-boat, and the poor ferry-man sinner swore because I had not a silver shilling to give him. I rode to friend Hinton's, borrowed a saddle, and rode near six miles to get three, as we were lost. When we came

to the place there were about sixty people. I was at some loss whom to preach to, saints or sinners ; but found sinners as unfeeling as those who are out of the reach of mercy. I spoke on 1 Peter v, 9-12. I was glad to get away, for some were drunk, and had their guns in meeting. I expect to see some of these people again, and believe they will be humbled in time, but I fear not by the Gospel, which they have slighted, but by judgments. We came back and found a serious family ; was blessed in a family meeting. The Lord filled our hearts with his love. I had a fever in the night ; rose refreshed in the morning.

Too Lazy to Ride a Circuit.

Thursday, 10. I rode for the State of Virginia. We were lost, stopped at Dickinson's, and took dinner ; then rode to Sylvester Adams's, several creeks to cross, and bad roads to travel. Edward Bailey led my horse down a steep hill, and the carriage upset ; the horse struggled, but kept his feet ; one shaft broke, which we strapped up, and rode on near thirty miles. We found the Rawlinses there. Abraham is incurable ; I have a mind to try Isaac again, having a hope that he is humbled. Lord, direct me what to do in this matter. I made proposals to him, but he rejected them. I fear he is also incurable, being too lazy to ride a circuit.

Isaac Rawlins Brought to Terms.

Monday, 14. I brought Isaac Rawlins to some acknowledgment, and appointed him to ride Pittsylvania, New Hope, and Tar River till conference. His greatest admirers saw his obstinacy, and would have

disowned him if he had not submitted ; for they began to tire with his lounging about. I hope this will be a warning to him, and will make him take more care, and submit to order. I preached at Colonel Wilson's to about two hundred people. I spoke on Heb. xii, 1-4.

"Cromwell is the Man."

Thursday, 17. I stopped at friend Baker's, being very unwell. Brother Bailey went to a chapel ten miles from this. I want to write and to recover strength or I shall run myself down. I am kept in peace, humility, and watchfulness. I have been unwell for this week past. This has made it an additional burden to travel, and the sun is so violent that it appears to me I could not stand it, were it not for the top-carriage. I thought it would be well for me to have a person with me always, and I think Cromwell is the man. If I should preach a systematical, dry sermon, he would pay the sinners off. I was kept in peace, my body some little recruited. I rested comfortably, retired often to prayer, that God would go with me to the next circuit. I suppose, upon a calculation, I have ridden better than a thousand miles since February last, when I was at quarterly meeting at the sea-side in Delaware.

A Running Life.

Friday, 25. I rode to Page Mann's, sixteen miles ; was much assisted in speaking on Heb. iv, 11-13, to about three hundred people, who appeared serious and somewhat moved.

Saturday, 26. Rode to Robinson's, a smith, who braced up my carriage. We rode on to Little-Falling

River, and then to the New Store, where was a company stationed. The captain wanted our certificates. Bailey disputed with him, I showed him mine. We rode on to Great-Falling River. I stopped at one Vincent Glass's; the man was kind, our entertainment plain. I did not sleep well. We talked with our host; he had caught some notions from the Baptists and Presbyterians. Though he was going another way, he changed his purpose and came with us; we rode twelve miles, over hills and creeks, and through woods. About eleven o'clock I spoke on Isaiah xxxv, 6, 7, to about five hundred people, wild enough. This is a running life. The devil roars, and men threaten; but God is with me. I labored to come at the consciences of the people but could not. I keep my health to a wonder; but I want time for retirement. We had near thirty miles from Page Mann's to Staples's. I can hardly get time and place to note down any thing. I spent some time at the quarterly meeting in the barn, alone. O how good did that feel!

A Retrospect.

Sunday, 3. This day nine years past I sailed from Bristol, Old England. Ah! what troubles have I passed through! What sickness! What temptations! But I think, though I am grown more aged, I have a better constitution, and more gifts; and I think much more grace. I can bear disappointments and contradiction with greater ease. Trials are before me, very great ones, but God hath helped me hitherto. I can with greater confidence trust him! And, indeed, what have any of us to trust in for futurity except the living God?

Va.]

A Sensible View.

Friday, 8. My mind is calm ; I have had close communion with God. My hours of retirement have been kept. When I can get a barn or a preaching-house I am happy. Though I have talked much, I have kept my temper. I feel nothing but love ; and no contradiction I meet with makes me angry. I have a natural affection for my own countrymen ; yet I can hear them called cruel people, and calmly listen to threatenings of slaughter against them. Were a people spreading desolation with fire and sword in England, I, as an inhabitant, whether the invaders were right or wrong, would probably feel as the Americans now do, and use the same harsh expressions : thus I reason, and cannot therefore condemn—but the grace of God is sufficient to set us all above the world, and all things here.

Intermittent Fever.

Sunday, 10. At Bushell's chapel I spoke to about four hundred people on the parable of the sower ; and although my fever came on before I began, I was greatly assisted. I spoke long, and was ready to weep over them. After the meeting I rode seventeen miles, and came to Captain Smith's. I have traveled since *Friday* morning about sixty miles. I went to bed, and had a strong fever on me all night ; it was an intermittent. *Monday*, very weak, but happy ! Received letters from Jesse Hollingsworth, from White, and from Peddicord.

Asbury Writes to Mr. Wesley—His Answer.

Saturday, 16. Wrote to Mr. Wesley, at the desire of the Virginia conference, who had consented to suspend the administration of the ordinances for one year. The answer to this letter was made through Dr. Coke, Richard Whatcoat, and Thomas Vasey in 1784, who all came to America properly ordained. And here I will take occasion to correct a mistake into which Dr. Whitehead has fallen in his *Life of Mr. Wesley*. It is in that work stated, that had Mr. Wesley obtained the consent of the American preachers and people, he might have sent ministers regularly ordained to the society in that part of the world. The truth is, that the American Methodists, both ministers and people, wished to have such ministers among them that they might partake, like other Christian societies, of the ordinances of the Church of God, and when ministers did thus come, they received them generally and joyfully. I will further presume that Mr. Wesley received few letters from America in which that subject was not pressed upon him. I want to be more devoted. I had liberty in speaking. God was with us. I am but feeble in body, and not so fervent in spirit as I desire to be.

His Traveling Companion Sick.

Friday, 6. We went forward to the Fork Church, seven miles distant. Brother Bailey was taken sick upon the road. I left him about two miles below the church, went on and preached on Rom. viii. Returning to Brother B., I found him very ill with a fever. He rode twelve miles in the carriage to Brother Hopkins's in Amherst. Riding on horseback fatigued me.

Sunday, 8. Rode thirteen miles to the Sugar Loaf Mountains. Edward Bailey, after riding a few miles, was taken with a second fit, and very ill; I left him in the carriage and proceeded on. About five hundred people had assembled, to whom I spoke on 2 Cor. iv, 2-4. Returning after preaching to Brother Bailey, I found him with all the symptoms of a severe bilious attack, and like a dead man in appearance. He passed the night in great distress—prayer was made for him; through mercy his fit went off. I took Brother Bailey to help me; his affliction has given me much trouble. Greatly distressed for him as I have been, I am much consoled in being able to leave him with Doctor Hopkins, who is a kind, skillful, sensible man.

Melancholy Tidings.

Tuesday, 17. Rode ten miles; preached at Stockdale's to about thirty people. Rode on fifteen miles, put in at Ragland's; a Baptist spoke to the family. Next morning rode eighteen miles to the Broken Backed church; got in a little after twelve o'clock. Preached on Zeph. i, 12. Here I received the melancholy tidings of the death of my companion and friend, Edward Bailey. It was very distressing to me; riding together so long had created a great sympathy between us. He died on Tuesday last about five o'clock, in full confidence. He spoke to the last, and bore testimony to the goodness of God. He would sometimes get upon his knees in the bed, weak as he was, and pray. It troubles me to reflect that he was neglected so long, yet it was unavoidable. The doctor supposed a mortification took place in his bowels, inflamed by the corrosive nature of the bile.

It was a sorrowful quarterly meeting to me. Few people ; they lifeless, and my dear friend dead ! I spoke to the preachers about a union.

Asbury Mourns the Death of his Friend.

Saturday, 21. I set out as soon as it was light, and came about three o'clock to the Widow Granger's and Ground Squirrel Bridge, a distance of forty miles. I travel very heavily now. I have lost my poor Bailey, so suddenly called away ! Lord, humble me, and make me more watchful ! He desired me to see into his temporal matters, for his poor sister, and wife and children. I have reason to praise God that I have health under such fatigue. I said I should have trouble before I went into Fluvanna, yet I little thought my friend would die there. If my affections were naturally tender, I should be bathed in tears, for I have great cause to weep ; but the Lord hath ordered it. It may be that I suffer more than those who weep away distress. I was ready to say, "None shall ride with me hereafter." Satan works upon my gloomy mind greatly. I was comforted in meeting B., R. B., and T. C. ; a solemn meeting. We have lost three useful preachers within one year. The Lord cuts Israel short.

Primitive Way of Traveling.

Friday, 27. Rode on to Fredericksburg ; my horse failed through fatigue, bad feed, and not enough of it. I stopped and fed by the way. Mistaking my road, I met a serious man, and spoke to him about his soul. It may be the losing my way was ordered by Providence. Came to Garratt's, at Stafford Court-

house : fell in with a Presbyterian, an acquaintance of Mr. Pillmoor ; I spoke freely to him, and had prayer. Two young men from Winchester joined us. Saturday morning, after paying eight Continental dollars for my horse, and my supper and bed, I rode on to Dumfries, about twelve miles. Rode on four miles further, fed my horse, and got a cup of boiled milk for myself. Here my paper-money failed, and I was obliged to pay in silver. Rode on, carrying my corn, and fed upon the road. Missing my way to William Adams's, when on the south side of Colchester, I went down the State road, within two miles of Alexandria, making my journey near fifty miles. My horse was much fatigued, and myself in a fever with hard riding. I was blessed in the family I put up with. O, how sweet is rest ! But O for eternal rest !

Md.]

At Mr. Gough's once More.

Monday, 30. Crossed Georgetown ferry ; stopped at Baggarley's. Rode on in great peace, and came to John Worthington's about five o'clock, after a ride of thirty miles. I was kindly entertained. I called at Mr. Thomas Dorsey's ; kind people. I breakfasted with them. I put forward to Baltimore. When within about two miles there came up an autumnal storm ; there was fear of the trees falling, and that the wind would overset the carriage. I came in safe, stopped an hour, and proceeded on to Mr. Gough's, and arrived between eight and nine o'clock. There has been some snow to-day, and the night is cold. I have spent my stock of money, three guineas and two half johannas, given me by Mr. Gough and Mrs. Chamier. Two guineas and a half and a half-

crown went in Virginia. Rode on about twelve miles to dinner, eight miles afterward to Swan Creek, being kept in peace.

Del.]

Quarterly Meeting at Dover.

Friday, 3. Set off for my favorite Dover.

Sunday, 5. We had between one and two thousand people. Our house, forty-two by forty-eight, was crowded above and below, and numbers still remained outside. Our love-feast lasted about two hours ; some spoke of the sanctifying grace of God. I preached on John iii, 16-18 ; a heavy house to preach in. Brothers Peddicord and Cromwell exhorted.

A Record of Six Months.

Tuesday, 7. I was closely engaged in reading a volume of Mr. Wesley's Journal of above three hundred pages ; ended it on Wednesday morning. I felt dejection of spirits for want of public exercise. I have had so much of this, that within this six months I have traveled, according to my computation, two thousand six hundred and seventy-one miles, yet am uneasy when still. I proposed meeting the children when I came again. I appointed a place for them to sit, and desired the parents to send a note with each, letting me know the temper and those vices to which the child might be most subject. I long to spend a few minutes every hour in prayer. I see great need of living near to God—the people are so affectionate. Lord, humble me !

Asbury's Work Laid Out.

Friday, 17. A day of fasting. We all parted after much business. S. Roe went to Sussex ; the two

Cromwells for the circuit, (Kent, in Delaware;) Peddicord to Dorset; myself to go through Kent and Sussex—then to the Jerseys, Philadelphia, and Chester. I wrote to Watters, Dudley, and Debrular. Friday, set out for Murder-Kill, stopping at Combs's that night. I spoke freely to the man upon his mysticism, and to the family about their souls.

Fervent Prayer for the Work of God.

Friday, 8. Was under dejection. Read thirty chapters of Isaiah. Rode to Dill's; had about forty people; was much led to speak to the poor. Fasted, and intended to spend a great part of the night in prayer, but I felt weak through want of rest. I spent better than an hour in fervent prayer and was much blessed, having my soul divinely filled with love when I lay down. Rose about five o'clock in better health; passed some time in fervent prayer for the whole work—the preachers and people. Thomas Haskins is a young man of learning, and has been studying the law; like William Spencer, he has given it up for grace and divinity. Glory be to God! I believe the Lord has called Thomas Haskins for a preacher; he was convinced in Dover some months ago.

Bleeding and Blistering.

Saturday, 30. While I was preaching I was seized with a putrid sore throat; the attack was violent. *Sabbath Day* I took physic, and applied two blisters that drew kindly; afterward put one on the back of my neck, and another behind the ear; had some blood taken from the arm, and some from the tongue, and it pleased kind Providence to relieve me sooner

than I expected. I desire to give thanks to God for patience and resignation.

January 1-4, 1781. Pain! pain! pain! *5th.* Found myself considerably amended, so that I sat up and did a little business.

The Wilds and Swamps of Delaware.

Lord's Day, 14. Being rainy, we had only about one hundred and twenty serious people at the place appointed. The people here are much more gentle than they were a twelvemonth past. We have a society of more than twenty members, some of whom have found the Lord; but I think, for ignorance of God and religion, the wilds and swamps of Delaware exceed most parts of America with which I have had any acquaintance. However, God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

Bad Habits Soon Learned.

Monday, 22. On my way to P.'s I came on a race-ground, where the sons of Belial had been practicing my horse. He ran away with me when he came to the end of the paths, but stopped, and I received no harm. I lifted my heart to God, and by the mercy of the Lord he stopped near a point of woods, which, had he entered, I might probably have lost my life. My heart was deeply humbled before the Lord, who preserved me from such imminent danger.

Asbury True to his Colors.

Sunday, February 4. I preached, and had some of the Council and members of the Assembly to hear me. I spoke plainly; intending my discourse as a vindication of the doctrine of the Methodists.

Monday, 5. On my way to quarterly meeting, held at the Valley preaching-house, I called on his Excellency, Governor Rodney, to sign my certificate, which he did with great readiness and politeness.

Pa.]

In Philadelphia.

Saturday, 10. My soul enjoys peace, and I rejoice to hear that the work of God is deepening and widening in the Jerseys. My old friends here in Philadelphia appear loving to me, but they are not united as they ought to be.

Tuesday, 13. After casting in my mite, by saying and doing what I could in Philadelphia, I left my kind friends and set off for New Jersey.

N. J.]

Benjamin Abbott.

Wednesday, 14. I met with and heard B. Abbott. His words came with great power. Over in Chester, he informs me, twenty were renewed in love, and eight on this side; the people fall to the ground under him, and sink into a passive state, helpless, stiff, motionless. He tried to attach himself to other sects, but had such struggles within that he was forced back—the Lord would not let him be any thing but a Methodist. Such is his account. He is a man of uncommon zeal, and (although his language has somewhat of incorrectness) of good utterance. Here, I find, remains the fruit of the labors of that (now) miserable man, A. Whitworth. How awful the thought, that God should own a man and make him a blessing to many souls, and then lay him aside like a broken instrument! Yet so it was, because of his sin. May others take warning by his fall!

Asbury a Rapid Reader.

Friday, March 2. My soul enjoys peace, and I have a little respite from the haste I have been in for some time past ; nevertheless, I have read the first and second volumes of Rollin's Ancient History (containing about three hundred pages each) in about two weeks. We may justly admire the policy and the temperance of the Persians ; and it is very satisfactory to find a more particular account corroborating the Scripture history of the fulfillment of the prophecies concerning that great man Cyrus, called of God.

Pa.]

Again in Philadelphia.

Saturday, 3. Rode to Philadelphia, where I preached but twice. I met the society, which was made a blessing to some, and I am persuaded that my stay would be a means of the prosperity of the society here ; but it is possible I may be more useful where I am going.

Tuesday, 6. Read the fourth volume of Rollin's Ancient History. It contains the memorable life of Socrates, who was certainly a wise man ; but, as the worthy historian remarks, there were many blemishes in his character.

Del.]

Review of his Travels,

Saturday, 24. I was much led out in speaking of Peter's fall at my favorite place. I am greatly comforted with the good news of Zion's prosperity. Upon a review of my travels I find that, from the first of last May to this present date, I have traveled nearly or quite four thousand miles.

Twenty Preachers at Conference.

Saturday, April 14. Our quarterly meeting began at the Forest chapel, the congregation was large. I spoke first, and was followed by Brothers C., R. C., and L.; the people were quickened and appeared much alive to God. The next day, being Easter Sunday, our love-feast began at nine, and public preaching at eleven o'clock. After meeting we rode about twenty miles to Brother White's, where about twenty preachers met together to hold a conference. Thence I attended Kent quarterly meeting, on the Eastern Shore of Maryland.

Md.]

Harmony of the Preachers.

Friday, 20. Crossed the Chesapeake, and came to Mr. Gough's. *Saturday* I rode to Baltimore, and preached on the *Sabbath day*.

Tuesday, 24. Our conference began in Baltimore, where several of the preachers attended from Virginia and North Carolina. All but one agreed to return to the old plan, and give up the administration of the ordinances. Our troubles now seem over from that quarter, and there appears to be a considerable change in the preachers from North to South. All was conducted in peace and love.

May

Harry, the Black Man.

Sunday, 13. Preached at the chapel; afterward Harry, a black man, spoke on the barren fig-tree. This circumstance was new, and the white people looked on with attention.

Va.]

Wicked Whisky Drinkers.

Sunday, June 10. I preached at eleven o'clock to about two hundred people with a degree of freedom. I

then rode to R. Williams's. On my way I had a view of a hanging rock that appears like a castle wall, about three hundred feet high, and looks as if it had been built with square slate stones. At first glance a traveler would be ready to fear it would fall on him. I had about three hundred people; but there were so many wicked whisky drinkers, who brought with them so much of the power of the devil, that I had but little satisfaction in preaching.

Wonderful Caves.

Thursday, 21. Last evening I rode a mile and a half to see some of the greatest natural curiosities my eyes ever beheld: they were two caves, about two hundred yards from each other. Their entrances were, as in similar cases, narrow and descending, gradually widening toward the interior, and opening into lofty chambers, supported, to appearance, by basaltic pillars. In one of these I sung,

“Still out of the deepest abyss.”

The sound was wonderful. There were stalactites, resembling the pipes of an organ, which, when our old guide, Father Ellsworth, struck with a stick, emitted a melodious sound, with variations according to their size; walls, like our old churches; resemblances to the towers adjoining their belfries; and the natural gallery, which we ascended with difficulty. All to me was new, solemn, and awfully grand. There were parts which we did not explore, so deep, so damp, and near night. I came away filled with wonder, with humble praise, and adoration.

Sleeping Among the Rocks.

Monday, July 16. We set out through the mountains for quarterly meeting. It was a very warm day, and part of our company stopped after thirty miles' traveling. Brother William Partridge and myself kept on until night overtook us in the mountain, among rocks, and woods, and dangers on all sides surrounding us. We concluded it most safe to secure our horses and quietly await the return of day ; so we lay down and slept among the rocks, although much annoyed by the gnats. Next day I met with several preachers, with whom I spent some time in conversation about the work of God. At twelve o'clock the people at Perrill's met, and we all exhorted.

Friday, 20. I had some liberty on 2 Cor. vi, 2. I have been obliged to sleep on the floor every night since I slept in the mountains. Yesterday I rode twenty-seven miles, and to-day thirty.

Md.]

Asbury Sick—Severe Treatment.

Sunday, August 12. Was a damp, unwholesome day. At Micah Dorsey's, Elkridge, I was seized with all the symptoms of an inflammatory sore throat. I bled, took medicine, and applied blisters, but the disease was too violent to yield at once. Very high fever followed, and I suffered more than I can well express. I made use of poultice with better success ; the gathering broke, and I found some relief. I praise God that his providence cast my lot among so kind a people. Food, lodging, a physician, (Dr. Pew,) and whatever else was necessary, was not withheld. I am sensible I am not so humble as I should be, and it may be I am in danger of forming improper esti-

mates of my importance among preachers and people. Were this disposition indulged, God might justly cut me off.

Persecution—Spiritual Prosperity.

Monday, Septtmbur 10. I learn that the Lord is reviving his work on the Eastern Shore, more or less, in every circuit. The wicked persecute, and Satan rages in Dorset, but God will carry on his own work and maintain his own cause.

Asbury soon Tires of the City.

Friday, 12. Came to Philadelphia; found the people serious, loving, and lively. The society here appears to be in a better state than they have been in since the British army was here.

Sunday, 14. I had some comfortable sensations in speaking on John iii, 14. Our congregations are large, and I hope for a revival of the work among us. I heard two good sermons at St. George's. I gave them a plain discourse at night at St. George's, on 1 John i, 8, 9.

Tuesday, 16. I enjoy peace, but I soon grow tired of the city. There is a deepening of the work in some souls, but I fear the religion of others evaporates in talk.

Harry in Danger.

Saturday, 27. My intervals of time are employed in marking Baxter's Cure for Church Divisions for abridgment, which may some day see the light. My soul is drawn out to God to know whether I ought to go to Virginia this winter, in order, if possible, to prevent the spreading of the fire of division. I do not look for impulses or revelations. The voice

of my brethren and concurrent circumstances will determine me in this matter. Harry seems to be unwilling to go with me. I fear his speaking so much to white people in the city has been, or will be, injurious. He has been flattered, and may be ruined.

Del.] A Thousand at Quarterly Meeting.

Saturday, November 3. We had twelve preachers and about one thousand people at quarterly meeting. This evening our quarterly-meeting conference begun. We scrutinized and dealt with fidelity one with the other. Nothing would satisfy the preachers but my consenting to go to Virginia. There appear, at times, to be great movings among the people, but there seems to be a slackness of discipline among the preachers and them. This evil must be cured, or the work will be injured.

Md.] Asbury in Baltimore.

Thursday, December 6. Came to Baltimore. Here I received letters from Virginia, by which I learn that affairs are not so bad in Virginia as I feared; a few of the local preachers have made some stir, and the traveling preachers have withdrawn from them and their adherents. I have spent some time in Baltimore with satisfaction, and could freely stay longer; but there may be danger in these trading towns, and my way south seems to be open.

Va.] Party Spirit Among the People,

Wednesday, 19. Preached in Leesburg. From thence I traveled and preached through Hanover and Gloucester circuits. I find the spirit of party among some of the people. The local preachers tell them

of the ordinances, and they catch at them like fish at a bait. But when they are informed that they will have to give up the traveling preachers I apprehend they will not be so fond of their new plan ; and if I judge right, the last struggle of a yielding party will be made at the approaching conference to be held at the Manakintown.

N. C.] *Asbury's Rule in Praying for the Church.*

Thursday, February 7, 1782. I rode sixteen miles, and preached to a large assemblage of people at I. T.'s on the "great salvation." Though I am often in haste, and straitened for want of time, I have gone through Mr. Wesley's third volume once, and am going through it again. I make it a rule to spend an hour, morning and evening, in meditation and in prayer for all the circuits, societies, and preachers. I expect to see the work of God revive in these parts so soon as the spirit of disputation is cast out. Blessed be God, I enjoy good health of body and peace of mind ! I find no preaching does good but that which properly presses the use of the means, and urges holiness of heart. These points I am determined to keep close to in all my sermons.

Va.] *Expecting Better Entertainment.*

Saturday, 9. We rode twenty-five miles up Maherrin, and missing our way, did not reach the place until three o'clock. The people, meantime, had waited for us, and I spoke to them on Luke xix, 10, I trust not in vain. In this country I have to lodge half my nights in lofts, where light may be seen through a hundred places, and it may be the cold wind at the same time blowing through as many ; but through

mercy I am kept from murmuring, and bear it with thankfulness, expecting ere long to have better entertainment—a heavenly and eternal rest.

N. C.]

The Best Antidote.

Thursday, 21. I am filled with love from day to day. O bless the Lord for the constant communion I enjoy with him! Sanctification is the doctrine which is most wanted to be preached among the people here, whom the more I know the more I love. Antinomians are laboring to spread their tenets among them, but they will give way as holiness of heart and life is pointedly enforced and pressed home upon their consciences. This is the best antidote to the poison.

Va.]

Philip Adams.

I preached the funeral sermon of Philip Adams, one of our preachers. He died last March. This duty I performed the more cheerfully, believing that such would have been his choice had I been within reach at the time of his death. My subject was 1 Kings xiii, 30. P. A. was a man of grace, and his gifts increased; he was steady, and closely attached to the doctrine and discipline of the Methodists; he died happy in the Lord, and I doubt not but that he has gone where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest.

N. C.]

Mr. Kennon—His Religion and Creed.

Sunday, March 3. I have great affection for C. Kennon, one of the most sensible Calvinists in these parts. He acknowledges he found his religion among the Methodists; his system he borrowed from Witsius. Fletcher has cured him of the disease of dispu-

tation ; he reads him with delight even while he is prostrating the pillars against which he leans.

Asbury Successful as a Peace-maker.

Tuesday, April 16. We set out, and on the next day reached Ellis's, at whose house we held a conference. The people flocked together for preaching. Mr. Jarratt gave us a profitable discourse on the fourteenth chapter of Hosea. In the evening the preachers met in conference. As there had been much distress felt by those of them in Virginia relative to the administration of the ordinances, I proposed to such as were so disposed to enter into a written agreement to cleave to the old plan in which we had been so greatly blessed, that we might have the greater confidence in each other, and know on whom to depend. This instrument was signed by the greater part of the preachers without hesitation. Next morning I preached on Phil. ii, 1-5. I had liberty, and it pleased God to set it home. One of the preachers, James Haw, who had his difficulties, was delivered from them all, and with the exception of one, all the signatures of the preachers present were obtained. We received seven into connection, and four remained on trial. At noon Mr. Jarratt spoke on the union of the attributes.

Val.] Rejoices in the News of American Independence.

Friday, June 10. I preached at Culpepper courthouse. The people were serious and attentive. Here I heard the good news that Britain had acknowledged the Independence for which America has been contending. May it be so ! The Lord does what to him seemeth good.

Md.] Baltimore Conference—General Statistics.

Monday, 20. A few of us began conference in Baltimore. Next day we had a full meeting. The preachers all signed the agreement proposed at the Virginia conference, and there was a unanimous resolve to adhere to the old Methodist plan. We spent most of the day in examining the preachers. We had regular daily preaching. *Monday*, Brother Ellis preached; on *Tuesday*, I spoke on 1 Tim. iv, 4.

Wednesday, 22. We had many things before us. Our printing plan was suspended for the present for want of funds.

Friday, 24. Was set apart for fasting and prayer. We had a love-feast, the Lord was present, and all was well. The preachers in general were satisfied. I found myself burdened with labors and cares. We have now fifty-nine traveling preachers, and eleven thousand seven hundred and eighty-five in society. Our young men are serious, and their gifts are enlarged.

Va.]

Sick and Weary.

Sunday, July 7. In recrossing the mountain, on my way to Mill Creek, I was obliged to walk up and down its sides, and was greatly tired. I delivered a short discourse, with pleasure, to about three hundred people; afterward Brother Hagerty spoke to them. It rained before and after preaching, but held up while we worshiped by the side of the stream for want of a house. After preaching we rode to the Branch, making a *Sabbath-day's* journey of nearly forty miles.

Monday, 8. I am sick and weary. Ah! how few are there who would not choose strangling rather

than life and the labors we undergo, and the hardships and privations we are compelled to submit to! Blessed be God, we have hope beyond the grave!

"My Poor Horse,"

Friday, 12. Rode to the north Branch, crossed the Nobbly Mountain; at its foot we stopped, ate a little bread, drank fine water, prayed, and then went forward to Cressaps. I was plain on Isaiah lv, 6, 7. Here Colonel Barrett met me and conducted me two miles up the Alleghany. We were riding until near ten o'clock; the road was dreary, and the night was dark. I wanted rest and found it. We had nearly two hundred people to hear in this newly-settled country. They were attentive, and I hope God will do something for them. After preaching on John vii, 17, we set out on our return. I was much fatigued, and it rained hard; my poor horse, too, was so weak from the want of proper food that he fell down with me twice. This hurt my feelings exceedingly, more than any circumstance I met with in all my journey.

Md.]

Inactivity Embittered.

Saturday, 27. Being unwell, I declined going to Baltimore and went to Perry Hall, where I found my dear friend Thomas White. On the Sabbath day we read prayers in the family, and I preached in the afternoon on 2 Chron. xxxii, 24, 25.

Monday, 29. Closely employed in answering letters from various parts. I find it hard to keep the power of religion; yet I feel that my soul is stayed upon God. I want to be moving on. If I rest a few days I am tried. Blessed be God, who thus embitters

inactive quiescence to me! I am impelled forward by my desires of comfort for myself, and sincere wishes to be useful to the Church and to the world of sinners.

Pa.] Philadelphia a Noisy. Disagreeable Place.

Tuesday, August 27. After preaching to a small congregation of unengaged hearers we rode to Philadelphia. What a noisy, disagreeable place! O for some of that simplicity which dwelt among the dwellers in tents! But the souls of the people are precious.

N. J.] Poor Gospel-hardened Trenton.

Tuesday, September 3. Rode to Trenton; the town in a great bustle with the court and the French troops. My subject was the Syrophenician woman. The congregation was large and serious. Ah, poor Gospel-hardened Trenton! But a few have been converted of late.

William Tennent.

Saturday, 14. I came to New Mills after preaching at H.'s and Penny Hill. I passed through Monmouth and Upper and Lower Freehold. Here lived that old saint of God, William Tennent, who went to his reward a few years ago.

Pa.] Labors—Begging for Church Debt.

Monday, 16. After preaching at Mount Holly to a crowded congregation, I rode, very unwell and under deep exercises of mind, to Philadelphia—twenty miles. I have preached seventeen times, and ridden above two hundred miles in the last two weeks. I think God will do great things in the Jerseys; the prospect is pleasing, east and west.

Monday, 23. I began begging for the society, that we might, if possible, relieve our preaching-house from the incumbrance of ground-rent. I soon got about £270 subscribed.

Del.]

White's New Chapel.

Saturday, 28. Preached in Thoroughfare Neck, (twenty miles,) and then returned to Wyatt's and preached with liberty ; thence I hastened on to Dover, and at six o'clock delivered my third discourse, making a journey of forty miles. We know not what we can do until we try.

Sunday, October 6. I preached in White's new chapel for the first time. It is one of the neatest country chapels the Methodists have on the whole continent. My subject was Haggai ii, 9: "In this place will I give peace."

Va.]

Williamsburg the Former Capital.

Wednesday, December 11. I rode to Williamsburg, formerly the seat of government, but now removed to Richmond. Thus the worldly glory is departed from it. As to Divine glory it never had any. I preached in James City court-house. The place has suffered and is suffering. The palace, the barracks, and some good dwelling-houses burned. The capitol is no great building, and is going to ruin ; the exterior of the college not splendid, and but few students ; the Bedlam-house is desolate, but whether because none are insane, or all are equally mad, it might, perhaps, be difficult to tell.

A Cold State of Things.

New Year's Day, 1783. I have passed through Gates, Hartford, Bertie, and Northampton counties, in North Carolina. I am now in Southampton county, in Virginia, and have this day preached in St. Paul's.

Monday, 6. After preaching at H. C.'s we rode twenty miles to Greaves's, where I met with Mr. Jarratt. On *Tuesday* he preached for me at R. Jones's. I exhorted; the meeting was lively.

Tuesday, 14. Wolsey's barn. Cold day, cold house, cold people. There has been preaching here for seven years past, yet the society declines.

N. C.]

The Barn a Closet for Prayer.

Monday, March 3. Cold as it was, we rode from Guilford to Caswell county, a distance of twenty miles, and met with a considerable congregation, among whom were a few warm-hearted people. I hope the Lord will work here. Here was a cabin with one room, a barn, and stables. I have little time to write or place to read. The barn is my closet for prayer.

No Fodder, No Supper, No Prayer.

Saturday, 22. I preached to a poor, unfeeling people at a place the circuit preachers had left. We were fortunate enough to eat about eleven o'clock, and got nothing more until about that hour next day. We pushed on to get to M.'s. Arrived there at eight o'clock at night; there was no fodder, no supper, no prayer. Next morning we started at sunrise, and with difficulty getting over the river, came to Winstead's about ten o'clock. Here we breakfasted.

Peace Confirmed between England and America.

Saturday, April 5. I heard the news that peace was confirmed between England and America. I had various exercises of mind on the occasion. It may cause great changes to take place among us ; some for the better, and some for the worse. It may make against the work of God. Our preachers will be far more likely to settle in the world, and our people, by getting into trade and acquiring wealth, may drink into its spirit. Believing the report to be true, I took some notice of it while I treated on Acts x, 36 at Brother Clayton's, near Halifax, where they were firing their cannons and rejoicing in their way on the occasion. This day I prevailed with Brother Dickins to go to New York, where I expect him to be far more useful than in his present station.

Va.] Love-feast Testimony in Favor of African Liberty.

After long rides through Fluvanna and Orange circuits I came to Petersburg on *Monday* the 5th of *May*, and the next day to Ellis's chapel.

Wednesday, 7. Our conference began at this place. Some young laborers were taken in to assist in spreading the Gospel, which greatly prospers in the north. We all agreed in the spirit of African liberty, and strong testimonies were borne in its favor in our love-feast. Our affairs were conducted in love. From Petersburg I proceeded northward.

Md.] Cruelty to a Negro—Asbury's Protest.

Sunday, June 8. I have been well exercised, although I am not so weary as I expected. I have

preached three times, and the weather is very warm. I believe the more we do, the more we shall be enabled to do for God and for our souls.

I visited Sister R——y, sick of the putrid fever. I prayed with her, and trusted God with my safety from infection. I went to I. Worthington's, but I beheld such cruelty to a negro that I could not feel free to stay. I called for my horse, delivered my own soul, and departed.

Va.] Hunger and Hard Work not the Worst of It.

Saturday, 21. Preached to a few people at Winchester. For several days past I have had to ride the whole day, and to preach without eating until five or six o'clock in the evening, except a little biscuit. This is hard work for man and horse. This, however, is not the worst—religion is greatly wanting in these parts. The inhabitants are much divided. Made up, as they are, of different nations, and speaking different languages, they agree in scarcely any thing, except it be to sin against God.

Pa.] Quarterly Meeting—Asbury's Aspiration for Holiness.

Saturday and Sunday, 26, 27. Our quarterly meeting was held at Worley's, near Little York. Many spoke in our love-feast with great simplicity, and my spirit was refreshed among them.

Thursday, 31. Preached at Martin Boehm's to many people.

Saturday, August 2. Indisposed and dejected. This is a barren land of religion, yet fruitful for every thing else.

Monday, 4. Rose early to pour out my soul to God.

I want to live to him and for him ; to be holy in heart, in life, and in conversation. This is my mark, my prize, my all—to be, in my measure, like God.

N. Y.]

In New York.

Monday, 25. Set out for New York. Arrived there, I found Brother Dickins preaching.

Wednesday, 27. I was close and searching ; a few felt it. A little of the good old spirit yet prevails among these people. We had preaching generally morning and evening, and I trust the seed sown will not all be lost.

N. J.]

Hard Lodging for a Sick Man.

Thursday, September 11. At Mount Holly I had more people than I expected. On *Friday* I rode a long, barren way to the Forks of Egg Harbor.

Saturday, 14. I injured myself by speaking too long and too loud. I rode seven miles, got wet, had poor lodgings, with plenty of mosquitoes. Next day, poorly as I was, I had to ride seventeen miles, and spoke while I had a high fever on me. I laid me down on a plank. Hard lodging this for a sick man.

A Wild Chase.

Sunday, 21. I had a wild chase—first, to New England town, but their minister had warned the people against hearing us, thence to Cohansey. Here Mr. Vantull had appointed to preach at the same hour, although my appointment had been given out some time before. Arriving, however, before him, I preached in the court-house—and cleared out ; those who remained met with hard blows.

Quakers Help Build the Salem Church.

Monday, 22. In the evening at Salem; a number of Friends attended, and were serious. Here a few of our scattered people have attempted to build a house of worship, but found themselves too weak to accomplish it. They applied to some of the people, called Quakers, for assistance, who subscribed liberally. The matter was talked over, as I am informed, at their quarterly meeting. When it was objected "that we spoke for hire," it was answered, "No, it was only for a passing support." So there was consent given that *Friends* who were free to do it might give.

Del.]

From North to South.

Wednesday, October 1. Passed through Philadelphia, and came on *Saturday*, the twenty-seventh, to Dover, where I preached at nine o'clock on the *Sabbath day*, and at Barratt's chapel at three o'clock.

Thursday, 2. I preached at Queen Anne's, where a considerable number attended, and where many profess religion.

Friday, 3. Preached at A.'s, in Kent county, to a large company, and was much assisted.

Md.]

Eight Years Ago.

Thursday, 23. I enjoy much peace with God, although I am left to serve alone. But God is with me. O healthful sickness, blessed pain, if the Lord supports! I am now beside the Chesapeake Bay. Here Calvert and Dorset lie opposite to each other. Eight years ago, when going down the bay, little

thought I of the great things God was about to do for both shores.

Del.]

In Dover Again.

Sunday, November 2. I spoke at Mr. Bassett's, in Dover, to many people; thence rode to the Cross-roads. Here a design had been formed to prevent my preaching, and Mr. Bishop came, as I was told, to advise me to forbid resistance. Had he and another honestly discouraged those who had got together to interrupt preaching on a former occasion, resistance and forbearance would have been equally unnecessary. I rode on through the rain and darkness to Mr. Thompson's.

Md.]

On the Banks of the Potomac.

Tuesday, 25. I visited some families, and my soul was grieved at the blackslidings of some of my old friends. O may the Lord reach their hearts!

Made a short stay in Baltimore, and preached at Elk Ridge on my way to Virginia. When we reached the Potomac, Brother P——s was unwilling to cross; so we stayed at the public house without fire, candle, or supper, and the host drunk. Next morning we crossed the river, and were kindly received at Brother Bushby's.

Va.]

At Alexandria Court-House.

Friday, 28. Preached to a large congregation in the court-house at Alexandria. On my way to Fredericksburg I fell in with some gentlemen and conversed with them on the subject of religion. They sought refuge in God's foreknowledge, and thence drew their proofs that their Creator would not eternally damn them.

N. C.] Letter from Mr. Wesley—Preaches at Edenton.

Wednesday, 24. Set out in the rain to Hartford town. I spoke in a tavern. The people seemed wild and wicked altogether. I journeyed on through the damp weather, and reached Pettigrew's about six o'clock. Here I received a letter from Mr. Wesley, in which he directs me to act as general assistant, and to receive no preachers from Europe that are not recommended by him, nor any in America who will not submit to me and to the minutes of the conference.

I preached in Edenton to a gay, inattentive people. I was very much pleased with Mr. Pettigrew. I heard him preach, and received the Lord's Supper at his hands. Thence I crossed the Chowan River and preached, journeying through Bertie, Hertford, and Northampton counties, to considerable congregations.

A Ride of Forty Miles—A Congregation of Fifteen.

Tuesday, February 24, 1784. Rode forty miles. Next day preached to fifteen people.

Thursday, 26. Rode to Hillsborough. The snow was deep, the street dirty, my horse sick, the people drinking and swearing. I endeavored to preach on "A man's gaining the whole world," etc.

Wonderfully Entertained.

Thursday, March 4. Preached at Browder's, and then hasted to the Widow Kembrough's. Here I was wonderfully entertained with a late publication by Silas Mercer, a Baptist preacher, in which he has anathematized the whole race of kings from Saul to

George III. His is republicanism run mad. Why afraid of religious establishments in these days of enlightened liberty? Silas has beaten the Pope, who only on certain occasions, and for certain reasons, absolves subjects from allegiance to their sovereigns; and if the nations of Europe believed the sweeping doctrines of Silas, they would be right to decapitate every crowned head, and destroy every existing form of Church government. If plunging-baptism is the only true ordinance, and there can be no true Church without it, it is not quite clear that ever Christ had a Church until the Baptists *plunged* for it.

Va.] *Asbury Sweeps through the Counties.*

Sunday, 4. Preached at Finney's old place, where I suppose there might be some that had hardly heard preaching since I was here last year. Thence I rode through Powhatan, Cumberland, and Buckingham counties, where there is poor encouragement for religion. O my Lord, arise, for thine own glory, visit the people in mercy, and make known thy power in the salvation of poor sinners!

Northward Again.

Thursday, 29. Rode to Ellis's chapel, in Sussex county, where we held our conference the two ensuing days. Brother O'Kelly gave us a good sermon: "I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection," etc. Mr. Jarratt gave us a good discourse on 1 Tim. i, 4. Our business was conducted with uncommon love and unity.

From this conference I proceeded on and crossed James River on my way to the north, and was led to cry to God to go with us and meet us there.

Md.]

Glendenning Foiled.

Thursday, May 30. Reached Baltimore about seven o'clock. I have ridden about fifty miles to-day. In crossing the Potomac, when about midway, we turned back to meet the stage, and I found Dr. Lusby. I learned by letter that my father and mother are yet alive.

Tuesday, 25. Our conference began, all in peace. William Glendenning had been devising a plan to lay me aside, or at least to abridge my powers. Mr. Wesley's letter settled the point, and all was happy. The conference rose on *Friday* morning.

Va.]

Ascending the Alleghany.

Thursday, July 1. We began to ascend the Alleghany, directing our course toward Redstone. We passed the Little Meadows, keeping the route of Braddock's road for about twenty-two miles, along a rough pathway. Arriving at a small house, and halting for the night, we had *literally* to lie as *thick as three in a bed*. My soul has peace. For three days I had fever; the excessive labor I have undergone may have nourished it. When I arose yesterday morning I was very unwell. After riding about seven miles I was taken with a trembling and profuse perspiration. I ate something and felt better, and my fever is now abated. My soul has been blessed in an uncommon degree; and thou, my soul, bless the Lord; and O that he may be pleased to make me a blessing to the people in this part of the world!

A Mixed Congregation.

Sunday, 4. At Cheat River we had a mixed congregation of sinners, Presbyterians, Baptists, and it

may be of saints. I had liberty, and gave it to them as the Lord gave it to me—plain enough. After me Brother Bougham spoke with life and power. I think God will bring a people to himself in this place.

Pa.] One Hundred and Sixty Miles of Rough Roads.

Wednesday, 7. We had nearly seven hundred people at Beeson Town. They were, in general, serious and attentive.

Thursday, 8. I preached at D.'s, to a wild people, on Acts xiii, 26. Since last Friday we have ridden one hundred and sixty or more miles, on rough roads, through a rough country, and with rough fare. I trust our labor will not all be lost.

Md.] At Fredericktown and Winchester.

Sunday, 18. I preached in the new market-house at Fredericktown. Many attended both from town and country.

Wednesday, 21. We had many to hear at Winchester. They appeared to be orderly and solemn, and I hope it will appear that some were convicted.

Pa.] Philadelphia Circuit.

Saturday, 31. Our quarterly meeting in Philadelphia circuit began the 21st of *July*. I addressed the congregation on the Epistle to the Church of Sardis. We had a gracious time on *Sunday*, the 1st of *August*. At four o'clock I preached again, in the Valley church, on Isaiah lxvi, 1: "Heaven is my throne, and the earth my footstool."

Monday, August 2. After preaching at Brother H.'s on Luke xi, 13, I went to the city and preached to many people on 1 Peter iii, 15.

N. J.] At Burlington and Trenton.

Monday, 16. Went to Burlington.

Tuesday, 17. Went to Trenton. Although unwell, and greatly oppressed by heat, I preached at both these places.

Tuesday, 24. I rode to Mr. Ogden's. Next day I spoke, but with little freedom, to an attentive yet unfeeling audience in Sussex court-house. My host, who appears to be a man of liberal sentiments, entertained me kindly.

I preached at New Market Plains to about one hundred hearers. I spoke freely in vindication of Methodism. It was strange, for I knew not until afterward that there were present those who come at no other time.

N. Y.] Growing Into Good Methodists.

Friday, 27. We had a trying journey to New York, the weather being excessively warm. I found my old friends, C. and W. L., at Newark, who appeared pleased to see me. We took the stage and reached York about eight o'clock. At York we found the people alive to God. There are about one hundred in society, and, with those in Philadelphia, to my mind, appear more like Methodists than I have ever yet seen them. My first discourse was for the benefit of poor stragglers who have not yet returned to the fold. The subject chosen was Rev. iii, 1-4.

Sunday, 29. In the evening I preached for the benefit of poor sinners on Job xxi, 15.

Monday, 30. My soul is alive to God. I visited, prayed, read, wrote, met the classes, and in the evening preached. I have found great consolation and fellowship in the classes.

N. J.] John Budd—Fellowship and Prayer.

Sunday, September 12. Preached at Penny Hill, and afterward at New Mills. I have been kept in peace, but find my adversary is not dead ; neither am I out of the body, or what I may be, or must be, before I see the kingdom of God. O my soul, keep near to God, and always watch and pray !

Monday, 13. I was weak and feverish ; sorely tempted, and much comforted. I walked over to John Budd's, a son of affliction. We spoke of the dealings of God with our own souls—not in vain ; we prayed, and parted in love. Two things seem to dim my prospects of heaven, in point of qualification—first, I do not speak enough for God ; and, secondly, I am not totally devoted to him. Lord, help me to come up to my duty !

Del.] Asbury Exhorting the Boys at School.

Saturday, October 2. I preached in our new chapel at Dover, in the State of Delaware, on faith, hope, charity. At Barratt's I believe I was alarming, on Isaiah iii, 10, 11. I was moved in the evening toward the boys in school at C. I spoke till they wept aloud. O my God, their parents fear thee ; bring them home, with them, to thyself !

Md.] First Visit to Kent Island.

Thursday, 14. I rode twenty miles to visit Kent Island for the first time. Here we had an unusual collection of people, and surely all was not in vain. We had a good time at Newcomb's. The word of God has greatly triumphed over the prejudices of rich and poor. We went on to Cambridge. Here

George, a poor negro in our society, we found under sentence of death for theft committed before he became a Methodist. He appeared to be much given up to God. He was reprieved under the gallows. A merchant, who cursed the negro for praying, died in horror. I pity the poor slaves. O that God would look down in mercy, and take their cause in hand!

Va.]

Three Days' Work.

Tuesday, November 2. After preaching at Garrettson chapel I rode to Col. Burton's, and was kindly received.

Friday, 5. I came back to Col. Burton's. Since I went from this house I have ridden about one hundred miles, spent five hours in delivering five public discourses, and ten hours in family and public prayer, and read two hundred pages in Young's Works. I have enjoyed great peace, and hope to see a great and glorious work.

Md.]

Asbury Meets Coke and Whatcoat.

Sunday, 14. I came to Barratt's chapel. Here, to my great joy, I met these dear men of God, Dr. Coke and Richard Whatcoat, and we were greatly comforted together. The doctor preached on "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption." Having had no opportunity of conversing with them before public worship, I was greatly surprised to see Brother Whatcoat assist by taking the cup in the administration of the sacrament. I was shocked when first informed of the intention of these my brethren in coming to this country. It may be of God. My answer then was, if the preachers unanimously choose me I shall not act in the capac-

ity I have hitherto done by Mr. Wesley's appointment. The design of organizing the Methodists into an Independent Episcopal Church was opened to the preachers present, and it was agreed to call a general conference, to meet at Baltimore the ensuing Christmas, as also that Brother Garrettson go off to Virginia to give notice thereof to our brethren in the south.

Del.] Dr. Coke Reviews Asbury's Field of Labor.

Monday, 15. I was very desirous the Doctor should go upon the track I had just been over, which he accordingly did. I came to Dover, and preached on Eph. v, 6 ; was close and, I hope, profitable.

Md.] Asbury Meets with Thomas Vasey.

Tuesday, 16. Rode to Bohemia, where I met with Thomas Vasey, who came over with the Doctor and R. Whatcoat. My soul is deeply engaged with God to know his will in this business.

His Approaching Elevation.

Friday, 26. I observed this day as a day of fasting and prayer, that I might know the will of God in the matter that is shortly to come before our conference. The preachers and people seem to be much pleased with the projected plan. I myself am led to think it is of the Lord. I am not tickled with the honor to be gained—I see danger in the way. My soul waits upon God. O that he may lead us in the way we should go ! Part of my time is, and must necessarily be, taken up with preparing for the conference.

Methodist Episcopal Church Organized—Asbury's Election
and Ordination.

Saturday, December 18. Spent the day at Perry Hall, partly in preparing for conference. My intervals of time I passed in reading the third volume of the British Arminian Magazine. Continued at Perry Hall until *Friday*, the twenty-fourth. We then rode to Baltimore, where we met a few preachers. It was agreed to form ourselves into an Episcopal Church, and to have superintendents, elders, and deacons. When the conference was seated Dr. Coke and myself were unanimously elected to the superintendency of the Church, and my ordination followed, after being previously ordained deacon and elder, as by the following certificate may be seen :

Know all men by these presents, that I, Thomas Coke, Doctor of Civil Law, late of Jesus College, in the University of Oxford, Presbyter of the Church of England, and Superintendent of the Methodist Episcopal Church in America, under the protection of Almighty God, and with a single eye to his glory, by the imposition of my hands and prayer, (being assisted by two ordained elders,) did on the twenty-fifth day of this month, December, set apart Francis Asbury for the office of a deacon in the aforesaid Methodist Episcopal Church. And also on the twenty-sixth day of the said month did, by the imposition of my hands and prayer, (being assisted by the said elders,) set apart the said Francis Asbury for the office of elder of the said Methodist Episcopal Church. And on this twenty-seventh day of the said month, being the day of the date hereof, have, by the imposition of

my hands and prayer, (being assisted by the said elders,) set apart the said Francis Asbury for the office of a superintendent in the said Methodist Episcopal Church, a man whom I judge to be well qualified for that great work. And I do hereby recommend him to all whom it may concern as a fit person to preside over the flock of Christ. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty-seventh day of December, in the year of our Lord 1784.

THOMAS COKE.

Twelve elders were elected, and solemnly set apart to serve our societies in the United States, one for Antigua, and two for Nova Scotia. We spent the whole week in conference, debating freely, and determining all things by a majority of votes. The Doctor preached every day at noon, and some one of the other preachers morning and evening. We were in great haste, and did much business in a little time.

Asbury's First Sermon after Ordination.

Monday, January 3, 1785. The conference is risen, and I have now a little time for rest. In the evening I preached on Eph. iii, 8, being the first sermon after my ordination. My mind was unsettled, and I was but low in my own testimony.

Va.]

Off to Virginia.

Tuesday, 4. I was engaged preparing for my journey southward. Rode fifty miles through frost and snow to Fairfax, Virginia, and got in about seven o'clock.

Thursday, 6. We had an exceeding cold ride to Prince William—little less than forty miles, and were

nearly two hours after night in getting to Brother Hale's.

Friday, 7. A calm day. I had Brother Hickson for my companion. We passed Fauquier court-house, and came to the north branch of the Rappahannock, which we found about waist high, and frozen from side to side. We pushed the ice out of the track which a wagon, well for us, had made, and got over safe. Pursuing our journey, we came to a little *ordinary* kept by one Whitehead. Here were some waggoners at cards in the front room, but this did not prevent our having prayers in the one adjoining. We slept in peace, and had only nine shillings and sixpence to pay in the morning.

Asbury Afraid of Self-estimation.

Saturday, 8. Rode to Brother Fry's to dinner, where I met with Brother Willis, who had stopped there on his way to the conference.

Sunday, 9. We read prayers, preached, ordained Brother Willis deacon, and baptized some children. I feel nothing but love. I am sometimes afraid of being led to think something more of myself in my new station than formerly.

N. C.]

Administering the Ordinances.

Friday, 28. My horse being unfit to travel, I borrowed another, and went on seventeen miles to Fisher's River, where I met with a few poor people. Thence we rode through the barren mountains, and crossed the frequent rivers in our course and came to W.'s. Next day I preached at Heady's, and rode on to Hindorn's in Wilkes county. Here we were

kindly entertained, although there were few people to preach to. Nothing could have better pleased our old Church folks than the late step we have taken in administering the ordinances ; to the *catholic* Presbyterians it also gives satisfaction, but the Baptists are discontented.

S. C.]

"Here and There a Horse Thief"

Thursday, February 3. Rode twenty miles to Witherspoon's. Here was a large assemblage of people ; some to pay and receive taxes, some to drink, and some to hear me preach. I gave them a rough talk on Rev. ii, 5-8. From this place we rode to Allen's. The people here are famous for talking about religion ; and here and there is a horse thief.

Asbury Baptizes by Immersion.

Monday, 7. I preached at Elsberry's, and rode thirty-one miles to Morgan Bryan's. The weather has been cold and uncomfortable. I have ridden on the horse I borrowed nearly three hundred miles in about nine days.

Tuesday, 8. I observed this as a day of abstinence. I preached and administered the sacrament and held a love-feast. Our friends were greatly comforted. Here I plunged four adults, at their own request, they being persuaded that this was the most proper mode of baptizing.

A Week in Charleston.

Monday, 28. The Calvinists, who are the only people in Charleston who appear to have any sense of religion, seem to be alarmed. Yesterday morning,

and again at noon, the congregations were small ; at night we were crowded. There is a great dearth of religion here ; some say never more so than at this time.

The people were a little moved while Brother Lee preached to them on *Sabbath* evening. My first sermon was on *Wednesday*, the second of *March*, on 2 Cor. v, 20. I had but little enlargement. I preached again the next day on Eccles. xi, 9. The people were solemn and attentive. I find there are here those who oppose us. I leave the Lord to look to his own cause. I told my hearers that I expected to stay in the city but seven days ; that I should preach every night, if they would favor me with their company, and that I should speak on subjects of primary importance to their souls, and explain the essential doctrines taught and held by the Methodists.

An Oasis in the Desert.

Sunday, March 13. Hearing of Brother Daniel at Town Creek, I resolved to make a push for his house. It was forty miles distant, and I did not start until nine o'clock. I dined at Lockwood's Folly, and got in about seven o'clock. O how happy was I to be received, and my dear friends to receive me ! I have been out for six weeks, and ridden near five hundred miles among strangers to me, to God, and to the power of religion. How could I live in the world if there were no Christians in it !

N. C.]

Merry, Drinking Raftsmen.

Saturday, 19. After preaching at Town Creek I rode in the evening to Wilmington. Night came on before we reached there, and from the badness of the

causeway I ran some risk. We went to ——'s, but he was not prepared to receive us ; afterward to ——'s, where we had merry, singing, drunken raftsmen. To their merriment I soon put a stop. I felt the power of the devil here.

"His Sermon was His Own"—Proof.

Sunday, 20. The bell went round to give notice, and I preached to a large congregation. When I had done, behold, F. Hill came into the room powdered off, with a number of fine ladies and gentlemen. As I could not get my horse and bags, I heard him out. I verily believe his sermon was his own, it was so much like his conversation. I came away well satisfied that I had delivered my own soul.

Va.]

Agitation—Dr. Coke—O'Kelly—Slavery.

Saturday, 30. I am much better in health. My sickness was made a blessing to me. Rode to W. Mason's, where we are to meet in conference. I found the minds of the people greatly agitated with our rules against slavery, and a proposed petition to the general assembly for the emancipation of the blacks. Colonel —— and Doctor Coke disputed on the subject, and the Colonel used some threats. Next day Brother O'Kelly let fly at them, and they were made angry enough ; we, however, came off with whole bones, and our business in conference was finished in peace.

Asbury Lodges in the Poor-House.

Thursday, 12. Rode to York, lately the seat of war. Here Lord Cornwallis surrendered to the combined

armies of America and France. The inhabitants are dissolute and careless. I preached to a few serious women at one o'clock, and, at the desire of the ladies, again at four o'clock. I came to Mrs. Rowe's: the son was once on our side; he has left us, and now we have the mother. I lodged in the poor-house.

Md.] Coke and Asbury Wait on General Washington.

Sunday, 22. Notwithstanding it rained, many attended of both rich and poor; but in the afternoon the wind or the rain kept the gentry away. Many of the common people heard gladly. From Annapolis we rode to Alexandria, to meet Dr. Coke. He did not come, however, until the next day.

Thursday, 26. We waited on General Washington, who received us very politely, and gave us his opinion against slavery.

Dr. Coke Takes Leave of America.

Wednesday, June 1. Our conference began. I was unwell during the session, a blister running, applied for a pain in my breast. On *Thursday* the Doctor took his leave of America for this visit. We parted with heavy hearts. On *Friday* we rested from our labors and had a love-feast.

Asbury Preaches the Foundation Sermon of Cokesbury College.

Sunday, 5. I rode to Abingdon, to preach the foundation sermon of Cokesbury College. I stood on the ground where the building is to be erected, warm as it was, and spoke from Psalm lxxviii, 4-8. I had liberty in speaking, and faith to believe the work would go on.

Va.]

At Bath.

Thursday, 28. Being in a good degree recovered, I felt thankful. My spirit is grieved at so much vanity as is seen here at Bath, by the many poor careless sinners around me. The living is expensive, four dollars per week. Capt. — is here, raised almost from the grave. I feel tenderly for him, and I hope God will convert his soul.

Sunday, 31. Mr. Keith gave us a sermon; very legal and to little purpose. In the afternoon I gave them my last discourse on Rom. i, 16.

Md.]

A New Chapel in Baltimore.

Thursday, August 4. Reached Baltimore. Our friends here have bought a lot, and are building a new chapel thereon, seventy by forty-six feet: it is well fixed for entrances and light.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

Tuesday, 23. I set off, very weak, for Philadelphia, and reached there on *Thursday* the 25th.

Sunday, 28. Preached a sacramental sermon on Rom. viii, 32. Our congregation was large in the evening, to whom I enlarged on Joshua xxiv, 19.

N. Y.]

In New York.

Wednesday, 31. Reached New York. Preached the three following days, although weak in body and languid in spirit.

Sunday, September 4. Notwithstanding I was very unwell, I preached thrice, read prayers twice, and held a love-feast. My flesh went heavily along. Our

society here has increased in number and grace ; our congregations also grow larger. I feel deeper desires to be given up to God. My friends here have been liberal indeed in supplying my temporal needs. May they be abundantly rewarded in spirituals !

Wednesday, 7. After preaching this morning I left the city. Overstaying the hour, the stage left us, and we found ourselves under the necessity of walking six miles. I dined with Mr. Ogden, and preached in Elizabethtown, in the unfinished church belonging to the Presbyterians.

N. J.]

At Salem—A Baptism.

Saturday, 24. Preached at Salem and at Stow Creek, with some consolation. Many attended, although it rained, and we had a comfortable time at sacrament. I plunged H. T. and S. M. in Salem Creek. This unusual baptismal ceremony might, perhaps, have made our congregation larger than it would otherwise have been. Lord, help me to keep on, under all my troubles of body and mind ! From Salem we proceeded on thirty miles through a great storm. We were glad to stop at Gloucester, where we had a room to ourselves, enjoying our Christian privileges, and were comfortable. Next morning we came on to Cooper's ferry, and although the wind blew violently in the morning, when we came to the ferry all was calm. We breakfasted in Philadelphia early enough for church.

Pa.]

In Chester and Wilmington.

Monday, 26. Set out for the south, and arrived at Chester. Next day preached at Mattson's. Arriving at Wilmington, I preached there on James i, 27.

Del.]

In Dover.

Saturday, October 1. Came to Dover. I had the court-house full of people, but I was not in possession of liberty of mind or strength of body to preach. The election is not yet over.

Monday, 3. We had a gracious season at the sacrament at Purdon's. That evening I rode to Brother White's, and was closely occupied with temporals.

Md.]

At Kent Old Chapel.

Saturday, 8. We had an open time, and the souls of the people were stirred up at Angiers. The Lord was also with us at Worten chapel in the afternoon.

Sunday, 9. I preached at Kent Old Chapel on "Ye have said it is vain to serve God." In the afternoon and night at Chestertown. I always have an enlargement in preaching in this very wicked place. The people to-day were very serious and attentive.

Asbury Exchanges his Jersey Wagon for a Sulky.

Sunday, November 6. Came away early. Arriving in Baltimore, preached at noon on Heb. xi, 2-8, and at night on Caleb's fully following the Lord. I found the means of conveyance by my carriage, or Jersey wagon, would not do.

Tuesday, 8. I preached at Annapolis to a multitude of people, part of whom were serious.

Wednesday, 9. I was under considerable exercise of mind about my carriage. I at length resolved to decline traveling in it, and buying a second-hand sulky, left it to be sold. I now traveled light and easy, and came to Child's church.

Va.]

Unwilling to be Idle.

Sunday, 27. I went to Chickahominy church, where conditional notice had been given for Brother Reed. I preached on Acts v, 31, and spent the evening at Mr. Welden's. My foot continuing in such a state as to prevent my going to my appointments, I was led to reflect on this dark providence. Unwilling to be idle, I wrote to the preachers to do what they could in collecting money to carry on the building of our college. For some time past I had not been quite satisfied with the order and arrangement of our form of discipline, and persuaded that it might be improved without difficulty, we accordingly set about it, and during my confinement in James City completed the work, arranging the subject-matter thereof under their proper heads, divisions, and sections.

Swampy Routes and Crazy Bridges.

Thursday, December 15. A solitary day this! plenty of water, if nothing else. We employed a black man to ride our horses, and we took to a canoe. Being remounted, and journeying on, we came to a stream that was impassable. We found ourselves under the necessity of going round by Martinsburg, and thus got into the road, and now pushed forward with spirit until we came to Swift's Creek. Here the causeway was overflowed, and the logs most of them afloat. My horse fell, but I was preserved by his securing a fore-foot hold on the timber after falling. Thus we toiled over our swampy routes and crazy bridges till seven o'clock, and about that time arrived at Neuse Ferry, having ridden about forty tedious miles.

N. C.] Asbury at Newbern and Beaufort.

Came to Newbern. Found Brothers A. and B. in the Church. I preached at three o'clock on "The world by wisdom knew not God." The assembly was in session, and some of the members were friendly.

Wednesday, 21. Sailed down to Beaufort, and preached in the church. The people are kind, but have very little religion. On the same evening I pushed down to the Straits, and the next day preached at the Straits chapel; thence I returned to town, and preached again, after which we sailed back to Colonel Bell's, whence we first started.

S. C.] Charleston Eighty-six Years Ago.

Friday, January 13, 1786. I came to Charleston. Being unwell, Brother Willis supplied my place.

Sunday, 15. We had a solemn time in the day, and a full house and good time in the evening. My heart was much taken up with God. Our congregations are large, and our people are encouraged to undertake the building of a meeting-house this year. Charleston has suffered much, a fire about 1700, again in November, 1740, and lastly the damage sustained by the late war. The city is now in a flourishing condition.

A High Breakfast.

Tuesday, 24. We made an early start, and stopped at a tavern for breakfast. The landlord had seen and heard me preach three years before in Virginia, and would receive no pay. That evening we came to Mrs. B.'s. We rode fifty miles to the Congaree, and

lodged where there were a set of gamblers. I neither ate bread nor drank water with them. We left these *blacklegs* early next morning, and after riding nine miles came to a fire, where, stopping and broiling our bacon, we had a *high* breakfast. At Weaver's ferry we crossed the Seleuda. Here once lived that strange, deranged mortal, who proclaimed himself to be God. Report says that he killed three men for refusing their assent to his godship. He gave out his wife to be the Virgin Mary, and his son Jesus Christ, and when hanged at Charleston promised to rise the third day.

N. C.]

Asbury when with the Poor.

Wednesday, February 8. We rode forty computed, and perhaps, in truth, fifty miles to quarterly meeting at Gordon's, at the Mulberry Fields, on the Yadkin River. Here we met with Brothers Ivey, Bingham, and Williamson. *Thursday*, the sacrament was a time of refreshing.

Saturday, 11. I rode through rain and hail to B.'s, and preached to a few serious people on Psalm cxxviii, and we were blessed together. O what happiness do they lose who never visit the poor in their cottages!

He Allows Nothing to Detain Him.

Sunday, 19. Preached at Morgan Bryan's. Next day I set off in the rain, and traveled with it. We swam Grant's creek, and reached Salisbury in the evening, wet and weary. I thought we should scarcely have preachers at the time appointed, but the bad weather did not stop their coming. We

spent three days in conference, and went through our business with satisfaction. Having sent our horses into the country, we could not get them when they were wanted. I therefore borrowed Brother Tunnell's horse, and went on to my appointments.

A Cool Reception at Hillsborough.

Friday, March 10. I rode once more to Hillsboro', where I met with a cool reception. I am now satisfied never to visit that place again until they have a society formed, constant preaching, and a desire to see me. O what a country this is! We can but just get food for our horses. I am grieved, indeed, for the sufferings, the sins, and the follies of the people.

Va.]

A Reinforcement.

Friday, April 7. I preached at Merritt's chapel with but little life. I rode to Mason's that night, much weakened through abstinence. A deep dejection seized my spirits, so that I could hardly bear up. On the *Sabbath day* I preached at Moss's to a large congregation. We went forward toward Lane's church, where our conference was held. Some spirits were tried before it ended. Here ten young men offered themselves on probation.

Md.]

Financiering.

Sunday, 23. Hail, glorious Lord! After deep exercises of body and mind I feel a solemn sense of God on my heart. I preached by day in the courthouse on 1 Pet. iii, 19, and in the evening at the Presbyterian church on Luke xix, 41, 42. Alexandria

must grow, and if religion prospers among them it will be blessed. I drew a plan, and set on foot a subscription for a meeting-house.

Wednesday, 26. Arrived in Baltimore, and was occupied until the following *Saturday* in collecting money for the books, and inspecting the accounts of the Book Concern.

Sunday, 30. I preached three times, and made a collection to defray the expenses of sending missionaries to the western settlements. I spoke twice on the same subject through the course of the week.

Va.]

Interview with Mr. Otterbein.

Sunday, June 4. The Lutheran minister began a few minutes before I got into Winchester. I rode leisurely through the town, and preached under some spreading trees on a hill on Joshua xxiv, 19, to many white and black people. It was a solemn, weighty time; all was seriousness and attention. I then went once more to Newtown. Here I preached on 2 Tim. iii, 16, 17. I had but little freedom in speaking. I called on Mr. Otterbein. We had some free conversation on the necessity of forming a Church among the Dutch, holding conferences, the order of its government, etc.

Pa.]

Going to the Frontiers.

Friday, 23. I was much blessed, and had many to hear at S. Litton's. We are now going to the frontiers, and may take a peep into the Indian land. This is a fruitful district, and I hope it will prosper in religion. I have lately been sorely assaulted by Satan, and much blessed of the Lord.

Va.]

Specially Wicked at Court Time.

Tuesday, 27. I had a large congregation, and Divine aid. We hasted away to a little town called Washington—wicked enough at all times, but especially now at court time. We had uncomfortable lodgings. Riding hard all day, and loss of sleep at night, never fail laying me under affliction.

Md.] Bad Roads—Little to Eat—Uncomfortable Lodgings.

Tuesday, July 4. I came to Barratt's, where God spoke to the hearts of a few souls, who were not a little moved. Here I was almost ready to drop for want of sleep.

I found an appointment had been made for me at Friend's Cove. I hesitated to go, but being unwilling to disappoint the people I set out, and must needs stray two miles out of my way to see a curious spring, which ebbs and flows, but not regularly. What with rocks and logs in our route, the way was so rough it was a mercy that ourselves and our horses escaped unhurt. I came to the Cove, and preached on Luke xi, 13. I have been greatly tempted to impatience and discontent. The roads are bad, my horse's hind feet without shoes, and but little to eat. To this I may add that the lodgings are unclean and uncomfortable. I rode across the mountain to Spurgin's, where I met with a number of serious souls. I do not repent coming fifteen miles. I preached on "That we may have boldness in the day of judgment." I rode twenty-two miles to Foster's, along a blind path, and came in about nine o'clock, and was thankful. I have, in six days, ridden about one hundred

and fifty miles, on as bad roads as any I have seen on the continent.

Va.] Asbury at Bath for Health but Hard at Work.

Sunday, August 6. I have spent twenty-three days at this place of wickedness, (Bath.) We are trying what can be done toward building a house for worship. We collected something on the Sabbath for that purpose, and it appears the business is entered upon with spirit. My horse was running in the pasture last week, and hurt himself, so that I find him utterly incapable of traveling, and that I am compelled to linger here another week. This, as it is, I am willing to do, for the sake of the people, the cause of God, and my health, and I am disposed to consider it a providential call, although I should not remain were my horse able to carry me away. I sent Brother B. to my appointments, and directed him when and where to appoint for me. My hopes revive here, and I trust my labor is not all in vain.

Md.] Slow Progress with the College.

Monday, 21. Reached Mr. Gough's, where I spent two days. The weather was very warm, but for one hundred miles and upward I have had it sufficiently agreeable. Came to Abingdon. Our college is still without a cover, and our managers, as I expected, almost out of breath. I made but little stay, but hasted on to Philadelphia, and arrived there on the twenty-sixth, Saturday.

N. J.] Northward Again.

Monday, 28. I came to Trenton, and thence proceeded on to Brunswick. I was accidentally, or

rather providentially, favored with a ride in a carriage, else I know not how I should have proceeded on my journey.

N. Y.] Asbury III in New York—His Journals.

Thursday, 31. I reached New York, having traveled three hundred and fifty miles since I left Bath, in Virginia. I was taken ill, and was confined about eight days, during which time I was variously tried and exercised in mind. I spent some time in looking over my journals, which I have kept for fifteen years back. Some things I corrected, and some I expunged. Perhaps, if they are not published before, they will be after my death, to let my friends and the world see how I have employed my time in America. I feel the worth of souls, and the weight of the pastoral charge, and that the conscientious discharge of its important duties requires something more than human learning, unwieldy salaries, or clerical titles of D.D., or even *bishop*. The eyes of all, both preachers and people, will be opened in time.

N. J.] Among the Sands of New Jersey.

Thursday, September 28. Since this day week we have ridden about one hundred and fifty miles over dead sands and among a dead people, and a long space between meals.

At Cape May.

Sunday, October 1. We stopped at the Cape. I find there is a great dearth of religion in these parts, and my spirit is clothed in sackcloth before the Lord.

Tuesday, 3. At P. Cresey's we had a few cold hearers. The glory is strangely departed,

Pa.] Asbury Meets with Whatcoat in Philadelphia.

Saturday, 14. Came to Sandstown. The weather very warm, and the people dull. I administered the sacrament, and rode away to Cooper's ferry, where we left our horses and crossed to the city, (Philadelphia.) Here I found Brother Whatcoat, with whom I took sweet counsel.

Sunday, 15. I had some energy in speaking and at sacrament. In the afternoon it was a feeling time on "The Lord will give grace and glory."

N. J.] A Flying Visit to New Jersey.

Monday, 16. Rode to Holly, where I preached on "Come, ye blessed of my Father," etc.; and then at New Mills on "Suffering affliction with the people of God."

At Burlington I enlarged on "Neither is there salvation in any other," etc. These are not a zealous people for religion.

Pa.] Back to Philadelphia.

Wednesday, 18. We returned to the city of Philadelphia. Next day I preached, and was close and pointed.

Friday, 20. I was led to treat on the sufferings of God's people as entirely distinct from those they endure in common with other men, and certainly unavoidable by all who are really alive to God. I found it necessary to change some official men, and to take proper steps in preparing to defray our Church debt, which is now £500. I gave them a sermon on "By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye love one another."

Del.]

Asbury in Dover.

Monday, 23. I rode forty-five miles to Dickenson's, in the Delaware State. Preached at Little Creek, and then rode five miles to Dover, and preached in the court-house. I bless God for peace of mind, and communion with him.

Va.]

At Garrettson Chapel.

Sunday, November 19. I rode about twenty miles through the rain to Garrettson Chapel, where about fifty whites and as many blacks met me, to whom I preached with liberty.

Del.]

At Lewistown Court-House.

Monday, 27. I rode thirty miles to Lewistown, very unwell. I preached at Shankland's, and the people were serious; but I was compelled to cease from speaking by a violent pain in my head, accompanied by a fever.

Tuesday, 28. I preached in the court-house at Lewistown, and I trust the word went with some weight. The congregation was large.

Md.]

Good News from Talbot Circuit.

Tuesday, December 5. I had a few people at Bolingbrook, and spent the evening with Colonel Burckhead, who wants to know the Lord. He opened his mind to me with great freedom and tenderness. Brother White says that five hundred souls have joined society in this circuit (Talbot) this year, that half that number profess to have found the Lord, and more than one hundred to have obtained sanctification. Good news this, if true.

The College and Book Concern.

Thursday, 21. Reached the college, and on *Friday* went to Baltimore, where I was in great haste to settle the business of the Book Concern and of the college.

Saturday, 23. We called a meeting of the trustees, formed our constitution, and elected new members. I preached twice on the Sabbath, and ordained Woolman Hickson and Joseph Cromwell to the eldership. I met the trustees and adjusted the accounts. We find we have expended upward of £2,000. We agreed to finish two rooms, and to send for Mr. Heath for our president.

Va.]

Asbury Off to Virginia.

On *Tuesday* I left town, and came to Annapolis about seven o'clock. Finding my appointments were not made, I determined to direct my course toward Alexandria. The Lord has been powerfully at work at Annapolis since I was here last autumn; twenty or thirty whites and some blacks have been added to the society.

I reached Alexandria, and on *Saturday* preached in the court-house on "If we suffer, we shall also reign with him."

Asbury Begins the Year with Hard Work.

January 1, 1787. Preached at Brother Moss's on 2 Chronicles xv, 12, 13, on the people's entering into covenant with God.

Tuesday, 2. We rode near fifty miles on our way to Westmoreland. Next day, by hard riding, we came to Pope's, in Westmoreland; but I have not been more weary many times in my life.

Saturday and Sunday. Attended the quarterly meeting in the Northern Neck. There were many simple and loving testimonies delivered in the love-feast.

A Famous Heroine for Christ.

Wednesday, 17. I had a crowd of careless sinners at Mrs. Ball's, who is a famous heroine for Christ. A lady came by craft and took her from her own house, and with tears, threats, and entreaties, urged her to desist from receiving the preachers and Methodist preaching, but all in vain. She had felt the sting of death some years before, and was a most disconsolate soul. Having now found the way, she would not depart therefrom.

Asbury's Trust in Providence Confirmed.

Saturday, February 3. Visited my old friend Fullford. He is feeble in body, and not much at ease in his worldly possessions, yet happy in God.

Brother Poythress frightened me with the idea of the Great Swamp, the east end of the Dismal; but I could not consent to ride sixty miles round, so we ventured through, and neither we nor our horses received any injury. Praise the Lord! Our passing unharmed through such dangers and unhealthy weather feelingly assures me that I am kept by the immediate interposition of his providence. I preached in the new chapel, I hope not in vain. I am now surrounded with waters and hideous swamps, near the head of Pasquotank River.

N. C.] Newbern—Left the People as He Found Them.

Thursday, 22. We set off for Newbern. Stopped at Kemp's Ferry, kept by Curtis, where we were

kindly entertained *gratis*. I feel heaviness through labor and temptation, yet I am given up to God.

Friday, 23. I arrived at Newbern. I felt the power of death as I journeyed along. We rode round the town, and could get no certain information about preaching, Brother Cole being absent. We were at last taken in at Mr. Lathrop's. The place and people were in such a state, that I judged, by my own feelings, it would be as well to leave them just as I found them, and so I did.

S. C.] Methodism obtains a Foot-hold in Georgetown and Charleston.

Sunday, March 11. Preached at Robinson's new court-house. Rode in the evening to M.'s. Crossed Little Pedee, stopped at S.'s, ate a morsel, and came on to Buck Swamp.

Thursday, 15. Preached at the new church at S.'s. Here I heard that Doctor Coke was in Charleston. Proceeded thence to Widow Port's, where I had much ado to prevail on Brother H. to stay.

We rode nearly fifty miles to get to Georgetown. Here the scene was greatly changed—almost the whole town came together to hear the word of the Lord.

We arrived in Charleston and met Dr. Coke. Here we have already a spacious house prepared for us, and the congregations are crowded and solemn.

N. C.] Coke and Asbury in Company.

Saturday, April 14. We hasted to C——y church, where we had many people. After riding twenty-two miles we had another meeting about six o'clock, and about midnight got to bed.

Sunday, 15. Rose about six o'clock, and went to

Newman's church, where the Doctor and myself both preached. The people were rather wild, and we were unwell. I came to Arnat's at about eight o'clock, having ridden forty miles. The Doctor went by Dick's ferry, and did not get in until near midnight.

Monday, 16. Rode to Jeremiah White's, and on *Tuesday*, about fifty miles to Page Mann's, in Charlotte county, Virginia.

Wednesday, 18. Rode to Rough Creek. On *Thursday, 19th*, our conference began at William White's. We had much preaching morning, noon, and night, and some souls were converted to God.

Saturday, 21. I gave them a discourse on Jeremiah iii, 15 : " And I will give you pastors according to my heart."

Sunday, 22. The Doctor spoke on the qualifications of a deacon, and I gave them a charge. Some said there were three thousand people to hear. It was a solemn, weighty time.

Md.] Rapid Movements.

Monday, May 6. After much fatigue and trouble our conference ended. We had some warm and close debates, but all ended in love and peace. We went forward to Perry Hall. Thence we went to Cokesbury. Drew a deed, or the conveyance of the property of the college, and settled our temporal matters there.

Wednesday, 9. Many attended at Elkton. We were received by the Rudolph family with great respect.

Thursday, 10. We attended at Wilmington at noon, and at Chester at night.

Friday, 11. We reached Philadelphia, where the

Doctor preached that and the following evening. We spent the *Sabbath* in the city, and on *Monday* came to Trenton, where we found a lifeless people.

N. J.] Dr. Coke at Elizabethtown and New York.

Tuesday, 15. The Doctor preached with life in the Episcopal church at Elizabethtown, and we had a good time.

Wednesday, 16. Arrived in New York, and rested. On *Friday*, *Saturday*, *Sunday*, and *Monday* the Doctor preached with great energy and acceptance.

N. Y.] Asbury on Long Island.

Tuesday, 22. After long silence, I preached on "For Zion's sake I will not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest."

Rode twenty miles on Long Island to Hempstead Harbor, and preached with some liberty in the evening. I am now out of the city, and have time to reflect. My soul turns to its rest, and to its labor for souls, in which I can live more by rule.

He Finds the Right Kind of Hearers.

Sunday, 27. I came to Harper's, where we have a little new house and about thirty members. I hope and expect, in a few years, to see a circuit of six weeks formed here, and four or five hundred members in society. The people on this island who hear the Gospel are generally poor, and these are the kind I want and expect to get. I have had great assistance and freedom in speaking.

Ordains Ezekiel Cooper Deacon.

Sunday, *June* 3. I had a gracious time on 2 Cor. iv, 1-4. Ordained E. Cooper a deacon. In the after-

noon my soul had peace while I enlarged on Matt. xviii, 15, to the end.

In Great Union with the Church and the Lord.

Sunday, 10. I had some life in preaching on Luke iv, 18, and in the afternoon on "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent," etc.

I left the city in great union with the Lord and with the Church. My soul is variously exercised. I want the country air, and to live more in the spirit and solitude of prayer. Came to East Chester and preached in the shell of the new church on "To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts." The power of God was felt. I came to the Widow Bartoe's, where I lay sick fifteen years ago, and was treated with the greatest tenderness. May the Lord reward them all a hundred fold, and convert their souls!

"Will it Always be So?"

Tuesday 12. I found it the same at New Rochelle town as in time past. Will it always be so? If there is no change I shall trouble them no more. In the afternoon I rode to C.'s, where I labored many years ago, and there is some fruit remaining to this day.

West Point.

Saturday, 16. Rode over the mountain, and was gratified with the sight of a remarkable recess for the Americans during the last war. The names of Andre and Arnold, with which misfortune and treachery are so unhappily and intimately blended, will give celebrity to West Point, had it been less deserving of

notice than its wonderful appearance really makes it. It is commanded by mountains rising behind, and appears to be impregnable. There are block-houses on the east, and on the west stores, barracks, and fortifications. From West Point we crossed a high mountain and came to Newburg.

N. J.] Asbury Stimulated by Large Congregations.

Wednesday, 20. I came to Warwick, where I suppose not less than a thousand people were collected. I was very low both in body and spirit, but felt stirred up at the sight of such a congregation, and was moved and quickened while I enlarged on Gal. i, 4. I baptized some, and administered the sacrament to many communicants.

Pa.] Firebrands in Philadelphia.

Wednesday, 27. We had a warm ride, through a fertile, pleasant country, to Trenton, and on *Thursday, the 28th*, to Philadelphia. Here I found T. V. had scattered fire-brands, and thrown dirt to bespatter us.

Friday and Saturday, 29, 30. Taken up in writing letters, packing up books, and begging for the college.

Sunday, July 1. Preached three times in the city of Philadelphia—on *Monday*, to a few simple-hearted souls at Radnor.

Va.] At the Springs.

Monday, 16. Set out for the Springs. In the first place we missed our way, then my baggage-horse ran back two miles. I was tried not a little. O how sad the reflection that matters trifling as these should make a person so uneasy! We reached the Springs

about seven o'clock. I preached the two following days with some satisfaction. By advancing £9 for nails and planks, I engaged Brother Eaton to have our chapel covered by the first of August.

Md.]

A Good Time at Bell's and Barratt's.

Tuesday, 24. There were to have been great doings at Cumberland, but Mr. B., a minister, failed coming. I had a good time in Mr. Bell's mill on "Thou art fairer than the sons of men."

We had feeling and weeping at Barratt's; my subject, "I sleep, but my heart waketh," etc., eight or nine verses. I feel a sweetness of spirit and much of the love of Christ. Came to Cressap's.

"At Jones's all Death! Death! Death!"

Sunday, 29. At Jones's all death! death! death! My mind was devoted to God. I administered the sacrament, but could find no openings. Rode to Old Town. Six years ago I preached in this place when there was scarcely a soul that knew any thing of God; now there are sixty in membership, many of whom are happy in the knowledge of the truth. We held a love-feast, and had a quickening time.

Va.]

"Life a Weariness without God, Love, and Labor."

Friday, August 10. I feel a calm within and the want of more life, and more love to God, and more patience with sinners. I read my Testament. O what a weariness without God, and love, and labor! The first two weeks of my time at Bath have been spent in carrying on the building of the new chapel, reading Newton on the Prophecies, visiting, bathing,

etc. My soul has been under great trials at times ; hitherto the Lord has helped.

Md.]

A Week of Haste in Business.

Sunday, September 9. Preached in the morning, my text, "Thou art fairer than the sons of men." In the afternoon at Mr. Otterbein's church, and at night on "They shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south," etc. Large crowds attended. I was straitened in speaking. The following was a week of haste and business. *Wednesday*, I went to Perry Hall, thence to Cokesbury ; fixed the price of board, and the time for opening the college. On *Friday*, I returned to Baltimore. In the midst of business my mind is calm.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

Tuesday, 25. I attended at Chester, and next day came to Philadelphia. I had liberty in speaking on Cant. v, 6-10. On *Thursday* and *Friday*, I had not freedom as I wished. I was seized with a violent headache, exceeding any thing, as I thought, I had ever felt.

Saturday, 29. I felt a little better. My mind was stayed upon God.

Sunday, 30. We had a good sacramental occasion. In the afternoon Brother Willis preached, and at night I had some enlargement on Ephes. iv, 17-19.

Wednesday, October 3. I met the people, and explained the nature and design of the college.

Thursday, 4. I preached on the primitive design of the Church.

Del.] Jacob Brush and Ira Ellis Ordained Deacons.

Saturday, 13. Came to Dover very unwell, and Brother I. E. preached in my stead.

Sunday, 14. I read prayers, and preached on 2 Tim. iii, 10, and solemnly set apart Jacob Brush and Ira Ellis for the office of deacon. I trust it was a profitable time. I spent two days at Thomas White's.

Md.] Opening of Cokesbury College.

Thursday, December 6. We opened our college, and admitted twenty-five students. I preached on "Trust in the Lord, and do good." On the *Sabbath* I spoke on "O man of God, there is death in the pot;" and on *Monday*, "They are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them." From Cokesbury I came to Baltimore, where I was closely employed, and much in haste about temporal concerns.

Brother H. was Glad to Resign.

Saturday, 15. I had a cold ride to Annapolis, and but few to hear me on *Sunday* morning. Brother H. attempted to travel with me, but was soon glad to resign. My soul has been kept in peace, and for three weeks past I have enjoyed a most devoted frame of mind.

"When I Awake I am Still With Thee."

Sunday, 23. I had a very little life in preaching to a few dead souls at Pope's. On *Monday*, at Hutt's, it was nearly the same both in preaching and sacrament. In the evening, at Brother Cannon's, the Lord powerfully broke into my soul, and the cloud disap-

peared. That night, while sleeping, I dreamed I was praying for sanctification, and God very sensibly filled me with love, and I waked shouting Glory, glory to God! My soul was all in a flame. I had never felt so much of God in my life, and so I continued. This was on Christmas day—a great day to me.

N. C.]

Peter's Denial of His Master.

Sunday, February 17, 1788. I had about five hundred hearers at Samson court-house, to whom I enlarged on Peter's denial of his Master. 1. He was self-confident. 2. Followed afar off. 3. Mixed with the wicked. 4. Denied his discipleship, and then his Lord.

Tuesday, 19. At Fayetteville I was unable to preach. *Wednesday* we pushed on for the south State, but being unacquainted with the way, we fell ten miles too low, and after riding as many in the night, we ended our blunders and our fatigue for that day at S.'s, who used us kindly.

S. C.] Conference at Charleston—Riotous Demonstrations.

Friday, March 14. Our conference began, and we had a very free, open time. *Saturday* night I preached on "I have set watchmen upon thy walls," etc. On the *Sabbath*, on "The Lord turned and looked on Peter," etc. It was a gracious season, both in the congregation and in the love-feast. While another was speaking in the morning to a very crowded house, and many outside, a man made a riot at the door. An alarm at once took place, the ladies leaped out at the windows of the church, and a dreadful confusion ensued. Again, while I was speaking at night, a

stone was thrown against the north side of the church, then another on the south, and a third came through the pulpit window and struck near me inside the pulpit. I however continued to speak on; my subject, "How beautiful upon the mountains," etc.

Upon the whole, I have had more liberty to speak in Charleston this visit than I ever had before, and am of opinion that God will work here. But our friends are afraid of the cross.

Ga.]

Conference in Georgia.

Wednesday, April 9. Our conference began at the Forks of Broad River, where six members and four probationers attended. Brother Major was sick, and could not meet us. Soon after he made his exit to his eternal rest.

Thursday and Friday, 10, 11. I felt free, and preached with light and liberty each day. Many that had no religion in Virginia have found it after their removal into Georgia and South Carolina. Here at least the seed sprung up, wherever else it may have been sown. Our little conference was about sixty-one pounds deficient in their quarterage, nearly one third of which was made up to them.

S. C.]

Journeying in South Carolina.

Sunday, 13. I called at a Presbyterian meeting-house, and heard Mr. Hall, the minister, preach a good sermon on Isa. lv. After meeting we rode to Brother Moore's, twenty miles on the Seleuda.

Monday, 14. Was almost entirely occupied with writing letters to the north.

Tuesday, 15. I had many people at the Widow Bowman's. While here we had a most awful storm. I was afraid the house would come down. We rode in the night to M. Moore's. I was seized with illness on the way, which continued during the night. Next day, however, I was able to pursue my journey.

N. C.]

An Awful Journey.

Sunday, 27. I preached at the Globe, on the main branches of John's River, where there are a few who fear God. There was some stir, and I hope some good done.

Monday, 28. After getting our horses shod we made a move for Holstein, and entered upon the mountains, the first of which I called steel, the second stone, and the third iron mountain. They are rough and difficult to climb. We were spoken to on our way by most awful thunder and lightning, accompanied by heavy rain. We crept for shelter into a little dirty house where the filth might have been taken from the floor with a spade. We felt the want of fire, but could get little wood to make it, and what we gathered was wet. At the head of Watauga we fed, and reached Ward's that night. Coming to the river next day, we hired a young man to swim over for the canoe, in which we crossed while our horses swam to the other shore. The waters being up, we were compelled to travel an old road over the mountains. Night came on, I was ready to faint with a violent headache, and the mountain was steep on both sides. I prayed to the Lord for help. Presently a profuse sweat broke out upon me, and my fever entirely subsided. About nine o'clock we came to

Grear's. After taking a little rest here we set out next morning for Brother Coxe's on Holstein River. I had trouble enough. Our route lay through the woods, and my pack-horse would neither follow, lead, nor drive, so fond was he of stopping to feed on the green herbage. I tried the lead, and he pulled back. I tied his head up to prevent his grazing, and he ran back. The weather was excessively warm. I was much fatigued, and my temper not a little tried. I fed at I. Smith's, and prayed with the family. Arriving at the river, I was at a loss what to do, but providentially a man came along who conducted me across. This has been an awful journey to me, and this a tiresome day, and now, after riding seventy-five miles, I have thirty-five miles more to General Russell's. I rest one day to revive man and beast.

Va.]

Asbury in Virginia.

Saturday, May 3. We came to General Russell's; a most kind family in deed and in truth.

Sunday, 4. Preached on Phil. ii, 5-9. I found it good to get alone in prayer.

Tuesday, 6. I had many to hear at Easley's on Holstein. I was much wearied with riding a strange horse, having left mine to rest. It is some grief that I cannot be so much in prayer on the road as I would be. We had a good time and a large congregation at K.'s.

Tenn.]

Conference in Tennessee.

Monday, 12. Came to Half-Acres and Keywoods, where we held conference three days, and I preached each day. The weather was cold, the room without

fire, and otherwise uncomfortable. We nevertheless made out to keep our seats until we had finished the essential parts of our business.

Thursday, 15. We came to General Russell's, and on *Friday* to I. Smith's, on the south fork of Holstein River.

N. C.]

Forty-five Miles a Day.

Friday, 23. Was a damp, rainy day, and I was unwell with a slow fever and pain in my head. However I rode to Smith's chapel and preached, and thence to Brother Harrison's, on Dan River, and preached. In the space of one week we have ridden, through rough, mountainous tracts of country, about three hundred miles. Brothers Poythress, Tunnell, and myself have had serious views of things, and mature counsels together.

Asbury Can Bear Methodist Noise.

Monday, June 2. Preached at Moore's in Northampton; once a poor, dead people, but now revived, and increased from eleven to sixty members.

We had much of the power of God at Clark's. Sixty members, among whom are some children, are the subjects of this work. I feel life among these people. Preaching and praying is not labor here. Their noise I heed not; I can bear it well when I know that God and Christ dwell in the hearts of the people. Thence I passed through Southampton, where I also beheld the power of God manifested in several lively meetings.

Va.]

Conference in Virginia.

Rode to and rested with Philip Davis. On *Saturday* I had a feeling, living time on Psa. lxxxv, 9, 10.

Sunday, 8. We had a gracious season : it was a memorable day, and my soul was much blessed. After meeting we hastened to Petersburg, where I preached on 2 Cor. v, 20. Our elders and deacons met for conference ; all things were brought on in love. The town folks were remarkably kind and attentive ; the people of God in much love.

Crossing the Alleghany.

Thursday, *July* 10. We had to cross the Alleghany Mountain again at a bad passage. Our course lay over mountains and through valleys and the mud and mire was such as might scarcely be expected in December. We came to an old, forsaken habitation in Tyger's Valley. Here our horses grazed about, while we boiled our meat. Midnight brought us up at Jones's, after riding forty, or perhaps fifty miles. The old man, our host, was kind enough to wake us up at four o'clock in the morning. We journeyed on through devious, lonely wilds, where no food might be found, except what grew in the woods or was carried with us. We met with two women who were going to see their friends, and to attend the quarterly meeting at Clarksburg. Near midnight we stopped at A——'s, who hissed his dogs at us ; but the women were determined to get to quarterly meeting, so we went in. Our supper was tea. Brothers Phœbus and Cook took to the woods ; old —— gave up his bed to the women. I lay along the floor on a

few deer-skins with the fleas. That night our poor horses got no corn, and the next morning they had to swim across the Monongahela. After a twenty miles' ride we came to Clarksburg, and man and beast were so outdone that it took us ten hours to accomplish it. I lodged with Col. Jackson. Our meeting was held in a room belonging to the Baptists. Our use of the house gave offense. There attended about seven hundred people, to whom I preached with freedom; and I believe the Lord's power reached the hearts of some. After administering the sacrament I was well satisfied to take my leave.

"The Lame and the Blind."

Sunday, August 17. I attempted to preach at Bath on "The lame and the blind:" the discourse was very *lame*; and it may be I left my hearers as I found them—*blind*.

Md.] Asbury at Work for Cokesbury College.

Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, September 15, 16, 17, were spent at Cokesbury in examining and arranging the temporal concerns of the college.

Pa.] Conference at Philadelphia.

Sunday, 21. I preached with some satisfaction, morning and evening, in Philadelphia. On *Monday* our conference began and held until *Friday, 26.*

N. J.] Asbury at Elizabethtown.

Sunday, 28. Preached in Elizabethtown.

N. Y.] Conference at New York.

Monday, 29. Rode to New York. Next day (*Tuesday, 30*) our conference began, and continued until *Saturday, the 4th of October.*

N. J.] Asbury Returns Through New Jersey.

Sunday and *Monday, October 5, 6.* My soul was uncommonly led out in prayer and preaching—I found it a very gracious season. My return brought me through Elizabethtown, Amboy, Hydestown, Crossweeks, and Burlington.

Del.] Again in Dover.

Sunday, 12. I was much depressed in spirit while in Philadelphia. I left there on *Wednesday*, and preached at Chester, where I had some energy ; and had openings at Wilmington and Duck Creek, where I also administered the word of life.

Monday, 20. Our meeting in Dover was attended with some power. At Milford we had liberty and love. At Johnstown I was very unwell, and was under the necessity of going to bed, but our friends were alive : God is with them of a truth. Preached at Shankland's. My soul enjoys great peace and love. On *Sunday* I was under bodily affliction, but I went to the Court-house and spoke a few words on "Ye will not come to me that ye might have life." We have a house now building, and I hope something will be done here.

Va.] For and Against Slavery.

Saturday, November 1. Attended a quarterly meeting at Garrettson Chapel. O how changed ! A preacher absent nearly nine weeks from his circuit, failing to give proper notice of the quarterly meeting. Other persuasions are less supine ; and their minister boldly preaches against the freedom of the

slaves ; our Brother Everett, with no less zeal and boldness, cries aloud for liberty—emancipation.

Sunday, 2. Brother Whatcoat preached, and I exhorted a little. We rode fifteen miles that evening, and held meeting again.

Md.] Methodists Emancipate their Slaves.

At Annamessex quarterly meeting I was at liberty on Rev. iii, 20. Again I preached on “Fear not, little flock,” etc. Most of our members in these parts have freed their slaves.

Del.] A Shout Among the People.

Saturday and Sunday, 22, 23. Attended quarterly meeting at William Frazier’s. There was some quickening among the people each day.

We crossed Choptank to Bolingbroke—death ! death ! The second day of our meeting a great power went through the congregation, and a noble shout was heard among the people.

I was much led out at the Bayside. At Doctor Allen’s I was greatly comforted, after a wet ride of thirty miles.

I preached at Queenstown to a few people, who appear to be far gone in forgetfulness of God.

Md.] Attempt to Burn Cokesbury College.

Monday, December 8. Rode to Cecil Court-house, and had a profitable time. We crossed Elk River to Brother Ford’s, and had a gracious meeting at his house.

Tuesday, 9. We had a damp ride to Cokesbury, and found it was even as it had been reported to us. An attempt had been made to burn the college by putting fire into one of the closets ; but some of the

students made a timely discovery, and it was extinguished. I stayed two days and expended more than £100, and felt my spirit tried. I put the young men to board in the college. We have some promising youths among them for learning, but they want religion.

I came to Baltimore, and found some tokens of the Divine Presence, at the quarterly meeting, on Chron. xv, 8, "Thou canst save by many, or by those that have no might."

Va.] *An Offensive Smell of Rum.*

Christmas day. I preached in the open house at Fairfield's, on Isaiah ix, 6. I felt warm in speaking; but there was an offensive smell of rum among the people.

N. C.] *The Lord at Work—Good Times.*

Saturday and Sunday, January 17, 18, 1789. Preached at Whitaker's Chapel, where we had a profitable time. I found God had been working, and that many souls had been awakened.

We came to J.'s. In this neighborhood the Christians are singularly devoted, but sinners yet stand it out. The Lord has begun to work on Sandy Creek, in Franklin County, where twenty souls have been lately brought to God. Came to Bemnet Hills, hungry and unwell. My soul enjoys much of God.

S. C.] *Hunger, Fatigue, and Fever.*

Tuesday, February 3. Came to the Green Ponds, where there was an appointment for me. I have ridden about one hundred and forty miles in the last seven days, through a very disagreeable part of the country to travel when the waters are high: I have

had various exercises, and have suffered hunger, fatigue, and fever, and have not had a comfortable bed for a week past.

Coke and Asbury Find a Pulpit Competitor.

Thursday, 26. Rode to Bruton's, and enjoyed uncommon happiness in God. Some time in the night Dr. Coke came in; he had landed in Charleston about three hours after I left the city; next day he and myself both spoke at Ridgell's.

Sunday, March 1. We spent the day at Chester's. We had a very few hearers, occasioned, in part, by a black man's preaching not far distant.

Ga.] Georgia Conference on Education.

Sunday, 8. Our conference began at Grant's. Here we have a house for public worship, and one also at Merreweather's. On *Thursday* we appointed a committee to procure five hundred acres of land for the establishment of a school in the State of Georgia. Conference being ended, we directed our hasty steps back to Charleston, calling at the several places we attended on our journey hither.

S. O.] Charleston Conference—Unkind Attack.

Sunday 15. We reached the city, having ridden two hundred miles in about five days and two hours. Here I received a *bitter pill* from one of my greatest friends. Praise the Lord for my trials also—may they all be sanctified!

Tuesday, Wednesday, and Thursday, 17, 18, 19, were spent in conference. It was a time of peace and love. My mind was much hurried with book and other temporal concerns. We had an unkind attack pub-

lished against us relative to our slave rules ; it was answered to purpose. I had not much doubt who the author of this unworthy work was.

N. C.] Asbury Cares for the Indians.

Wednesday, April 1. The people came together at Jackson's at twelve o'clock. I did not reach there until three. I enlarged a little on Zech. xiii, 12, and was somewhat severe. I rode to Savannah Creek, and met with an Antinomian people. Reached Threadgill's, after having been out twelve hours, and ridden nearly forty miles, without food for man or beast.

Friday, 3. Preached by the way, and came to Randall's, twenty miles. We have ridden three hundred miles in about nine days, and our horses' backs are bruised with their loads. I want more faith, patience, and resignation to the will of God in all things. I wish to send an extra preacher to the Waxsaws to preach to the Catawba Indians: they have settled among the whites on a tract of country twelve miles square.

Va.] Conference at Leesburg.

Friday, 24. We rode about fifty miles, and next day reached Fredericksburg, but found no door open. We met with one soul in distress.

Sunday, 26. Having no appointment to preach, we pushed on and rode forty-five miles, and lodged in Prince William county.

Monday, 27. Arrived at Leesburg, and opened the conference. We found a little rest comfortable to man and advantageous to beast.

Md.] Conversions in Baltimore and Cokesbury College.

Sunday, May 3, was a great day to saints and sinners. God has wrought wonderfully in Brother Pigman's neighborhood. Fifty or sixty souls have been suddenly and powerfully converted to God.

Came to Baltimore, and had very lively meetings. Multitudes came to hear, and great cries were heard among the people, who continued together until three o'clock in the morning. Many souls professed to be convicted, converted, sanctified.

On reaching Cokesbury we found that here also God was working among the students. One, however, we expelled. We revised our laws, and settled our temporal concerns.

N. J.] Conference at Trenton.

Thursday, 21. Rode to Burlington, in Jersey. In crossing the Delaware we encountered an uncommon storm, but were providentially brought safely over. We were comfortable in our meeting, but we had a painful interview and explanation with L. H. H. O my soul, keep near to God!

Friday, 22. We rode to Trenton, and on *Saturday, 23*, opened our conference in great peace. We labored for a manifestation of the Lord's power, and it was not altogether in vain.

N. Y.] The Work Opens in New York State and in New England.

Thursday, 28. Our conference began. All things were conducted in peace and order. Our work opens in New York State. New England *stretcheth out the hand* to our ministry, and I trust thousands will shortly feel its influence. In the midst of haste I find peace within.

Sunday, 31. We had a gracious season to preachers and people, while I opened and applied Isaiah xxv, 6-8.

Dr. Coke Sails for England.

Friday, June 5. Dr. Coke left us and went on board the *Union* for Liverpool. My soul retires into solitude, and to God. This evening I was enabled to speak alarmingly, and felt my heart much engaged for about thirty minutes on Isaiah xxix, 17-19. The power of God and a baptizing flame came among the people.

Asbury in Dutchess County.

Sunday, 14. Preached at Jackson's, in Dutchess county, to a considerable number of quiet hearers ; I hope not in vain. Brother Cook is low in body, but his soul is solidly happy in God, who will be glorified in his life or death. The people here are a still kind of folks ; but God can work in a storm or a calm.

"The Poor First."

Friday, 19. I preached in a barn on the North River. My hearers were chiefly Low Dutch. Our congregations are small. *The craft is in danger.* We are therefore not to wonder if we meet opposition. To begin at the right end of the work is to go first to the *poor*; these *will*, the rich *may possibly* hear the truth. There are among us those who have blundered here. I feel as if I wanted to get across the river. I am pressed in spirit, and pity our preachers who labor here. It seems as if I should die among this people with exertions and grief.

N. J.] "No Desire to See Them Again."

Thursday, 25. I was sick. Brother Whatcoat gave them a sermon at Warwick on the "wages of sin," and I gave them a finishing exhortation. I have no desire to see them again until there is some change.

Pa.] Asbury Not Satisfied with Results in Philadelphia.

Friday, July 3. Came to Philadelphia. Here I found enough to do. My soul longs for more religion in this city. I am distressed for these people. Twenty years have we been laboring in Pennsylvania, and there are not one thousand in society. How many of these are truly converted God knows.

Sunday, 5. We had a dead time. O that the Almighty would bless and stir up this people!

Not Cordially Received at Carlisle.

Friday, 10. I called on Mr. H., a Dutch Presbyterian minister. He and his wife were both very kind. I believe they are children of God. I had an interview with Mr. M., a Lutheran minister and teacher of languages. He is a child-like, simple-hearted man, and has a considerable knowledge of the arts and sciences. We came to York, but I felt no desire to preach. I proceeded on to Carlisle. In the morning I was permitted to preach in the church, but in the evening this privilege was denied me. It was said the reason was, because I did not read prayers, which I had forborne to do because of my eyes. I apprehend the true cause might be found in the pointed manner in which I spoke on "Blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me." I went to the court-house and called them to repentance

from "Look unto me, and be ye saved, all ye ends of the earth," to the great offense of all who set themselves up for judges, and who declared it was no preaching.

Md.] Candidates for the Ministry Increasing.

Friday, 31. I crossed the mountain, and lodged, I trust for the last time, at S.'s. Preached at Barratt's to a dry, unfaithful people. The number of candidates for the ministry are many ; from which circumstance I am led to think the Lord is about greatly to enlarge the borders of Zion.

Va.] "Not Born to Riches."

Friday, August 7. Came to Bath. I took lodgings with our Virginia friends, Adams and Summers.

Saturday, 8. My soul has communion with God even here. When I behold the conduct of the people who attend the Springs, particularly the *gentry*, I am led to thank God that I was not born to riches. I have read much and spoken but little since I came here. The water has been powerful in its operation. I have been in great pain, and my studies are interrupted.

A High Day at Shepherdstown.

Saturday, 29. Our quarterly meeting began in the woods near Shepherdstown. We had about seven hundred people. I felt energy and life in preaching, and power attended the word. Brother Willis spoke, and the Lord wrought powerfully.

Sunday, 30. Was a high day—one thousand or fifteen hundred people attended ; sinners began to

mock, and many cried aloud. I was wonderfully led out on Psalm cxlv, 8-12, and spoke, first and last, nearly three hours. O how the wicked contradicted and opposed!

Md.]

"A Wonder-working Time."

Monday, September 7. Preached at Rowle's. Here fifty or sixty souls profess to have been brought to God in a few weeks. We had a shout, and a soul converted to God. I preached in the evening at Baltimore on "Lord, increase our faith."

Tuesday, 8. Preached in town and at the Point. The last quarterly meeting was a wonder-working time: fifty or sixty souls appeared to be brought to God; people were daily praying from house to house, some crying for mercy, others rejoicing in God, and not a few joining in society for the benefit of a religious fellowship. Praise the Lord, O my soul! I spent some time in visiting from house to house and begging for the college. The married men and single men, the married women and single women, I met apart and was comforted. Many of the children of the Methodists are the happy subjects of this glorious revival. We have more members in Baltimore (town and Point) than in any city or town on the continent besides.

A Death at Cokesbury.

Monday, 21. Rode in the evening to Cokesbury. I found I. Steward had gone to his final rest. He was a pious lad who kept too close to his studies. He praised God to the last, even when he was delirious. It made the students very solemn for a season.

N. J.]

A New Church at Burlington.

Tuesday, October 6. After twenty years' preaching they have built a very beautiful meeting-house at Burlington; but it is low times there in religion. At New Mills both preachers and people appeared to feel, and the watch-night was attended with some breathings after God.

Thursday, 8. We had a poor, dry meeting at Mount Holly. Some were alarmed with fear, lest we should make a noise as we had done in Philadelphia. Some dear country friends felt the Lord powerfully, and carried home the flame.

Del.]

Dedication at Wilmington.

Wednesday, 14. I preached at Wilmington, on the dedication of our new chapel. Thus far are we come after more than twenty years' labor in this place.

Thursday, 15. I preached at Dickinson's. Here we have a good house built, and a blessed foundation of living stones fixed on the chief Corner-stone. After preaching at Severson's and Duck Creek Cross-Roads, we came on *Saturday* to Dover quarterly meeting. Here the congregation was large and serious.

A Charity School,

Monday, November 2. I rode forty miles to Maggoty Bay, and preached to a few people. The Antinomians please them and gain them—alas! for us. O that the Lord would send an earthquake of his power among them!

Tuesday, 3. We had an open time at Brother

J.'s. The school for the charity boys much occupies my mind. Our annual expenditure will amount to two hundred pounds, and the aid we get is but trifling. The poverty of the people, and the general scarcity of money, is the great source of our difficulties. The support of our preachers who have families absorbs our collections, so that neither do our elders nor the charity school get much. We have the poor, but they have no money ; and the worldly, wicked rich we do not choose to ask.

Md.] The "Saints of the World Displeased."

Saturday, 7. At Annamessex quarterly meeting the Lord was among the people. *Sunday*, at the love-feast, the young were greatly filled, and the power of the Most High spread throughout. It appeared as if they would have continued till night if they had not been in some measure forced to stop that we might have public worship. I spoke on Isa. lxiv, 1-5. There were very uncommon circumstances of a supernatural kind said to be observed at this meeting. The *saints of the world* are dreadfully displeased at this work, which, after all, is the best evidence that it is of God.

Cokesbury—Council Held in Baltimore.

Sunday, 29. I preached at Duck Creek. Stopped and gave them a discourse at Middletown, and spent the evening with a worthy, kind friend. A number of dear old brethren accompanied me to Cokesbury, where we had an examination of the boys, and stationed eleven on charity. Thence we hastened on to Baltimore.

Thursday, December 3. Our council was seated, consisting of the following persons, namely, Richard Ivey, from Georgia ; R. Ellis, South Carolina ; E. Morris, North Carolina ; Phil. Bruce, North District of Virginia ; James O'Kelly, South District of Virginia ; L. Green, Ohio ; Nelson Reid, Western Shore of Maryland ; J. Everett, Eastern Shore ; John Dickins, Pennsylvania ; J. O. Cromwell, Jersey ; and Freeborn Garrettson, New York. All our business was done in love and unanimity. The concerns of the college were well attended to, as also the printing business. We formed some resolutions relative to economy and union, and others concerning the funds for the relief of our suffering preachers on the frontiers. We rose on the eve of Wednesday following. During our sitting we had preached every night ; some few souls were stirred up, and others converted. The *prudence* of some had stilled the noisy ardor of our young people, and it was difficult to rekindle the fire. I collected about twenty-eight pounds for the poor suffering preachers in the West. We spent one day in speaking our own experiences, and giving an account of the progress and state of the work of God in our several districts. A spirit of union pervades the whole body, producing most blessed effects and fruits.

Va.]

Faithfully Warned.

January 1, 1790. No appointment for preaching. We are bound to the South, and shall proceed on as fast as we can.

Saturday, 2. We were refreshed in the evening. Next day (Sabbath) I preached at Chickahominy

church once more. Sinners, pharisees, backsliders, hypocrites, and believers, were faithfully warned, and of all these characters there were, doubtless, a goodly number in the large congregation which attended.

James O'Kelly—Restless.

Tuesday, 12. From Mabry's we came to Brunswick quarterly meeting, where there was a considerable quickening and manifestation of the Lord's power. We had a good meeting at Roanoke chapel. I rejoiced that society had increased to more than a hundred souls.

I received a letter from the presiding elder of this district, James O'Kelly. He makes heavy complaints of my power, and bids me stop for one year or he must use his influence against me. Power! power! There is not a vote given in a conference in which the presiding elder has not greatly the advantage of me. All the influence I am to gain over a company of young men in a district must be done in three weeks. The greater part of them, perhaps, are seen by me only at conference, while the presiding elder has had them with him all the year, and has the greatest opportunity of gaining influence. This advantage may be abused; let the bishops look to it. But who has the power to lay an embargo on me, and to make of none effect the decision of all the conferences of the union?

N. C.]

Asbury Sweeps Through the Counties.

Tuesday, 26. Since we crossed Roanoke River we have passed through Warren, Granville, Wake, Chat-

ham, Orange, Randolph, and Richmond counties, in North Carolina.

After passing Hedge Cock Creek I preached at Night's chapel on "My grace is sufficient for thee." There was some quickening, and I was blest. It is no small exercise to ride twenty miles or more, as we frequently do, before twelve o'clock, taking all kinds of food and lodging, and weather too, as it comes, whether it be good or bad.

S. C.] Good News—All Partake of the Joy.

Wednesday, February 10. Came to Charleston. Here I received good news from Baltimore and New York; about two hundred souls have been brought to God within a few weeks. We feel a little quickening here. Brother Whatcoat preaches every night.

Saturday, 13. The preachers are coming in to the conference. I have felt fresh springs of desire in my soul for a revival of religion. O may the work be general! It is a happy thing to be united as is our society. The happy news of the revival of the work of God flies from one part of the continent to the other, and all partake of the joy.

Charleston Conference Resolves to Establish Sunday-Schools.

Wednesday, 17. I preached on "If thou take forth the precious from the vile, thou shalt be as my mouth." It was a searching season; several spoke and prayed, and we had noise enough. The evening before an extract of sundry letters from New York and Baltimore was read in the congregation, at which saints and sinners were affected. But we have not a sufficient breastwork. Our friends are

too mute and fearful, and many of the *out-doors* people are violent and wicked. Our conference resolved on establishing Sunday-schools for poor children, white and black.

Ga.] Preachers' Salaries and Deficiencies.

Wednesday, March 10. Our conference began at Grant's. We had preaching every day, and there were some quickenings among the people. Our business was conducted in peace and unanimity. The deficiencies of the preachers, who receive a salary of sixty-four dollars* per annum from this conference, amounted to seventy-four pounds for the last year.

Wesley and Whitefield School.

Thursday, 11. We had a rainy day, yet a full house, and a living love-feast. Some souls were converted, and others professed sanctification. I had some opening in speaking from Ezek. ii, 7. We have a prospect of obtaining a hundred acres of land for every one hundred pounds we can raise and pay for the support of Wesley and Whitefield school. On *Monday* we rode out to view three hundred acres of land offered for the above purpose. My soul has been much tried since conference began. I must strive to keep from rising too high or sinking too low.

S. C.] Six Hundred Miles in Three Weeks.

Sunday, 21. Preached to a quiet people, and had a small stir. We had a meeting in the evening at Brother Smith's.

Monday, 22. I feel myself unwell with a sick and nervous headache. We have traveled about six hun-

dred miles in about three weeks, besides the time taken up in conference. Thou, Lord, wilt have mercy, and save both man and beast! I expect Providence brought us this way, to pity and to help the people. Dear Brother and Sister S. are unspeakably kind.

N. C.]

Asbury Contemplating Death.

Friday, 26. Rode about twenty-two miles. Stopped at Colonel Graham's, dripping wet with rain. He received us, poor strangers, with great kindness, and treated us hospitably. We had awful thunder, wind, and rain. I was still unwell with a complaint that terminated the life of my grandfather Asbury, whose name I bear; perhaps it will also be my end. We were weather-bound until *Monday* morning, the 29th of March. For several days I have been very sick and serious. I have been enabled to look into eternity with some pleasure. I could give up the church, the college, and schools; nevertheless, there was one drawback—What will my enemies and mistaken friends say? Why, that he had offended the Lord, and he hath taken him away. In the afternoon I felt somewhat better. Brother Whatcoat preached a most excellent sermon on "The kingdom of God is not in word but in power"—not in sentiments or forms, but in the convincing, converting, regenerating, sanctifying power of God.

Thunder and Lightning and Yelling of Wolves.

Monday, April 5. We made an early move. After worming the stream for awhile we took through the Laurel Hill, and had to scale the mountains, which in some places were rising like the roof of a

house. We came to the head of Watauga River, a most neglected place. We passed by W.'s, a poor lodging, and slept at the Beaver Dam in a cabin without a cover, except what a few boards supplied. We had very heavy thunder and lightning, and most hideous yelling of wolves around, with rain, which is frequent in the mountains.

Tenn.]

Condition of the Preachers.

Wednesday, 7. We reached Nelson's chapel about one o'clock, after riding about eighteen miles. Now it is that we must prepare for danger in going through the wilderness. I received a faithful letter from Brother Poythress in Kentucky, encouraging me to come. I found the poor preachers indifferently clad, with emaciated bodies, and subject to hard fare; yet I hope they are rich in faith.

A Great Load for a Little Horse.

Monday, 12. We loaded Brother Anderson's little horse with my great bags and two pair smaller, four saddles, with blankets and provender. We then set out and walked ten miles, and our horses were brought to us, and those who brought them were pleased to take what we pleased to give. Brother A. sought the Lord by fasting and prayer, and had a strong impression that it was the will of God that I should not go with that company.

A Poor Sinner Highly Offended.

Tuesday, 13. We came back to A.'s—a poor sinner. He was highly offended that we prayed so loud in his house. He is a distiller of whisky, and boasts

of gaining £300 per annum by the brewing of this poison. We talked very plainly, and I told him that it was of necessity, and not of choice, we were there. Perhaps the greatest offense was given by my speaking against distilling and slave-holding.

Two Thousand Five Hundred Miles in Two Months.

From *December* 14, 1789, to *April* 20, 1790, we compute to have traveled two thousand five hundred and seventy-eight miles. Hitherto hath the Lord helped. Glory! glory to our God!

Va.1

Indian Murders.

Wednesday, 28. We had a dreary ride down to the Ford of Clinch through a solitary plain. Many attended at L.'s.

We rode down to Blackmore's station. Here the people have been *forted* on the north side of Clinch. Poor Blackmore has had a son and daughter killed by the Indians. They are of opinion here that the Cherokees were the authors of this mischief. I also received an account of two families having been killed, and of one female that was taken prisoner, and afterward retaken by the neighbors and brought back.

Friday, 30. Crossed Clinch about two miles below the fort. In passing along I saw the precipice from which Blackmore's unhappy son leaped into the river after receiving the stroke of a tomahawk in his head. I suppose, by the measure of my eye, it must be between fifty and sixty feet descent. His companion was shot dead upon the spot. This happened on the 6th of *April*, 1789.

We came a dreary road over rocks, ridges, hills, stones, and streams, along a blind, tortuous path, to Moccasin Gap and Creek; thence to Smith's Ferry across the north branch of Holstein. Here I found some lies had been told on me, but feeling myself innocent, I was not moved.

A Guard from Kentucky—Asbury's Dream.

Monday, May 3. I preached at Brother Payne's, and had some encouragement among our Maryland people. Sabbath night I dreamed the guard from Kentucky came for me, and mentioned it to Brother W. In the morning I retired to a small stream for meditation and prayer, and while there saw two men come over the hills. I felt a presumption that they were Kentucky men, and so they proved to be; they were Peter Massie and John Clark, who were coming for me, with the intelligence that they had left eight men below. After reading the letters, and asking counsel of God, I consented to go with them.

Ky.] A Journey Through the Wilderness—Graves of the Slain.

Tuesday, 11. Crossed Kentucky River. I was strangely outdone for want of sleep, having been greatly deprived of it in my journey through the wilderness; which is like being at sea, in some respects, and in others worse. Our way is over mountains, steep hills, deep rivers, and through muddy creeks; a thick growth of reeds for miles together, and no inhabitants but wild beasts and savage men. Sometimes, before I am aware, my ideas would be leading me to be looking out ahead for a fence, and I would, without reflection, try to recollect the houses

we should have lodged at in the wilderness. I slept about an hour the first night, and about two the last. We ate no regular meal ; our bread grew short, and I was much spent.

I saw the graves of the slain—twenty-four in one camp. I learn that they had set no guard, and that they were up late, playing at cards. A poor woman of the company had dreamed three times that the Indians had surprised and killed them all ; she urged her husband to entreat the people to set a guard, but they only abused him, and cursed him for his pains. As the poor woman was relating her last dream the Indians came upon the camp ; she and her husband sprung away, one east the other west, and escaped. She afterward came back, and witnessed the carnage. These are some of the melancholy accidents to which the country is subject for the present. As to the land, it is the richest body of fertile soil I have ever beheld.

Asbury Holds a Conference in Lexington.

Thursday, 13. Our conference was held at Brother Masterson's ; a very comfortable house, and kind people. We went through our business in great love and harmony. I ordained Wilson Lee, Thomas Williamson, and Barnabas M'Henry, elders. We had preaching noon and night, and souls were converted and the fallen restored. My soul has been blessed among those people, and I am exceedingly pleased with them. I would not, for the worth of all the place, have been prevented in this visit, having no doubt but that it will be for the good of the present and rising generation. It is true, such exertions of mind and body are trying, but I am supported under

them ; if souls are saved it is enough. Brother Poythress is much alive to God. We fixed a plan for a school, and called it *Bethel*, and obtained a subscription of upward of three hundred pounds, in land and money, toward its establishment.

Return Journey—Asbury Adjutant and Quartermaster.

Monday, 24. We set out on our return through the wilderness with a large and helpless company : we had about fifty people, twenty of whom were armed, and five of whom might have stood fire. To preserve order and harmony, we had articles drawn up for, and signed by, our company, and I arranged the people for traveling according to the regulations agreed upon. Some disaffected gentlemen, who would neither sign nor come under discipline, had yet the impudence to murmur when left behind. The first night we lodged some miles beyond the Hazel-patch. The next day we discovered signs of Indians, and some thought they heard voices ; we therefore thought it best to travel on, and did not encamp until three o'clock, halting on the east side of Cumberland River. We had gnats enough. We had an alarm, but it turned out to be a false alarm. A young gentleman, a Mr. Alexander, behaved exceedingly well, but his tender frame was not adequate to the fatigue to be endured, and he had well-nigh fainted on the road to Cumberland Gap. Brother Massie was captain, and finding I had gained authority among the people, I acted somewhat in the capacity of an adjutant and quartermaster among them. At the foot of the mountain the company separated ; the greater part went on with me to

Powell's River. Here we slept on the earth, and next day made the Grassy Valley. Several of the company, who were not Methodists, expressed their high approbation of our conduct, and most affectionately invited us to their houses. The journeys of each day were as follows: *Monday*, forty-five miles; *Tuesday*, fifty miles; *Wednesday*, sixty miles.

Tenn.] General Russell's a Favorite Stopping-place.

Thursday, 27. By riding late we reached Captain Amie's, where I had a bed to rest on.

Friday, *Saturday*, and *Sunday*, 28, 29, 30, I spent at General Russell's, whose wife was converted since I left the house last. I thought then that she was not far from the kingdom of God.

N. C.] Conference on the Yadkin River.

Tuesday, *June* 1. I rode about forty-five miles to Armstrong's, and next day reached M'Knight's on the Yadkin River, in N. C. Here the conference had been waiting for me nearly two weeks. We rejoiced together, and my brethren received me as one brought from the jaws of death. Our business was much matured, the critical concern of the council understood, and the plan, with its amendments, adopted.

Saturday and *Sunday*, 5, 6, were days of the Lord's presence and power—several were converted. We had an ordination each day. We have admitted into full connection some steady men, with dispositions and talents for the work.

Va.] Conference at Petersburg.

Monday, 14. Our conference began; all was peace until the council was mentioned. The young men

appeared to be entirely under the influence of the elders, and turned it out-of-doors. I was weary, and felt but little freedom to speak on the subject. This business is to be explained to every preacher, and then it must be carried through the conferences twenty-four times, that is, through all the conferences for two years. We had some little quickenings, but no great move among the people at our public preaching. Mr. Jarratt preached for us ; friends at first are friends again at last. There were four elders and seventeen deacons ordained : ten young men who offered to travel, besides those who remained on trial. We have good news from a far country : Jersey flames with religion ; some hundreds are converted. The work of God does revive here, although not in the same degree as it did two years ago. In the midst of all my labor and trouble I enjoy peace within.

"Alone Before the Lord."

Monday, 21. We had the Divine presence in our worship at Sister Stringer's. I am often blessed at the houses of the fatherless and widows. Now, I say to my body, return to thy labor ; to my soul, return to thy rest and pure delight in reading, meditation, prayer, and solitude. The shady groves are witness to my retired and sweetest hours. To sit, and melt, and bow alone before the Lord, while the melody of the birds warbles from tree to tree, how delightful !

Pa.]

Conference at Uniontown.

Saturday, July 31. I spoke on education, from Prov. xxii, 6. I was led to enlarge on the obligations

of parents to their children, and the nature of that religious education which would be most likely to fit them for this, and which alone could qualify them for the next world.

Sunday, August 1. I ordained C. C., I. L., and G. C., elders, and four deacons. Here there is a revival among preachers and people. Some of the societies are much engaged with God, and after we have had a few more conferences in Uniontown I hope we shall drive Satan out, and have a glorious work.

Va.]

Asbury's Spirit of Meekness.

Wednesday, 25. Our conference began at Leesburg, and we continued together until the Sabbath following, and had a happy time of peace and union.

To conciliate the minds of our brethren in the south district of Virginia, who are restless about the council, I wrote their leader a letter, informing him "that I would take my seat in council as another member," and, in that point at least, waive the claims of episcopacy ; yea, I would lie down and be trodden upon, rather than knowingly injure one soul.

Md.]

Students at Cokesbury—Exercises.

Friday, September 3. At night I preached in Baltimore : "O Ephraim ! how shall I give thee up ?"

Monday, 6. Our conference began ; was conducted in great peace and union, and ended on *Wednesday, 8.*

Thursday, 9. I rode to Cokesbury.

Friday, 10. In the morning philosophical lectures were delivered, and in the afternoon the boys delivered their orations, some parts of which were exceptionable, and duly noticed.

Saturday, 11. We made some regulations relative to the order and government to be observed in the college.

Sunday, 12. I preached in the college hall on Matt. xxv, 31, to forty-six scholars. Brothers D. and C. spoke after me.

Pa.] A New Chapel in Philadelphia—(Ebenezer.)

Monday, 20. I reached the city of Philadelphia. Our brethren have built a new chapel, thirty feet square, at the south end of the city. I feel myself fatigued and unwell, occasioned by riding a rough-going horse.

Tuesday, 21. This day was spent in reading, writing, and visiting.

"I Must Needs Go Through Samaria."

Wednesday, 22. The conference began in poor Pennsylvania district; all was peace and love. Our printing is in a good state. Our society in the city of Philadelphia are generally poor; perhaps it is well. When men become rich they sometimes forget they are Methodists. I am weak and have been busy, and am not animated by the hope of doing good here. "I must needs go through Samaria."

N. J.] The Wicked Rage—God Triumphs.

Monday, 27. Rode to Burlington, the place appointed for our next conference. Here I preached on "Searching Jerusalem with candles," and it was a searching season. On *Tuesday* night we had a shout—then came the bulls of Bashan and broke our windows. It was well my head escaped the violence of these wicked sinners. I hope the strong

power of Satan will feel a shake this conference. The session has been in great peace. Harmony has prevailed, and the council has been unanimously adopted.

Wednesday, 29. We had a love-feast, and a genuine sweet melting ran through the house. S. Strattan stood up and declared he had followed the work of God for six months, and that he believed six hundred souls had professed conversion in that time. There is a most genuine work in several places, namely, in Flanders, Trenton, Burlington, Salem, and Bethel circuits. Glory to our wonder-working God! All hail, eternal Father, co-equal Son, and everlasting Spirit, in time and forever! Amen and amen!!

N. Y.]

The New Church.

Sunday, October 3. I preached at the old church, and in the afternoon at the new, on Matt. xxv, 31-46. The new church is commodious, elegant, yet plain.

Monday, 4. We began our conference, and sat with close application to business until Thursday morning. All was peace, order, and unanimity. On Thursday evening I returned to Elizabethtown.

Pa.]

Asbury in Philadelphia.

Sunday Morning, 10, was rainy. I preached at St. George's church, and again in the evening. H. Willis is come hither to settle himself in life, and will probably go into trade. The Church has thereby lost, in part, a faithful servant.

Del.]

Sister Dickinson.

Friday, 15. I did not reach Dickinson's in time; however, I spoke a little. I found Sister Dickinson

wrapped in clay, whom I left sick about three weeks ago. She has been an attentive, devoted woman, has washed the saints' feet, and kindly served the dear servants of God, and I trust her soul is now in peace. I spoke a little at Duck Creek Cross-Roads, where nearly thirty members have been added to the society since last conference.

Weighty Matters.

Monday, 18. At Thomas White's my soul has been made to feel very solemn. A view of the remarkable work of God ; the death of some, and the deep spirituality of others ; the sending out young men for the ministry, and the providing for the fatherless and widows ; these are all weighty matters, and greatly occupied my mind. In the midst of all my soul panteth after God.

Va.] "If They Will Shout, Why Let Them Shout."

Monday, November 1. I preached at Accomack court-house on Rom. i, 16. We had a weighty season. A poor man, who had lately professed religion, appeared to be somewhat distracted. He has been a vile sinner, but I hope he will recover his right mind ; the family is subject to derangement. There are some unreasonable things among the people here ; but we are afraid of gathering out the tares, lest we should root up the wheat also. We must continue to observe the order of God and our own discipline, attend to preaching, prayer, class-meeting, and love-feast ; and then, if they will shout, why let them shout.

Md.] Henry Ennalls Converted and His Slaves Freed.

Tuesday, 9. We had a gracious love-feast in Dorset, and I addressed parents very seriously on Deut. vi, 67. I lodged with Brother Henry Ennalls, who, with his wife, has been powerfully brought to God. His slaves were freed immediately. His sister, Nancy Bassett, has gone to rest; the other two have followed the example of a dear brother. God has heard their prayers.

Cokesbury—Students Examined.

Sunday, 21. At Cecil quarterly meeting, held at Dickinson's, we had many people and some life. On *Monday* I rode to Dr. Clayton's, and next day to Cokesbury, where I continued until *Monday*, the 29th. We then examined the students relatively to learning and religion, paid debts, and put matters in better order. We have forty-five boys. The charitable subscriptions to the establishment amount to £300 per annum.

Va.] A Comprehensive Wish.

Monday, December 20. The weather softening, I made haste to get across the Rappahannock, and reached Brother B.'s, about twenty-five miles. I found myself much chilled by my ride. My soul has been kept in great peace, and almost in constant prayer. I wish to feel so placid as not to have any acid in my temper, nor a frown or wrinkle on my brow; to bear all things, do all things, suffer all things, from the ignorance or weakness of the children of God, or the wickedness of the sons and daughters of Satan. I think my soul momentarily pants after more of God.

The Lord at Work in Virginia.

Wednesday, January 5, 1791. We had a blessed time at Norfolk while I applied Zech. xii, 10. Many praised the Lord aloud. I was closely employed until the moment I left town. I find the Lord has wrought in Norfolk, Portsmouth, and the country round about.

N. C.]

"Hail, Happy Dead!"

Saturday, 22. Crossed Neuse River, at Smith's ferry, and came to the dwelling of the late General Hardy Bryan, a man I had often heard of and wished to see. But death, swift and sudden, reached the house before me. His son H. died the 18th of last November, his daughter Mary December 28th, and himself the 10th instant. Each of them feared the Lord and were happy souls.

Sunday, 23. I had very great opening on 1 Thess. iv, 13, 14. It was on the occasion of the late lamented deaths. Surely this is loud preaching—it is one of the most awakening scenes of my life. How soon were these dear souls justified, sanctified, and called home to glory! Hail, happy dead! We toil below, but hope, erelong, with you to sing God's praise above.

"As Happy as Princes in a Palace."

Tuesday, February 1. I had a large congregation at the Sand Hills. Feeling myself enlarged in spirit, although weak in body, I entered very extensively into the nature and excellences of the Gospel. We administered the Lord's Supper, and had a shaking among the people. Brothers L. and B. were there,

and we rejoiced in the Lord together. We were honored with a little cabin at a distance from the other houses, about eight feet wide and nine feet long, and were as happy as *princes in a palace*.

S. C.]

A Great Change in Six Years.

Tuesday, 8. We came a long, dreary way, missed our road, and at last reached Brother S.'s, a distance of twenty-five miles, which our wandering made thirty miles. I rejoice to find that this desert country has gracious souls in it. O how great the change in the flight of six years! We have now many friends and some precious souls converted to God. Glory be to the Lord most high! The misconduct of other men is my grief, but not my sin, so I will trust God with his own cause.

Friday, 11. We set out for Black River from about six miles above Kingston, having Bull Run, Bramble Island, and great Pedee to cross. Reaching Black River, we were compelled to turn aside to Mr. S.'s plantation, where we procured provender for our horses and breakfasted on our own tea.

Dr. Coke Returns to America.

Wednesday, 23. Long-looked-for Doctor Coke came to town. He had been shipwrecked off Edisto. I found the Doctor's sentiments with regard to the council quite changed. James O'Kelly's letters had reached London. I felt perfectly calm, and acceded to a general conference for the sake of peace.

Ga.]

The Work in Georgia Dead—Causes.

Sunday, March 13. Came to Georgetown at Ogeechee Shoals and found Satan was there. I leveled

away on the parable of the sower. I came to Brother H.'s. Heard heavy tidings. My soul is calm. Let the Lord look to his own house. I hastened to Scott's. Doctor Coke came in time enough to preach, and then we opened a conference.

We sat very closely to our work, and had some matters of moment to attend to in the course of our deliberations. I have ridden about two hundred and fifty miles in Georgia, and find the work in general very dead. The peace with the Creek Indians, the settlement of new lands, good trade, buying slaves, etc., take up the attention of the people.

S. C.]

White and Red Indians.

Saturday, 26. We had white and red Indians at Catawba; the Doctor and myself both preached. I had some conversation with the chiefs of the Indians about keeping up the school we have been endeavoring to establish among them. I asked for one of their children, but the father would not give consent, nor would the child come. My body is weak, but my mind has heaven and peace within. We closely employed our intervals of leisure in preparing different tracts for the press.

Va.]

Dr. Coke and Asbury Working Together.

Sunday, April 10. Doctor Coke and myself both preached at Watson's church, and there was some little effect produced. I spent the evening with George Adams, a true son of his worthy father, Silvanus Adams, for kindness to the preachers. We moved from G. Adams's to the Widow Dick's, and thence, next day, to Brother Marten's.

Wednesday, 13. Came to Difficult church, where we were honored with the company of some of the *great*. The Doctor preached a noble sermon on the Divinity of Christ, and I urged, "It is time to seek the Lord." Afterward we preached in Charlotte and Mecklenburg, and on *Sunday* following came to quarterly meeting at Sister Walker's in Brunswick. Doctor Coke went to the barn, and I preached in the house. The rain rendered our meeting uncomfortable.

News of Wesley's Death! Asbury's Estimate of His Character.

Friday, 29. The solemn news reached our ears that the public papers had announced the death of that dear man of God, John Wesley. He died in his own house in London, in the eighty-eighth year of his age, after preaching the Gospel sixty-four years. When we consider his plain and nervous writings; his uncommon talent for sermonizing and journalizing; that he had such a steady flow of animal spirits; so much of the spirit of government in him; his knowledge as an observer; his attainments as a scholar; his experience as a Christian; I conclude his equal is not to be found among all the sons he hath brought up, nor his superior among all the sons of Adam he may have left behind. Brother Coke was sunk in spirit, and wished to hasten home immediately. For myself, notwithstanding my long absence from Mr. Wesley, and a few unpleasant expressions in some of the letters the dear old man has written to me, (occasioned by the misrepresentations of others,) I feel the stroke most sensibly; and, I expect, I shall never read his Works without reflecting on the loss which the Church of God and the world

has sustained by his death. Dr. Coke, accompanied by Brother C. and Dr. G., set out for Baltimore in order to get the most speedy passage to England, leaving me to fill the appointments. I had a large congregation at Sister Bombry's. In the afternoon I rode to Sister Waller's, making a journey of forty miles for this day. Next day I overtook Dr. Coke and his company at Colchester. At Alexandria Dr. Coke had certain information of Mr. Wesley's death. On *Sabbath day* he reached Baltimore, and preached on the occasion of Mr. Wesley's death, and mentioned some things which gave offense.

Md.] Conferences at Baltimore and Duck Creek.

Thursday, May 5. This day and the two following days we held conference in Baltimore, and great love and sweetness prevailed throughout the sitting. I preached to a large congregation on the *Sabbath*, and we had a gracious time.

Monday, 9. Came to Cokesbury. I found there was a vast demand for money for the establishment, there having been an expenditure of £700 in five months.

Tuesday, 10. Crossed Susquehanna and came to Cecil, and next day reached Duck Creek. Our conference began, and was conducted in much peace and harmony among preachers and people. Our meetings in public were attended with great power.

Sunday, 15. Two elders and three deacons were ordained. After the ordination I rode to Middletown, Del., and preached to a large congregation.

Pa.]

Last Interview with Dr. Coke.

Monday, 16. I rode to New Castle, and had the last interview with Dr. Coke. In the evening I came to Chester, and the next day (the 17th) arrived in Philadelphia and opened conference. We had a tender, melting account of the dealings of God with many souls, and settled our business in much peace. Mr. Hammett came from Charleston with a wonderful list of petitioners desiring his return. To this, as far as I had to say, I submitted ; but ————— I see and hear many things that might wound my spirit if it were not that the Lord bears me up above all.

N. J.]

Eighteen Years Ago.

Sunday, 22. I preached in Trenton on Joel ii, 17. Several preachers exhorted, and the Lord made sinners tremble. Eighteen years ago I often slipped away from Philadelphia to Burlington one week, and Trenton another, to keep a few souls alive. I had then no conferences to take up my time and occupy my thoughts ; and now—what hath God wrought !

We attended to the business of the conference with a good spirit. In the course of our sitting we had some pleasing and some painful circumstances to excite our feelings.

N. Y.]

Conference in New York—Asbury Preaches on the
Death of Wesley.

Thursday, 26. Our conference came together in great peace and love. Our ordinary business was enlivened by the relation of experiences, and by profitable observations on the work of God.

Nothing would satisfy the conference and the society but my consenting to preach on the occasion of Mr. Wesley's death, which I did on *Sunday, May 29*. My text was 2 Tim. iii, 10, 11.

Monday, 30. Our conference rose, and after love-feast the preachers dispersed. We had had about thirty preachers at this conference, and not a frown, a sign of sour temper, or an unkind word was seen or heard among us ; but I am sick, and quite out-done with constant labor. Mr. Hammett's preaching was not well received ; it was supposed to be aimed at our zealous men and passionate meetings. At the new church his preaching was still more exceptionable to those judicious persons who heard him. I expect some things will be retailed to my disadvantage. Be it so—I trust the Lord.

Conn.] Asbury in Connecticut—A Close Observer.

Saturday, June 4. I rode over rocks and hills, and came to Wilton, and preached to a serious, feeling, well-behaved people at Squire R.'s. In the evening I went on to Reading. Surely God will work powerfully among these people, and save thousands of them. This country is very hilly and open—not unlike that about the Peak of Derbyshire. I feel faith to believe that this visit to New England will be blessed to my own soul and the souls of others. We are now in Connecticut, and never out of sight of a house ; and sometimes we have a view of many churches and steeples, built very neatly of wood, either for use, ornament, piety, policy, or interest—or it may be some of all these. There may have been a praying ministry and people here, but I fear they

are now spiritually dead, and am persuaded that family and private prayer is very little practiced. Could these people be brought to constant, fervent prayer, the Lord would come down and work wonderfully among them. I find my mind fixed on God and the work of God.

His Reception at Stratford.

Tuesday, 7. We came to Stratford. Good news—they have voted that the town-house shall be shut. Well, where shall we preach? Some of the selectmen—one at least—granted access. I felt unwilling to go, as it is always my way not to push myself into any public house. We had close work on Isa. lv, 6, 7; some smiled, some laughed, some swore, some talked, some prayed, some wept. Had it been a house of our own, I should not have been surprised had the windows been broken. I refused to preach there any more, and it was well I did, for two of the esquires were quite displeased at our admittance. We met the class, and found some gracious souls. The Methodists have a society consisting of twenty members, some of them converted, but they have no house of worship. They may now make a benefit of a calamity—being denied the use of other houses, they will the more earnestly labor to get one of their own. The Presbyterians and the Episcopalians have each one, and both are elegant buildings.

Reception at New Haven.

Thursday, 9. Came to New Haven, and found my appointment to preach had been published in the newspapers. Every thing was quiet. We called on

the sheriff, but he was absent. We then put up our horses at the Ball tavern, near the college yard. I was weary and unwell. I had the honor of the President S., Dr. W., and the Rev. Mr. E., to hear me, and several of the collegians, with a few scattering citizens. I talked away to them very fast, telling them some little stories, while the sun shone full in my face. The judges looked very grave while I endeavored to show: 1. What we must be saved from; 2. What has been esteemed by the men of the world as the wisdom of preaching; 3. What is meant by the foolishness of preaching. When I had done, no man spoke to me. I thought to-day of dear Mr. Whitefield's words to Mr. Boardman and Mr. Pilmoor at their first coming over to America. "Ah!" said he, "if ye were Calvinists ye would take the country before ye." We visited the college chapel at the hour of prayer. I wished to go through the whole, to inspect the interior arrangements, but no one invited me. The divines were grave, and the students were attentive; they used me like a fellow-Christian, in coming to hear me preach, and like a stranger in other respects. Should Cokesbury or Baltimore ever furnish the opportunity, I, in my turn, will requite their behavior by treating them as friends, brethren, and gentlemen. The difficulty I met with in New Haven for lodging, and for a place to hold meeting, made me feel and know the worth of Methodists more than ever.

Favored by the Standing Order at Middletown.

Lord's Day, 12. Came in haste to Middletown, where the committee favored me with the meeting-house

belonging to *the standing order*. I felt exceedingly low in body while I spoke to a large, serious, and attentive congregation, and I had liberty in preaching on 1 John iii, 23. After meeting we rode a mile out of town to get lodging. It was to the poorer classes of people that this preaching on love and charity was anciently blessed.

New London.

Tuesday, 14. New London stands upon the River Thames—almost newly built since the war. This town suffered in the general burning carried on by Arnold in this quarter. The new meeting-house stands on an eminence ; the Episcopal church is a pleasant, well-formed building. The New-Light Baptists were very kind, and some of them appeared like Methodists. My church was the court-house—my subject 2 Pet. iii, 15. I was not happy in speaking. Brother L. gave them a sermon at half past eight o'clock. I understood there was a work of religion in this place last year ; little of it now remains. I came to Stonington, properly so called, a distance of ten miles, over a most dreadful road for a carriage. I would almost as soon undertake to drive over the Alleghany mountain. From Stonington I came on to Westerly, crossing the line-bridge between Connecticut and Rhode Island. I dropped a few words to the woman of the house where we dined, and saw very clearly that she felt them. I had some life in speaking to about one hundred people, at Mr. ——'s, in Charlestown, on Rev. iii, 20. One said I had fitted the people well ; another said that I had the signs of the times.

R. L.] Churches and Religion at Newport.

Thursday, 16. Came to Newport. The roads were comparatively good; the ferry three miles wide, which, however, we safely crossed in a spacious open boat, excellent in its kind. In Newport are two Presbyterian meeting-houses—one, New-Divinity, so called; three others, regular Baptists, New-Lights, and Sabbatarians; one Friends' meeting, and one Episcopal church. We stayed two nights at our friend's, Brother Green, a New-Light Baptist. I lectured the second night from Isaiah lxiv, 1-7; there was some life among the people, although it was late, and the congregation like our Lord's disciples before his passion. There is also a Jew's synagogue and a Moravian chapel. I expect before many years the Methodists will also have a house for worship here.

Providence in 1791.

Sunday, 19. Came to Providence. I attended the ministry of Mr. M., a Baptist, in the forenoon, and Mr. S., a New-Light, in the afternoon. In the evening I preached with some life on Isaiah lxi, 1-3. There are Presbyterians, Episcopalians, Independents or Congregationalists, here, but the Baptists appear to be the leading people. I found a few gracious souls, and some seeking.

Mr. Snow—Tennent and Whitefield.

Monday, 20. I visited some serious families that truly love and fear God. The afternoon I spent very agreeably with the old prophet Mr. Snow, aged about seventy years. He was awakened by the instrumen-

talities of Gilbert Tennent, whose memory I revere. He told me much about Mr. Whitefield, and old times, and of the ministers of old times—of himself, his awakening, and conversion to God—of his riding thirty miles to Newport, in exceeding cold weather, to bring Mr. Tennent to Providence.

Mass.]

Boston in 1791.

Thursday, 23. We rode through dust and heat to Boston. I felt much pressed in spirit, as if the door was not open. As it was court-time, we were put to some difficulty in getting entertainment. It was appointed for me to preach at Murray's church—not at all pleasing to me; and that which made it worse was, that I had only about twenty or thirty people to preach to in a large house. It appeared to me that those who professed friendship for us were ashamed to publish us. On *Friday* evening I preached again. My congregation was somewhat larger, owing, perhaps, to the loudness of my voice, for the sinners were noisy in the streets. My subject was Rev. iii, 17, 18. I was disturbed, and not at liberty, although I sought it. I have done with Boston until we can obtain a lodging, a house to preach in, and some to join us. Some things here are to be admired in the place and among the people—their bridges are great works, and none are ashamed of labor. Of their hospitality I cannot boast. In Charlestown, wicked Charlestown, six years ago, a stranger, I was kindly invited to eat and drink by many—here by none.

Lynn the Perfection of Beauty.

I preached at Slade's tavern, on my way to Lynn, on "If our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are

lost." I was agreeably surprised to find a house raised for the Methodists. As a town I think Lynn the perfection of beauty: it is seated on a plain, under a range of craggy hills, and open to the sea. There is a promising society—an exceedingly well-behaved congregation. These things, doubtless, made all pleasing to me. My first subject was Rom. viii, 33, in the afternoon Acts iv, 12. Here we shall make a firm stand, and from this central point shall the light of Methodism and of truth radiate through the State. Our Brother Johnson is simple-hearted, and hearty in the cause. We owe our entertainment and house for worship chiefly to him.

Sympathy for the Inhabitants of Marblehead.

Tuesday, 28. Rode to Marblehead. When I entered this town my heart was more melted toward its inhabitants than to any in those parts, with the exception of Lynn. After consultation, and some altercation among themselves, the committee invited me to preach in Mr. Story's meeting-house, which I did accordingly at four o'clock on Acts xxvi, 17, 18. I was led to speak alarmingly, while I pointed out the Gospel as descriptive of their misery and need of mercy. Brother Lee preached in the evening to a great number of people in and about Mr. Martin's house. Next morning, weak as I was, I could not forbear speaking to them on "Seek ye first the kingdom of God."

Visits Salem.

Wednesday, 29. Rode to Salem. Here are five meeting-houses, two of them on the New-Divinity plan—that is, regeneration the first work, no prayer,

repentance, or faith until this is accomplished ; the other three belong to the Establishment, one Episcopalian and one Friends' meeting-house. I found no access to any. I lectured in the court-house on Rom. v, 6-9. I looked upon the greater part of my congregation as judges, and I talked until they, becoming weary, began to leave me.

An Annual General Conference Proposed.

Thursday, July 7. This day Brother Jesse Lee put a paper into my hand, proposing the election of not less than two nor more than four preachers from each conference, to form a general conference in Baltimore, in December, 1792, to be continued annually.

Conn.]

A Characteristic of the People.

Friday, 22. The Episcopal Church was opened at Litchfield, where I preached, with very little faith, on the love of Christ. I think Morse's account of his countrymen is near the truth. Never have I seen any people who talk so long, so correctly, and so seriously about trifles.

N. Y.] "See if the Methodists do not Work their Way."

Friday, 29. Came to Albany. My mind felt impressed with the value of the souls in this place. By the curves I have made in my course from Hartford to this place, I suppose I have not traveled less than one hundred and fifty miles. Perpetual motion is no small trial to my body and mind, but I must cast my care upon the Lord. I am led to think the eastern Church will find this saying hold true of the Methodists, namely, "I will provoke you to jealousy by a

people that were no people ; and by a foolish nation will I anger you." They have trodden upon the Quakers, the Episcopalians, the Baptists—see now if the Methodists do not work their way. The people will not pay large money for religion if they can get it cheaper.

I preached to about three hundred in a barn at Coeyman's Patent, the new stone church not being ready. Our society is promising in this place.

A Constant Walk with God.

Wednesday, August 3. The day was unusually warm, and I was sick. I was ready to faint in my carriage. At last, through mercy, I arrived safe at kind Sister L.'s. I went to bed, took some chicken broth, and after a comfortable sleep felt revived. No more rest ; I took the road again, and arrived at Rhinebeck by noon. My soul is in peace. I want more prayer, patience, life, and love. I walk daily, hourly, and sometimes minutely, with God.

Nature's Carpet and Umbrella.

Sunday, 7. We received the sacrament, and then went to a small grove, where we had a green carpet of nature's spreading underneath and an umbrella of variegated leaves above us. I preached on Zech. xii, 10, to about a thousand or twelve hundred people, as it was judged. I had some faith to believe it would be the beginning of days, and of a revival of religion.

Conn.]

Asbury in Salisbury and Sharon.

Preached at Salisbury on Acts v, 31, 32. My mind is in peace. I came to Sharon time enough to preach at three o'clock. The women crowded the

house, while the men stood at the door with patient attention, in the rain, which indeed many seemed scarcely to perceive. I spoke with life and freedom on Ephes. ii, 8-10. Here are some praying souls. I read, much to my comfort, Corbit's Memoirs of the Secrets of his Heart, brought to public view after his death.

N. Y.] "All for God, and Christ, and Souls."

Friday, 12. I preached at B.'s, on Luke xix, 10, to a number of simple-hearted people. Rode to Brother J.'s to attend quarterly meeting. I felt weak and unwell, yet happy in God. My soul enters into deeper union with God, and into sweet resignation and confidence in him for his work and Church. I judge that my journey to Lynn, and my rides through the country thereabouts, have made a distance of but little less than five hundred miles; thence to Albany nearly the same, and from Albany to New York not much less, with occasionally very rough roads for a carriage. Well, it is all for God, and Christ, and souls. I neither covet nor receive any man's silver or gold; food, raiment, and a little rest, is all I want.

Brief Definition of Christian Perfection.

Wednesday, 17. Felt a good degree of liberty at B.'s on Col. i, 28. Ours is not the perfection of God, of Christ, of angels; such perfection must be ours as excludes evil tempers from the heart, and yet supposes us liable to ignorance and error while in tenements of clay. As I came along to P.'s I was ready to complain of the roughness of the roads, but I was suddenly stopped when I beheld a poor Irish-

woman with a heavy child on her shoulders, and without covering for head or feet. She said she was from Canada, and thus far had begged her way. Pity for her at once stilled all murmur of complaint for myself.

N. J.]

Monmouth and Long Branch.

Monday, September 5. I rode through much rain to Monmouth, New Jersey, where I preached to a considerable congregation on "The just shall live by faith; but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him." There is some stir among the people. At Long Branch, within eighteen months, as I am informed, nearly fifty souls have professed conversion.

Pa.]

Asbury Rejoicing.

Wednesday, 28. We rode to Strasburg, thirty miles, where I preached at night in a respectable tavern on Acts iii, 19. I was very plain, and had some energy in preaching, although unwell in body.

Thence to M. B.'s. Hitherto the Lord hath been our helper in spite of sin and Satan. We had a good time while I spoke on Zechariah xii, 10. After sacrament several bore their testimony for the Lord. My soul is much humbled, and brought into close communion with God; yea, I rejoiced greatly to find so much religion among the people. We went hence to Brother M.'s, where, for two days, we had a gracious season.

Del.] "Not a Moment's Desire of Any Thing but God."

Came to Wilmington. Alas for poor Wilmington! When will this people open their eyes? We rode in

haste thirty miles to D.'s, but the people had met three hours before our arrival, and Brother E. had preached to them. I preached at the Cross Roads, but the minds of the people were so occupied by the approaching election that I fear there was little room for things of more importance. Finding there were no more appointments published for me, I rode, through the dust, thirty-two miles to Judge White's. O Lord, help me to watch and pray! I am afraid of losing the sweetness I feel. For months past I have felt as if in the possession of perfect love; not a moment's desire of any thing but God. After attending a quarterly meeting at B.'s chapel I came to W.'s. We had a large congregation. After public service we had a meeting for the local preachers, leaders, and stewards. Next morning we had love feast for the colored brethren at sunrise, and at nine o'clock for the whites. We find new members are added every year; many living experiences and miracles of grace in this society.

Md.] Asbury Begging Money for Cokesbury.

Monday, December 5. I went from house to house, through the snow and cold, begging money for the support of the poor orphans at Cokesbury. Rode to Annapolis and preached at night.

Va.] Crossing the Potomac.

Wednesday, 7. A day to be remembered. We stopped once in forty-three miles. When we reached Oxen Hill Ferry, opposite to Alexandria, I was nearly frozen, being hardly able to walk or talk. We crossed the Potomac in an open boat, on whose icy bottom the horses with difficulty kept their feet, and

still worse it would have been had I not thoughtfully called for straw to strew beneath them. We had five of them on board, and the waves were high.

Norfolk and Portsmouth.

Sunday, January 1, 1792. On this beginning of the new year I preached and had liberty on Isaiah lxv, 1, 2. In the evening I once more cried to the people of Norfolk, "Repent, and be converted." My audience was attentive and tender. My body was greatly fatigued, my soul much comforted in the Lord. Religion revives here; the seed which has been sowing for twenty years begins to spring up. Norfolk flourishes; Portsmouth declines, and is already low.

N. C.] Asbury's Route through North Carolina.

Friday, 27. After riding thirty miles through ice and snow to Rainey's, I found many people waiting for me, and I began, without any refreshment, to speak on "This is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith." In our route through North Carolina we passed through Bertie, Gates, Tyrrel, Tarborough, Franklin, Wake, Chatham, Orange, Guilford, and Randolph counties. We have traveled nearly eight hundred miles since the 7th of *December* last past. Seldom have I been tempted to a murmuring thought. It is now the 29th of *January*. I want nothing but more mental and private prayer.

Tuesday, 31. Yesterday and to-day we have ridden about sixty miles, a great deal of the way through heavy hail and rain. I gave an exhortation at C.'s on *seeking the kingdom of God*. Here we had all things richly to supply our wants; and what was still better, we found the Lord had souls in his family.

S. C.]

Mr. Hammett's Objections.

Saturday, February 11. Arrived in Charleston. I received a full and true account of Mr. Hammett's proceedings. Brothers E. and P. have done all things well. Mr. Hammett had three grand objections to us: 1. The American preachers and people insulted him. 2. His name was not printed in our *Minutes*. 3. The *nota bene* cautioning *minute* was directed against him. We were considered by him as seceders from Methodism!—because we do not wear gowns and powder, and because we did not pay sufficient respect to Mr. Wesley!

Conference at Charleston.

Tuesday, 14. Our conference began. I preached at night on Luke xxiv, 17, and endeavored to show the low estate of the interests of Christ at that time. In our conference we were unusually close in examination of characters, doctrines, and experience. We had great peace and some power among us, and received the good news of eighty souls being converted in Philadelphia. I preached a sermon to the preachers on "Endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ."

Ga.]

Georgia Conference—Searching and Sifting.

Tuesday, 28. We rode through the snow to Little River, and a few people met us at S.'s. I preached on 2 Tim. iv, 2-4. Without staying to eat we rode on to Washington, making thirty miles this day also. We collected our conference, and had great searching and sifting, and were under the necessity of suspending one; we were very close in examining characters and principles. Each preacher spoke his experience, and made his observations relative to the work of

God since last conference. Brother Hull accompanies me, and H. Herbert repairs to Alexandria, in Virginia. I hope in future there will be harmony among the brethren. If souls are converted to God it answers no valuable purpose thereafter to disciple them to ourselves. I preached on the marriage supper, and took occasion to show how some are kept from, and others lose, the grace of God by the unlawful use of lawful things.

S. C.]

A Day's Ride of Fifty Miles.

Monday, March 5. I left Georgia, and lodged near Whitehall, in South Carolina.

Tuesday, 6. Rode fifty miles to Brother Finch's. Here the brethren gave me a meeting on *Wednesday*. The congregation was small, and the people unengaged. Rode that evening to Odle's, and the next day to Watter's.

N. C.]

Antinomianism in Doctrine and Practice.

Monday, 19. Our horses' backs being bruised, we had our difficulties in getting to Rehoboth. We were well-nigh cast away in going to the Widow W.'s. It was very dark, and we were bewildered in the woods. My saddle turned, and I slipped from my horse, but received no harm. I had to walk nearly half a mile through mud and water to reach the house.

Tuesday, 20. I came to Gordon's, on the Yadkin. It is seven years since I was here—dead! dead! The world—the devil—Antinomianism in doctrine and practice. I was led out in preaching on Deut. xxxiii, 29.

Va.] Crossing Streams.

Thursday, 22. We made an early start for friend Osborne's, on New River, fifteen miles distant. Here we were generously entertained. After talking and praying together we were guided across the river, for which I was thankful. Arriving at Fox Creek we crossed it eleven times, and tarried that night with C., a *nominal* member of the Society of Friends, who used us very well.

Friday, 23. Rode twelve miles to S.'s. After dinner, exhortation, and prayer, we came down the south fork, and crossed the middle fork of Holstein River.

Tenn.] Indian Depredations.

Thursday, 29. Rode twenty miles to Mr. Y.'s, on the main Holstein, and the next day eighteen miles to Hawkins court-house, and thence to Crabb's. We have confused accounts of Indians. Our guard rested on the Sabbath day within four miles of the wilderness.

Saturday, 31. I heard a company had arrived from Kentucky at Crabb's. This man's son and a Mr. Henderson have been killed by the Indians since I was here last.

Ky.] A Wakeful, Watchful Night.

Monday, April 30. Came to L.'s. An alarm was spreading of a depredation committed by the Indians on the east and west frontiers of the settlement. In the former, report says, one man was killed. In the latter, many men, with women and children. Every thing is in motion. There having been so many about me at conference my rest was much broken. I hoped now to repair it, and get refreshed before I

set out to return through the wilderness; but the continual arrival of people until midnight, the barking of dogs, and other annoyances, prevented. Next night we reached the Crab Orchard, where thirty or forty people were compelled to crowd into one mean house. We could get no more rest here than we did in the wilderness. We came the old way by Scragg's Creek and Rock Castle, supposing it to be safer, as it was a road less frequented, and therefore less liable to be waylaid by the savages. My body by this time is well tried. I had a violent fever and pain in the head, such as I had not lately felt. I stretched myself on the cold ground, and borrowing clothes to keep me warm, by the mercy of God I slept four or five hours. Next morning we set off early, and passed beyond Richland Creek. Here we were in danger, if anywhere. I could have slept, but was afraid. Seeing the drowsiness of the company, I walked the encampment, and watched the sentries the whole night. Early next morning we made our way to Robinson's station. We had the best company I ever met with—thirty-six good travelers, and a few warriors; but we had a pack-horse, some old men, and two tired horses—these were not the best part.

Va.]

"Rest, Poor House of Clay."

Saturday, May 5. Through infinite mercy we came safe to Crabb's. Rest, poor house of clay, from such exertions! Return, O my soul, to thy rest!

Monday, 7. I came to Young's, a comfortable, quiet house, within six miles of Ratcliffe's, whose wife and children were murdered by the Indians. Here I slept comfortably.

"Hail, Happy Death!"

Friday, 26. We rode twenty-six miles to the Little Levels. O what a solitary country is this! We have now one hundred and twenty miles before us, fifty of which is a wilderness. There is a guard at two houses on our route, but I do not fear. Nature is spent with labor. I would not live always. Hail, happy death! Nothing but holiness, perfect love, and then glory for me!

Pa.]

A Pleasant Change.

Thursday, 31. Both men and horses traveled sore and wearily to Uniontown. O how good are clean houses, plentiful tables, and populous villages, when compared with the rough world we came through! Here I turned out our poor horses to pasture and to rest, after riding them nearly three hundred miles in eight days.

Friday, June 1. Wrote letters to send over the mountains.

Saturday, 2. I began to feel lame, and had a severe touch of the rheumatism, accompanied with a high fever, which occasioned great pain to me while sitting in conference. I found it necessary to remove, by exchange, six of the preachers from this to the eastern district.

A Seminary Founded at Uniontown.

Sunday, 10. We have founded a seminary of learning called Union School. Brother C. Conway is manager, who also has charge of the district. This establishment is designed for instruction in grammar, languages, and the sciences.

Md.]

Peace and Holiness.

Saturday, 16. I preached at Fort Cumberland, in our new house, to many people. Dined with Mr. D., at whose house I was entertained the first time I visited this town. O that each of the family may be everlastingly saved! My body is in better health, and my soul in great peace. I feel no wrong temper. O that my whole heart might be running out in holiness after God!

Va.]

Mr. Hammett and Thomas Morrell.

Saturday, 23. I attended quarterly meeting at the Widow Flint's. Here I had the first sight of Mr. Hammett's and Brother Thomas. Morrell's attacks on each other—or rather Mr. Hammett's against the Methodists, and Brother Morrell's reply. Had Brother M. known more he would have replied better. Mr. H.'s quotation of a clause in my confidential letter to Brother S——d is not altogether just. He has also misquoted the *caution*, leaving out the word "District," which, when retained, shows it to have been *American*, and to have been directed against *American* apostates and impostors.

Pa.]

"Our Old New Church."

Friday, July 6. We had a long ride to Morgantown. We came in at eleven o'clock, being much fatigued. I discoursed on the likeness between Moses and Christ.

We set out for Coventry Forge, but missed our way and came to Brother Meredic's, in the valley. I prayed heartily for, and spoke plainly to, the young

people. O that the Lord would follow them powerfully !

Sunday, 8. I preached at Ebenezer church on James iv, 8, and at St. George's church on Mark viii, 38. I had large accounts from the eastward, and am requested to send them more preachers. After twenty years' standing of the house in our hands the galleries are put up in our old *new* church.

N. J.]

"Some Too Wise."

Thursday, 12. Rode through great heat and dust to Burlington, New Jersey. Here I had many of my old and some new hearers, but some are much wiser than they were twenty years ago. We had a cold time of it while I spoke on Heb. iv, 7.

N. Y.]

Asbury's Early Years.

Sunday, 15. Preached at our new church on Staten Island. I was very close on the law and the Gospel. A few felt, but it was a dry time. Lord, help us !

Monday, 16. We hasted to V.'s ferry, but found ourselves detained by the absence of both boats, so that we did not so soon as we expected reach New York. I did not find that life and harmony here that there have been in times past. I have just now obtained and am reading Mr. Wesley's Life, the work of Dr. Coke and Mr. Moore, containing five hundred and forty-two pages. It is in general well compiled, but the history of American Methodism is inaccurate in some of its details, and in some which are interesting. For some days past I have been occupied

in reading, and in meeting the several women's classes, and found the Lord was among them.

As very probably all my life which I shall be able to write will be found in my journal, it will not be improper to relate something of my earlier years, and to give a brief account of my first labors in the ministry.

I was born in Old England, near the foot of Hampstead Bridge in the parish of Handsworth, about four miles from Birmingham, in Staffordshire, and according to the best of my after-knowledge, on the 20th or 21st day of August, in the year of our Lord 1745.

My father's name was Joseph, and my mother's Elizabeth Asbury. They were people in common life, were remarkable for honesty and industry, and had all things needful to enjoy. Had my father been as saving as laborious he might have been wealthy. As it was, it was his province to be employed as a farmer and gardener by the two richest families in the parish. My parents had but two children—a daughter, called Sarah, and myself. My lovely sister died in infancy. She was a favorite, and my dear mother, being very affectionate, sunk into deep distress at the loss of a darling child, from which she was not relieved for many years. It was under this dispensation that God was pleased to open the eyes of her mind, she living in a very dark, dark, dark day and place. She now began to read almost constantly when leisure presented the opportunity. When a child, I thought it strange my mother should stand by a large window poring over a book for hours together. From my childhood, I may say, I have neither.

“Dared an oath, nor hazarded a lie.”

The love of truth is not natural, but the habit of telling it I acquired very early ; and so well was I taught, that my conscience would never permit me to swear profanely. I learned from my parents a certain form of words for prayer, and I well remember my mother strongly urged my father to family reading and prayer. The singing of psalms was much practiced by them both. My foible was the ordinary foible of children—fondness for play ; but I abhorred mischief and wickedness, although my mates were among the vilest of the vile for lying, swearing, fighting, and whatever else boys of their age and evil habits were likely to be guilty of. From such society I very often returned home uneasy and melancholy ; and, although driven away by my better principles, still I would return, hoping to find happiness where I never found it. Sometimes I was much ridiculed, and called *Methodist Parson*, because my mother invited any people who had the appearance of religion to her house.

I was sent to school early, and began to read the Bible between six and seven years of age, and greatly delighted in the historical part of it. My school-master was a great churl, and used to beat me cruelly. This drove me to prayer, and it appeared to me that God was near to me. My father having but the one son, greatly desired to keep me at school, he cared not how long ; but in this design he was disappointed, for my master, by his severity, had filled me with such horrible dread, that with me any thing was preferable to going to school. I lived some time in one of the wealthiest and most ungodly families we had in the parish. Here I became vain, but not

openly wicked. Some months after this I returned home and made my choice, when about thirteen years and a half old, to learn a branch of business at which I wrought about six years and a half. During this time I enjoyed great liberty, and in the family was treated more like a son or an equal than an apprentice.

Soon after I entered on that business God sent a pious man, not a Methodist, into our neighborhood, and my mother invited him to our house. By his conversation and prayers I was awakened before I was fourteen years of age. It was now easy and pleasing to leave my company, and I began to pray morning and evening, being drawn by the cords of love as with the bands of a man. I soon left our blind priest and went to West Bromwich church. Here I heard Ryland, Stillingfleet, Talbot, Bagnall, Mansfield, Hawes, and Venn—great names, and esteemed Gospel ministers. I became very serious, reading a great deal—Whitefield and Cennick's Sermons, and every good book I could meet with. It was not long before I began to inquire of my mother who, where, what were the Methodists. She gave me a favorable account, and directed me to a person that could take me to Wednesbury to hear them. I soon found this was not the Church—but it was better. The people were so devout: men and women kneeling down, saying *Amen*. Now, behold! they were singing hymns. Sweet sound! Why, strange to tell! the preacher had no prayer-book, and yet he prayed wonderfully! What was yet more extraordinary, the man took his text, and had no sermon-book. Thought I, "This is wonderful indeed! It is cer-

tainly a strange way, but the best way." He talked about confidence, assurance, etc., of which all my flights and hopes fell short. I had no deep convictions, nor had I committed any deep known sins. At one sermon, some time after, my companion was powerfully wrought on. I was exceedingly grieved that I could not weep like him, yet I knew myself to be in a state of unbelief. On a certain time, when we were praying in my father's barn, I believe the Lord pardoned my sins and justified my soul; but my companions reasoned me out of this belief, saying, "Mr. Mather said a believer was as happy as if he was in heaven." I thought I was not as happy as I would be there, and gave up my confidence, and that for months; yet I was happy, free from guilt and fear, and had power over sin, and felt great inward joy. After this, we met for reading and prayer, and had large and good meetings, and were much persecuted, until the persons at whose houses we held them were afraid, and they were discontinued. I then held meetings frequently at my father's house, exhorting the people there, as also at Sutton Colefield, and several souls professed to find peace through my labors. I met class awhile at Bromwich Heath, and met in band at Wednesbury. I had preached some months before I publicly appeared in the Methodist meeting-houses, but when my labors became more public and extensive some were amazed, not knowing how I had exercised elsewhere. Behold me now a local preacher! the humble and willing servant of any and of every preacher that called on me by night or by day—being ready, with hasty steps, to go far and wide to do good—visiting Derby-

shire, Staffordshire, Warwickshire, Worcestershire, and indeed almost every place within my reach, for the sake of precious souls, preaching, generally, three, four, and five times a week, and at the same time pursuing my calling. I think when I was between twenty-one and twenty-two years of age I gave myself up to God and his work, after acting as a local preacher near the space of five years. It is now the 19th of July, 1792. I have been laboring for God and souls about thirty years or upward.

Some time after I had obtained a clear witness of my acceptance with God, the Lord showed me, in the heat of youth and youthful blood, the evil of my heart. For a short time I enjoyed, as I thought, the pure and perfect love of God, but this happy frame did not long continue, although at seasons I was greatly blessed. While I was a traveling preacher in England I was much tempted, finding myself exceedingly ignorant of almost every thing a minister of the Gospel ought to know. How I came to America, and the events which have happened since, my journal will show.

Conn.] The Poor Have the Gospel Preached to Them.

Tuesday, 24. Rain to-day. After which we came to Reading; and although it was late, and the evening damp, I was unwilling to omit the opportunity of speaking to the people. Brother Hull, my fellow-traveler, went to bed very ill. God has wrought in this town; the spirit of prayer is among the people, and several souls have been brought to God.

Wednesday, 25. We came to Newtown—thence to Waterbury. Brother H. is still very ill. Here we were

entertained kindly, and at small charges ; the people submitted and were attentive to prayer. Thence we continued on to Southerington. We dined at a public-house, where we had cheap, good, plain usage. Our host told us "It was the misfortune of the Methodists to fall in with some of the most ignorant, poor, and disreputable people in the State." My answer was. The poor have the Gospel preached to them ; that it had been aforetime asked, "Have any of the rulers believed on him?"

Mass.]

Conference at Lynn.

We came through Ashford, Pomfret, Mendon, and Douglass ; we lodged at a tavern, where the people were very obliging and attentive to prayer. Thence we rode to Medfield's to dinner ; thence through Dover, Newton, Cambridge, Malden, to Lynn, which we reached about midnight, having traveled sixty-five miles, my soul, meanwhile, continually filled with the goodness of God.

Thursday, August 2. Our conference met, consisting of eight preachers, much united, besides myself. In Lynn we have the outside of a house completed, and what is best of all, several souls profess to be converted to God. I preached on 1 John iv, 1-6, and had some life, but was too formal. There was preaching every night through the sitting of the conference.

Pittsfield With its Grand Meeting-House.

Wednesday, 8. We came to Belchertown, and were kindly entertained at W.'s ; thence we pushed on to Hadley, crossed Connecticut River, and stopped

at Northampton. Ah! where is the blessedness of which we formerly heard in this place? I inquired of our host, but received little satisfactory information. I proposed prayer, but found it was not well received. I went to bed weary and unwell, and about half past six o'clock next morning set out again over the rocks and uneven roads across the mountain, having passed through Worthington, Chesterfield, and Partridgefield. I wondered to see the people settled here so thickly among the rocks, where the soil can only be cultivated by the iron hand of active, laborious industry. I should prefer any part of the Alleghany, where it is not too rocky, because the land is better. We made it forty miles to Pittsfield, and our journey was more disagreeable from the falling of a heavy shower. We have now ridden about one hundred and seventy miles from Lynn in four days. My mind has been variously exercised, and my body much fatigued. If I have been kept from sin, to the Lord's name be all the glory! Pittsfield is a pleasant plain, extending from mountain to mountain; the population may consist of two thousand souls. There is a grand meeting-house and steeple, both as white and glistening as Solomon's temple. The minister, as I learn, is on the New Divinity plan. I heard the experience of one of the first settlers in the town, who was clearly brought out of bondage; but by resting in unfailing perseverance he again grew cold. Of late he has been stirred up and restored by the instrumentality of the Methodists. I was pleased to enjoy the privilege of retiring alone to the cooling sylvan shades in frequent converse with my best Friend.

N. Y.] "A Joyful, Happy Conference at Albany."

Wednesday, 15. Came to Albany, and had a joyful, happy conference, twenty-one preachers being present. We constituted two deacons and four elders. Each preacher was called upon to speak of his exercises and observations since our last annual session. We examined our doctrines, and whether our faith was still firm in those which were believed and taught among us. We appointed Jonathan Newman as a missionary to the whites and Indians on the frontiers. We also sent another to Cataraqui.

We had preaching in the market-house in Albany, and notwithstanding our hurry and crowd we were happy, and had living testimonies from preachers and people. I trust two hundred have been converted in the district since last conference.

Asbury at Governor Van Cortlandt's.

Thursday, 23. I breakfasted at Governor Van Cortlandt's. I feel as if the Lord had been striving here.

Saturday, 25. Came to the quarterly meeting at New Rochelle. The Lord gave light and liberty in speaking. We had a meeting with the local preachers, stewards, and leaders who were present. Mr. Hammett's rejoinder has made its appearance. N. Manners has also come to town to spread his doctrine and distribute his books. Were he a gracious man I cannot think he would write as he does against Mr. Wesley and Mr. Fletcher. Perhaps he will find it rather easier to write and print books than to sell and pay the cost of publishing them.

Sunday, 26. I preached to a vast congregation,

with liberty, on 1 Cor. iii, 15, 16. Many hearts were touched, and we had a blessed season at love-feast and sacrament.

Conference in New York—"Happy Poverty."

Monday, 27. Came to New York and opened conference, twenty-eight preachers being present. We spent most of the afternoon in prayer, and nearly all the preachers gave an account of what each had seen and felt since last conference. The young gave their experience, and several professed sanctification.

Friday, 31. We had a solemn love-feast, the lower floor of the house being nearly filled. Several of the brethren professed perfect love; others had lost the witness.

My mind has been so bent to the business of the conference that I have slept but little this week. Connecticut is supplied much to my mind, several very promising young men having been admitted this conference. The societies are in harmony, but not as lively as they ought to be. I went to hear Dr. L., but was greatly disappointed. He had such a rumbling voice that I could understand but little in that great house. How elegant the building! How small the appearances of religion! Lord, have mercy upon the Reformed Churches! O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord! I was much obliged to my friends for renewing my clothing and giving me a little pocket-money; this is better than £500 per annum.

N. J.]

An Unkind Act from a Kind Friend.

Sunday, September 2. We had severe crossing the North River; it was as much as ever the horses could

do to keep their feet. We came to Newark, and thence to Elizabethtown, in Jersey. I now began to unbend my mind, and became very happy. I went up stairs, sat in my chair, rested my head, and slept solidly ; but a kind friend would have me waked, which made me sick.

Pa.] Philadelphia a Wicked City—The Mobility.

Wednesday, 5. Passed through Crosswicks and Burlington, and came to Philadelphia.

Thursday, 6. We had great peace in our conference. The preachers gave a feeling account of the work of God. We had more preachers than we needed this time ; both they and the people were lively. Most of our brethren in the ministry can now stand the greatest exertions.

Sabbath Morning, 9. We had a melting love-feast ; the mouths of many were opened to declare the loving-kindness of the Lord. I preached, but did not like their ill-contrived house. At Ebenezer I had an attentive congregation, to whom I spoke on Phil. i, 18. At night the *mobility* came in like the roaring of the sea. Boys were around the doors, and streets were in an uproar. They had been alarmed by a shout the night before, which, probably, was one cause of the congregation being so large. Brother A. went to prayer ; a person cried out. Brother C. joined in prayer ; the wicked were collected to oppose. I felt the powers of darkness were very strong. After ending my discourse Brother M. rose up and mentioned the shocking conduct he had observed among them : fighting, swearing, threatening, etc. This is a wicked, horribly wicked, city, and if the people do not reform I think they will be let loose

upon one another, or else God will send the pestilence among them, and slay them by hundreds and thousands.

Del.]

Resting at Home.

Saturday, 15. Rode to Camden. To Dr. Barrett, a true son of a worthy father, we are chiefly indebted for a neat, economical meeting-house. I had so many friends I knew not where to go. My attendance on conferences and quarterly meetings has lately been so constant I found it expedient to make a sudden change and come home. In my way I stopped at a friend's house: the woman had been early a member, the man not of us. I pressed family prayer upon her from Divine authority; I saw her tears and heard her promises. Came home to T. White's. I resolved on the establishment of a prayer-meeting for the women before I go hence.

This day I spent in reading, writing, meditation, and prayer. To be retired and solitary is desirable after the presence of crowds, and the labors, various and unceasing, to which I am called. When our Lord was pursued by the people, he, as a man, would hide himself. I thought, if my brethren would not spare me I must spare myself.

Va.] A Comfortable Conference and a "Burning Love-feast."

Thursday, 27. Crossed Pocomoke to L.'s. At Downings's at night. Brother Everett was sick. I had a large congregation at Garrettson chapel, and was much blessed on Rom. viii, 28, 29. I had a comfortable conference with the leaders, stewards, local preachers, and exhorters, and we had a living love-feast.

Md.]

A Day at Judge White's.

Monday, October 1. We rode to Choptank, now Greensborough, and preached on Ephes. ii, 17, and some power went through the house. I had a good conference with the local brethren, making close inquiries relative to themselves, their families, and the societies to which they respectively belong.

I stopped a day at Judge White's, and read in haste the most essential parts of "Jefferson's Notes." I have thought it may be I am safer to be occasionally among the people of the world, than wholly confined to the indulgent people of God. He who sometimes suffers from a famine will the better know how to relish a feast.

Dr. Coke's Arrival—General Conference.

Tuesday, 30. Came to Baltimore in a storm of rain. While we were sitting in the room at Mr. Rogers's in came Dr. Coke, of whose arrival we had not heard, and whom we embraced with great love.

Thursday, November 1. I felt awful at the General Conference, which began this day. At my desire they appointed a moderator and preparatory committee, to keep order and to bring forward the business with regularity. We had heavy debates on the first, second, and third sections of our form of discipline. My power to station the preachers without an appeal was much debated, but finally carried by a very large majority. Perhaps a new bishop, new conference, and new laws would have better pleased some. I have been much grieved for others, and distressed with the burden I bear, and must hereafter bear. O my soul, enter into rest! Ah, who am I,

that the burden of the work should lie on my heart, hands, and head?

Thursday, 8. Having taken cold, and had my rest broken, I went to bed to bring on a free perspiration, and from this I received relief. My soul breathed unto God, and I was exceedingly happy in his love. Some individuals among the preachers having their jealousies about my influence in the conference, I gave the matter wholly up to them, and to Dr. Coke who presided. Meantime I sent them the following letter:

Asbury's Note to the General Conference.

MY DEAR BRETHREN: Let my absence give you no pain—Dr. Coke presides. I am happily excused from assisting to make laws by which myself am to be governed; I have only to obey and execute. I am happy in the consideration that I never stationed a preacher through enmity or as a punishment. I have acted for the glory of God, the good of the people, and to promote the usefulness of the preachers. Are you sure that if you please yourselves the people will be as fully satisfied? They often say, "Let us have such a preacher;" and sometimes, "We will not have such a preacher; we will sooner pay him to stay at home." Perhaps I must say, "His appeal forced him upon you." I am one, ye are many. I am as willing to serve you as ever. I want not to sit in any man's way. I scorn to solicit votes. I am a very trembling, poor creature to hear praise or dispraise. Speak your minds freely, but remember you are only making laws for the present time. It may be that as in some other things so in this, a future day may give you further light. I am yours, etc.,

FRANCIS ASBURY.

Mr. O'Kelly Withdraws from the Connection.

Mr. O'Kelly, being disappointed in not getting an appeal from any station made by me, withdrew from the connection and went off. For himself, the conference well knew he could not complain of the regulation. He had been located to the south district of Virginia for about ten succeeding years, and upon his plan might have located himself, and any preacher or set of preachers, to the district whether the people wished to have them or not.

Va.] Increase of Methodism—Statistics.

Tuesday, December 11. Rode to H.'s, near Lewisburg. Here I met the preachers in conference, and we were closely employed until *Saturday* morning. We had about forty preachers from the two districts in North Carolina. Our labors finished, we rode to Neuse River.

Sunday, 16. Preached at Merritt's.

Monday, 17. Rode fifteen miles to S.'s ; preached on *Christ*, the believer's wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption. We had a difficult road in going to Haw River, but a kind Providence brought us along very well, although the weather was exceedingly cold. We crossed the stream by fording about eight o'clock, and about ten arrived at R.'s, very cold and in much pain. I know not why, but so it is, that I cannot feel that I hold such sweet communion with God in cold weather as in warm. It may be that

“Nature, being oppressed,
Commands the mind to suffer with the body.”

The great love and union which prevailed at the late conference makes me hope many souls will be

converted in the ensuing year. An account was brought in of the conversion of about three hundred souls last week within its limits, chiefly in the Lowland circuits. Glory be to God! I feel that he is with us, and I have good evidence that fifteen or eighteen hundred souls have professed to have been converted in the United States within the last twelve months.

S. C.]

Mr. Hammett and Dr. Coke.

Saturday, 29. Rode thirty-three miles to Charleston. Found our little flock in peace, and a small revival among them.

Mr. Hammett has raised a grand house, and has written an appeal to the British conference. He represents Dr. Coke as a sacrilegious tyrant and murderer. I have no doubt but the Doctor will be able to make good his cause. As to Hammett, time will show the man and the people who have made lies their refuge.

Ga.]

Asbury Between Two Fires.

Friday, January, 25, 1793. I rode fifteen miles to my very loving friend's, Brother D. Here my mind was exercised with what I heard and felt. Mr. Matthews wrote Brother D. he had been taught *my iniquity*, to which Mr. H. (his brother) gave his sanction. And why was I thus charged? Because I did not establish Mr. Wesley's absolute authority over the American connection. For myself, this I had submitted to; but the Americans were too jealous to bind themselves to yield to him in all things relative to Church government. Mr. Wesley was a man they had never seen—was three thousand miles off—

how might submission in such a case be expected? Brother Coke and myself gave offense to the connection by enforcing Mr. Wesley's will in some matters, for which I do not blame Mr. Wesley. Like other great men, he had his elbow friends; and like other people, I had my enemies.

Ruins of Whitefield's Orphan House.

Tuesday, 29. We reach Savannah. Next day I rode twelve miles along a fine sandy road to view the ruins of Mr. Whitefield's Orphan House. The wings are yet standing, though much injured, and the school-house still more. It is reported that Mr. Whitefield observed while eating his last dinner in the house, "This house was built for God, and cursed be the man that puts it to any other use." The land for the support of the school is of little value, except two rice plantations which we passed in our route.

Seceders and Revilers.

Saturday, February 2. I am not enough in prayer. I have said more than was for the glory of God concerning those who have left the American connection, and who have reviled Mr. Wesley, Mr. Fletcher, Doctor Coke, and poor *me*. O that I could trust the Lord more than I do, and leave his cause wholly in his own hands!

S. C.] Difficulty in Finding Entertainment.

Sunday, 3. Preached at Black Swamp church on 2 Cor. iii, 9. The subject was pointed, and the people were attentive.

Monday, 4. I preached at Purisburg to a full house.

Some of the women appeared to feel the word. We had a heavy ride. I was faint and low-spirited at the view which I could not fail to take of the state of professors and sinners. I had about fifty hearers, and was invited to a friend's house, but thought it best to pursue my journey. We came to Salt Ketchers bridge, where we stopped to pay our fare; but O the scent of rum, and men filled with it! How shocking! Who could enter such a house? I hoped for quiet private entertainment at Red Hill, but the gentleman refused to receive us for love, money, or hospitality's sake. I then sent Brother R. to know if we could get in at the next negro quarter. Into the house we might be permitted to enter, but we could get no corn for our horses, and no bed for ourselves. Overseers dare not, and their employers will not, receive strangers. They are too proud to sell and too covetous to give. At length we providentially reached a Mr. C.'s, a school-master and minister. We bought some corn for our horses, and had tea and bread and cheese for ourselves. I saw some beautiful boys at this house. Had these children the opportunity of a northern education, what choice young men they might make! I was happy in the house, and pleased with two poor blacks who were much moved under prayer. Next morning I set out about six o'clock, and passing the Fishpond we came on slowly to Parker's Ferry. I found my appointment to meet Brother Jackson was not properly made, and as it was out of my way I made a sudden turn to G.'s, on Edisto River. After dinner I met with —, who offered to be our guide; but when I began to show him his folly and the dangerous state of his soul, he

soon left us, and we had to beat our way through the swamps as well as we could. He said he had killed a negro worth sixty pounds and a valuable horse with racing. Pushing on, we found our way to the ferry, and crossed about eight o'clock.

Membership in the United States Fifty Thousand.

Tuesday, 12. I make it my work to visit every afternoon. I happily met with Mr. Wesley's Journal, bringing the date down to two years before his death. I could not but specially notice that his latter days were more abundant in labors ; and that he preached in places formerly unnoticed. He made this observation, (so fixed on my mind,) that it is rare—a mere miracle—for a Methodist to increase in wealth and not decrease in grace. I have now read the third volume of Gordon's History, Burnham's Select Martyrology, and Memoirs of Dying Saints. We have two hundred and seventeen traveling preachers and about fifty thousand members in the United States. Glory to God in the highest !

N. Y.]

Restless Men—Asbury's Spirit.

Sunday, March 24. I preached on 1 Cor. xiv, 3. There was a noise and shaking each day. Some were awakened, one professed to be converted, and several to be quickened. The meeting lasted from nine A. M. to four o'clock P. M. "While he was yet speaking there came also another." I heard there was a conference appointed at Reese's chapel, in Charlotte county, Virginia, to form what they call a free constitution and a pure Church, and to reject me and my creatures. I know not whose hand is

in this. I hope they will call themselves by another name. Only let them settle in congregations and tax the people, and I know how it will work. If we (itinerant connection) would give the government into the hands of a local ministry, as some would have it, and tax the people to pay preachers for Sabbath work, this would please such men; but this we dare not do. Whenever the people are unwilling to receive us, and think they can do better, we will quietly withdraw from them, and if those who wish the change can serve them better than we have done, well. Perhaps some of them may think with —, in Georgia, that I am the greatest villain on the continent. I bid such adieu, and appeal to the bar of God. I have no time to contend, having better work to do. If we lose some children God will give us more. Ah! this is the mercy, the justice, of some who, under God, owe their all to me and my *tyrants*, so called. The Lord judge between them and me! There appears to be a general quickening in the Yadkin circuit, and about eight souls have professed conversion there in the last three months.

A Journey Over the Mountains.

Wednesday, 27. We began our journey over the great ridge of mountains. We had not gone far before we saw and felt the snow, and the sharpness of the air gave me a deep cold, not unlike an influenza. We came to the head of Watauga River. Stopped at Mr. S.'s, and had some enlargement on "The promise is to you and to your children," etc. My soul felt for these neglected people. It may be, by my coming this way, Providence will so order it that I shall send

them a preacher. We hasted on to Cove's Creek, invited ourselves to stay at C.'s, where we made our own tea, obtained some butter and milk and some most excellent Irish potatoes. We were presented with a little flax for our beds, on which we spread our coats and blankets, and three of us slept before a large fire.

Thursday, 28. We made an early start, and came to the Beaver Dam. Three years ago we slept here in a cabin without a cover. We made a breakfast at Mr. W.'s, and then attempted the iron or stone mountain, which is steep, like the roof of a house. I found it difficult and trying to my lungs to walk up it. Upon descending the mountain we had to jump down the steep stairs, from two to three and four feet. At the foot of this mountain our guide left us to a man on foot, who soon declined, and we made the best of our way to Dugger's ford, on Roan's Creek. We came down the river, where there are plenty of large, round, rolling stones, and the stream was rapid. My horse began to grow dull; an intermittent fever and a deep cold disordered me much. I was under obligations to Henry Hill, my new aid, who was ready to do any thing for me in his power. Perhaps Providence moved him to offer to travel with me, and his father to recommend him. Twenty years ago a rude open loft did not affect me; now it seldom fails to injure me.

Tenn.]

Respect of Presbyterians for Ministers.

Friday, 29. We took our journey deliberately. We passed Doe River at the fork, and came through the Gap; a most gloomy scene—not unlike the Shades of Death in the Alleghany mountain. Mr. L., a kind

Presbyterian, fed our horses gratis. I must give the Presbyterians the preference for respect to ministers.

Ky.] "None Need Desire to be an American Bishop."

Saturday, April 13. We rode thirty-three miles down to a quarterly meeting at Humphries chapel. Here my presence surprised the brethren. The state of the work here appears to be low. I had some light, life, and liberty in preaching, and some felt the word. We closed our meeting after several had joined in prayer. Lord, remember the labors of this day! Let not thy faithful word fall to the ground! From the quarterly meeting we came to Colonel Harding's. He has been gone some time, as a commissioner, to treat with the Indians. If he is dead, here is a widow and six children left. I cannot yet give him up for lost. We had a large congregation at W.'s, where I was led out on Psa. xxxiv, 17-20. I cannot stand quarterly meetings every day. None need desire to be an American bishop, upon our plan, for the ease, honor, or interest that attends the office. From my present views and feelings I am led to wish the conference would elect another bishop, which might afford me some help.

The Discipline Read Through in Conference.

Monday, 29. Rode through the rain to Lexington. I stopped at C. White's once more. O that God may help him safe to glory! Came to Brother Morgan's. I felt awful and solemn, and some dejection of mind. Ah! want of religion is too visible in most houses.

Tuesday, 30, Wednesday, May 1, Thursday, 2, we

spent in conference, and in openly speaking our minds to each other. We ended under the melting, praying, praising power of God. We appointed trustees for the school, and made sundry regulations relative thereto. We read the Form of Discipline through, section by section, in conference.

Another Journey through the Wilderness.

Tuesday, 7. We rode down to the Crab Orchard, where we found company enough, some of whom were very wild. We had a company of our own, and refused to go with them. Some of them gave us very abusive language, and one man went up on a hill above us and fired a pistol toward our company. We resolved to travel in our order, and bound ourselves by honor and conscience to support and defend each other, and to see every man through the wilderness. But we could not depend upon wicked and unprincipled men, who would leave and neglect us, and even curse us to our faces. Nor were we at liberty to mix with swearers, liars, drunkards, and, for aught we know, this may not be the worst with some. We were about fourteen or fifteen in company, and had twelve guns and pistols. We rode on near the defeated camp, and rested till three o'clock under great suspicion of the Indians. We pushed forward, and by riding forty-five miles on *Wednesday*, and about the same distance on *Thursday*, we came safe to Robinson's station about eight o'clock.

Tenn.]

Much Travel and Many Trials.

Saturday, 11. We came to Brother Van Pelt's, with whom we rested on the *Sabbath*. I have traveled between five and six hundred miles in the last four

weeks, and have rested from riding fifteen days at conferences and other places. I have been much distressed with this night work—no regular meals nor sleep—and it is difficult to keep up prayer in such rude companies as we have been exposed to. I have also been severely afflicted through the whole journey.

Monday, 13. Was a day of great trial. We rode about forty-six miles. Stopped at —, where, through carelessness, I nearly had been burned up.

Va.] Peace in the Conference and Happiness in the Cabin.

Friday, 24. Came to Rehoboth, in the sinks of Greenbrier, where we held our conference. I was greatly comforted at the sight of Brothers B. J. and Ellis Cox. We had peace in our conference, and were happy in our cabin. I learn that mischief is begun in the lower parts of Virginia. J. O'Kelly and some of the local preachers are the promoter and encouragers of divisions among the brethren.

Preachers Leaving the Itinerancy.

Saturday, June 1. I spent the evening with Doctor Dulany. Rose and took the rain next morning as usual, having had rain for eight or ten days successively. On my way I was met by an old German, who shook me by the hand, and said he wished he might be worthy to wash my feet. Yea, thought I, if you knew what a poor sinful creature I am you would hardly look at one so unworthy. But Jesus lives. O precious Christ, thou art mine and I am thine!

Came to Newtown; the roads exceeding miry, and our horses very tired. We are glad to get a little rest at Brother Phelps's. My soul has been much

tried by Satan, and I am pained for the work of God. In my six months' travel I find that six acceptable preachers are preparing to settle themselves in the world and leave the itinerancy.

Asbury at Bath.

Friday, 7. We rode to Bath, that seat of sin. Here we continued to rest ourselves. My public work was a sermon on the Sabbath. A number of our society from various parts being here, I have an opportunity of receiving and answering many letters. I am afraid I shall spend nine or ten days here to little purpose. I employ myself in reading Thomas à Kempis and the Bible. I also have an opportunity of going alone into the silent grove, and of viewing the continent and examining my own heart. I hope for some relief from my rheumatic complaint which has so oppressed me for six months past. The people here are so gay and idle that I doubt there being much good done among them. The troubles of the east and west meet me as I pass.

Md.]

Conference at Oldtown.

Sunday, 16. A number of us crossed the ferry at the mouth of Great Capon, and made our way through great heat to Oldtown, thirty-two miles. We were obliged to ride moderately, or the excessive warmth of the weather might have killed our horses. We had no small consolation in uniting the brethren from three districts in conference, whose names only were before known to each other. I gave them one sermon on "Pray for the peace of Jerusalem; they shall prosper that love thee." Our conference sat three days successively, very closely employed.

The Difference Between the True and False Minister.

Thursday, 20. I had some little time to read, write, and pray. My congregation was careless and unfeeling. I enforced David's charge to Solomon. Methinks it ought to be with those who have to do with souls as with a tender, feeling physician that attends a patient. Does the fever rage, or the delirium continue? His countenance is sad, and when labor and medicine fail, and the symptoms continue to grow worse, he is then forced, as a skillful physician, to pronounce his patient incurable, while a quack flatters and sees no danger. Such is the difference between a true minister of Christ and a false teacher, when applied to the souls of men.

N. J.] "They Suspected we were Preachers."

Wednesday, July 10. We came to Broadhead's, and were totally unknown. I was sick and stopped for breakfast. They suspected we were preachers, and one asked Brother Hill who I was, and on being informed, the mother, son, and daughter came running with tears to speak with me. I stopped and gave them a sermon at Marbletown. I found the work of God going on among the Low Dutch. These, of all the people in America, we have done the least with.

N. Y.] Albany—No Sympathy from the Rich.

Saturday, 13. We rode to Coeyman's Patent. We had a good quarterly meeting, and many newly-converted souls testified of the goodness of God, and of the power of his grace. From thence to Albany, with reluctance, and lectured, being Sabbath evening. I felt the wickedness of the people, but we had a

melting season among the preachers in our conference. Great changes will be made among the preachers from this conference: some will be sent to New Jersey, others to Rhode Island and Massachusetts. The people of Albany roll in wealth, but they have no heart to invite any of the servants of God to their houses. Unless a great change should take place we shall have no more conferences here. I am tired down with fatigue and labor under great weakness of body, yet I must haste to Lynn—it may be to meet trouble. But my days will be short.

“My suff’ring time will soon be o’er;
Then shall I sigh and weep no more:
My ransomed soul shall soar away,
To sing God’s praise in endless day.”

We hope two hundred souls have been awakened, and as many converted, in Albany district the past year. Our friends are happy here, not being distressed with divisions in the Church, nor by war with the Indians, as they are to the southward. According to our reckoning we make it about four hundred and forty-seven miles from Oldtown to Albany, to come the mountainous road through the woods, and to come by Baltimore, Philadelphia, and New York it is six hundred miles.

Conn.] A Day of Small Things in Connecticut and Rhode
Island.

Monday, 22. We rode fifteen miles to Sharon, twenty miles to Litchfield. There is a little move among the people of this place.

Tuesday, 23. Came to H.’s. I rested in a very solitary shade, and was comforted in my own mind. Perhaps the old man is right who says, Not many of

this generation will enter into the promised land, but their children. Came to East Hartford, and find it still a day of small things. Falling under deep dejection, (such as I had not known in months,) I concluded to preach this evening, for my own consolation, on "Thou that teachest another, teachest thou not thyself?" We passed through and spent a night at Windham, a pleasant town, and thence through Canterbury and Plainfield, where our preachers from Connecticut have visited ; but it is a dry land—little rain in a double sense. Thence I came upon the State of Rhode Island. Stopped in Coventry, and found that the two preachers stationed here have been running over almost the whole State, and had formed but few societies. When I came to Providence I was told by I. Martin that, under the present difficulties, they had agreed not to forward the preachers of the Methodists among them, nor to befriend them. I asked for a tavern, and was directed to General T.'s, where I was used well.

Mass.]

A Spectacle to Men and Angels.

Monday, 29. We rode upward of thirty miles, through great heat, to Lynn. On our way we fed our horses, and bought a cake and some cheese for ourselves. Surely we are a spectacle to men and angels! The last nine days we have ridden upward of two hundred miles, and, all things taken together, I think it worse than the wilderness. The country abounds with rocks, hills, and stones, and the heat is intense—such as is seldom known in these parts.

Tuesday, 30. Preached in Lynn on 2 Chron. xv, 2. the prophecy of Azariah by the Spirit.

"Pain begets Invention."

Wednesday, August 7. We passed several little towns and came to Milford, about nineteen miles from Needham. Here they have a good priest's house and meeting house, and all appear to be in the fullness of bread. About three hundred were soon collected, to whom I preached on "The love of Christ constraineth us," etc. The man in whose house we lodged was very kind, and told me his father held society meeting in the house where we preached, and that, except conditional perseverance, he preached our doctrines. We rode through Minden, Douglas, Thompson, and Woodstock; but missing our way, and being very unwell, as I have been some time with an inflammation in my throat, we concluded to turn in at a tavern and spend the night in pain. Pain begets invention. I now began to think, What shall I do? I am my own physician. I sent for two blisters, applied both to my ears, and then began to march to Ashford. I turned in at Mr. W.'s, met Brothers T. and S., and was dragged out to baptize a household while I had a fever. The weather was excessively warm, like Carolina. I had an awful night.

Conn.] Conference at Tolland—Asbury a Sufferer.

Monday, 12. Our conference sat at Tolland. Lame as I was I went through the business; and notwithstanding I was tired out with labor, heat, pain, and company, I must also preach. So I submitted, and endeavored to apply 2 Tim. ii, 24-26. Being unable to ride on horseback, I drove on in a carriage through the rain over the rocks in the dark, and came to Doctor Steel's at Ellington.

Yesterday the pain seized my right foot. I am now not able to move from my horse to a house ; an attack of this kind generally terminates in about eight days.

New Divinity Intolerant.

Thursday, 15. Came in Brother S.'s carriage to Hartford. From what we can gather, we are encouraged to hope that upward of three hundred souls have been awakened, and more than two hundred converted to God, the last year. If this work goes on, Satan will be laboring by all means and by every instrument. From Hartford I came to Middletown. I slept at E. F.'s, who was the first Separate minister on the west of Connecticut River, and a man who had labored and written much. Had his learning been equal to his piety and good sense, the *standing order* would have trembled under his hand. Who would think his Church would vote him out, when old and gray-headed, because he could not subscribe to the New Divinity? He is now, as he saith, like a broken vessel, and upward of fourscore years of age. His wife and children favor us.

I came to New Haven, thence to Derby, and had a return of the inflammation in my throat. Came to West Haven—very unwell. I had heavy work to get to Reading, being lame in both feet. I laid myself down on the road-side, and felt like Jonah or Elijah. I took to my bed at Reading.

N. Y.]

Asbury in a Mill-Race.

Wednesday, 21. When I came near the White Plains my horse started and threw me into a mill-race knee-deep in water, my hands and side in the

dirt; my shoulder was hurt by the fall. I stopped at a house, shifted my clothes, and prayed with the people. If any of these are awakened by my stopping there, all will be well. This day I made out to ride thirty-three miles.

Sick, but Hard at Work.

Thursday, 22. Came to New York. The weather is extremely warm. Great afflictions prevail here—fluxes, fevers, influenzas. It is very sickly also in Philadelphia. I have found by secret search that I have not preached sanctification as I should have done. If I am restored, this shall be my theme more pointedly than ever, God being my helper. I have been sick upward of four months, during which time I have attended to my business, and ridden, I suppose, not less than three thousand miles. I kept close house in New York until *Sunday, 25*, when I attempted to preach on Romans xiii, 10–12. The weather being warm and dry, I caught an influenza which held me four days, and this in addition to my fevers and lameness. The effects of this weather were sensibly felt by every member of conference, some of whom were so indisposed that they could not attend. We made a collection of forty pounds for the relief of the preachers on the frontiers of New York and Connecticut.

We have awful accounts from Philadelphia, which made me feel too much like a man and too little like a Christian.

N. J.]

Asbury at Burlington.

Monday, September 2. I rested. *Tuesday, 3.* Dined at Elizabethtown on my way to Philadelphia. *Wed-*

nesday, 4. I reached Trenton, and received a letter from Brother M—k—y, requesting me to come to Burlington, and that it was doubtful whether it were prudent to go to Philadelphia on account of the contagion that then prevailed in that city. I did not reach Burlington so soon as was expected, and the preachers went on to Philadelphia. I preached in Burlington, and the people were very solemn.

Pa.] Asbury in Philadelphia in the Midst of Contagion.

Friday, 6. We rode to the city. Ah! how the ways mourn! how low-spirited are the people while making their escape! I judge the people die from fifty to one hundred in a day. Some of our friends are dying, others flying.

Sunday, 8. I preached on Isa. lviii, 1: "Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins." The people of this city are alarmed, and well they may be. I went down to Ebenezer, (a church in the lower part of the city,) but my strength was gone; however, I endeavored to open and apply Micah vi, 9. The streets are now depopulated, and the city wears a gloomy aspect. All night long my ears and heart were wounded with the cry of fire! And what made it still more serious, two young men were killed by the fall of a wall, one of whom was a valuable member of our society. Poor Philadelphia! the lofty city, He layeth it low! We appointed *Tuesday*, 9th, to be observed as a day of humiliation. I preached on 1 Kings viii, 37-40, and had a large and very serious weeping congregation. The preachers left the city on *Monday*; I

continued in order to have the minutes of conference printed.

Wednesday, 11. We left the city—solemn as death! The people of Derby and Chester are sickly, and they are greatly alarmed at Wilmington. I found a quiet retreat at friend Bond's, near New Castle.

Md.] "The People Pretended to be Afraid."

Friday, 27. We came to Easton, twenty-five miles. Here the people pretended to be afraid of my communicating the infection of the yellow fever, although I had been out of Philadelphia from the 9th to the 26th instant. I gave them a long discourse, and then rode to Hillsborough, and thence to Judge White's. Sickness prevails in every house, but there are not so many deaths as might be expected from general afflictions.

"O the Plague of Sin!"

Thursday, October 10. Came to Baltimore. Passed the guard against the plague in Philadelphia, set for prudence, one hundred miles off. O the plague of sin! Would to God we were more guarded against its baleful influence! I was sick, weary, and feeble, yet, preaching being appointed for me in town, I sounded the alarm on Jer. xiii, 16.

Va.] Asbury Speaks in Self-Defense.

Thursday, November 7. We had a serious congregation at Cumberland quarterly meeting. Some appeared to be much engaged.

My *Sabbath day's* journey was from Sister L.'s to a new chapel in Prince Edward, twenty miles, where, after preaching on Matt. xxiv, 12-14, I was led to say a

few things for myself—as to my coming to and staying in America ; of the exercise of that power which was given by the first and confirmed by the last General Conference. Many of the people thought me not that monster I had been represented. I thought this the more necessary here, as great pains had been taken to misrepresent and injure me in this congregation and neighborhood. So it is : when I am absent some will say what they please of me. After sacrament we came, weary and hungry, to Brother R.'s, by whom we were kindly entertained. My soul is stayed on the Lord, although Satan will push at me by means of the world, the flesh, and false brethren.

Conference at Petersburg.

Sunday, 24. Hasted to Petersburg. Came in a little before noon, and preached on Isa. lxvi, 4, 5.

Monday, 25, and the following days, were spent in conference. The preachers were united, and the Lord was with us of a truth. There were fifty-five preachers present. I had some difficulties respecting the stations ; but there was a willingness among the brethren to go where they were appointed, and all was well.

N. C.] Preachers Loyal to the General Conference.

Tuesday, December 10. Came to Lewisburg, and held our conference at Green Hills, about a mile from town. Great peace and unity prevailed among us. The preachers cheerfully signed an instrument, expressing their determination to submit to and abide by what the General Conference has done.

Friday, 13. Our conference rose. It was agreed

that the next conference should be held in Petersburg. There the preachers from North Carolina, Greenbrier, the Center and South Districts of Virginia, may all meet, and change properly, and unite together for their own and the people's good.

**S. C.] A Room Twelve Feet Square for Conference, Sleeping,
and Hospital.**

Monday, 30. We rode forty-five miles to Brother Cook's, on Broad River, and the next day to Brother Finch's. Here we are to have about thirty preachers from South Carolina and Georgia. We were straitened for room, having only twelve feet square to confer, sleep, and for the accommodation of those who were sick. Brother B. was attacked with the dysentery.

Wednesday, January 1, 1794. We removed Brother B. into a room without fire. We hastened the business of our conference as fast as we could. After sitting in a close room with a very large fire I retired into the woods nearly an hour, and was seized with a severe chill and an inveterate cough and fever. With difficulty I sat in conference the following day. I was attended by Doctor D.

I found I must go somewhere to get rest. The day was cloudy, and threatened snow. However, Brother R. E. and myself made out to get seven miles to dear old Brother A. Yeargin's house. The next day came on a heavy fall of snow, which continued two days, and was from six to ten inches deep. I had to let some blood. I made use of flaxseed, and afterward of betony-tea, both of which were of use to me.

Asbury Declines Going West—Reasons.

Monday, 20. I reached the city of Charleston. Here I began to rest, and my cold grew better. Dr. Ramsey directed me to the use of laudanum, niter, and bark, after cleansing the stomach with an emetic. The kindness of Sister Hughes was very great. I have written largely to the West, and declined visiting those parts this year. The American Alps, the deep snows and great rains, swimming the creeks and rivers, riding in the night, sleeping on the earthen floors, more or less of which I must experience if I go to the Western country, might at this time cost me my life. I have only been able to preach four times in three weeks.

Gordon's History of the Revolution.

I have read Gordon's History of the American Revolution. Here we view the suffering straits of the American army, and, what is greatly interesting, General Washington's taking his farewell of his officers. What an affecting scene! I could not but feel through the whole of the description. What, then, was the sight! O how minds are made great with affliction and suffering!

Poor Beverly Allen.

Poor Beverly Allen, who has been going from bad to worse these seven or eight years—speaking against me to preachers and people, and writing to Mr. Wesley and Doctor Coke, and being thereby the source of most of the mischief that has followed; and lastly, having been agent for Mr. —, is now secured in jail for shooting Major Forsyth through the head. The Major was marshal for the Federal Court in

Georgia, and was about to serve a writ upon B. A. The masterpiece of all is, a petition is prepared, declaring him to have shown marks of insanity previous to his killing the Major! The poor Methodists also must unjustly be put to the rack on his account, although he has been expelled from among us these two years. I have had my opinion of him these nine years, and gave Doctor C. my thoughts of him before his ordination. I pity, I pray for him—that, if his life be given up to justice, his soul may yet be saved.

“How Good were the Potatoes and Fried Gammon.”

Saturday, March 1. We set out in great spirits, having sixteen miles to the ferry, where we were detained six hours. We hoped to have been in Georgetown by sunset. Now we thought of traveling until midnight. We came to Cedar Creek, which we found in a bad state. We stayed at the ferry, being persuaded we could not reach Georgetown in time enough for meeting.

Sabbath Morning. We directed our course westward, and came along, drooping and solitary, to M.'s ferry, about twenty-five miles. We rode up to a large house, and were asked in to drink brandy. Three men and two women appeared to be set in to drink the *pure stuff*, glass after glass. We were glad to retreat. There came on a storm of rain, with thunder and lightning. I was unwilling to go to —, expecting the same kind of Sabbath devotion there. We traveled a most dreadful road to Black River, and had plenty of water above and below us. After riding fifteen miles we came to Widow B.'s, where we got shelter. Still we had our fears. There is such a quantity of water in the swamps and low lands that

our feet are kept very uncomfortable, and some places are impassable. Isaac Smith, in all these difficulties and trials of swamps, colds, rains, and starvation, was my faithful companion.

After riding twenty-seven miles without eating, how good were the potatoes and fried gammon! We then had only ten miles to Brother Rembert's, where we arrived about seven o'clock. I confess my soul and body have been sorely tried. What blanks are in this country, and how much worse are rice plantations! If a man-of-war is "a floating hell," these are standing ones: wicked masters, overseers, and negroes—cursing, drinking—no Sabbaths; no sermons.

A Cordial Reception—"Wife, Get Up."

Thursday, 20. I directed my course, in company with my faithful fellow-laborer, Tobias Gibson, up the Catawba, settled mostly by the Dutch. A barren spot for religion. Having ridden in pain twenty-four miles, we came, weary and hungry, to O.'s tavern, and were glad to take what came to hand. Four miles forward we came to Howe's Ford, upon Catawba River, where we could neither get a canoe nor guide. We entered the water in an improper place, and were soon among the rocks and in the whirlpools. My head swam, and my horse was affrighted; the water was to my knees, and it was with difficulty we retreated to the same shore. We then called to a man on the other side, who came and piloted us across, for which I paid him well. My horse being afraid to take the water a second time, Brother Gibson crossed and sent me his, and our guide took mine across. We went on, but our

troubles were not at an end ; night came on, and it was very dark. It rained heavily, with powerful lightning and thunder. We could not find the path that turned out to Connell's. In this situation we continued until midnight or past. At last we found a path which we followed till we came to dear old Father Harper's plantation. We made for the house, and called ; he answered, but wondered who it could be. He inquired whence we came ; I told him we would tell him that when we came in, for it was raining so powerfully we had not much time to talk. When I came dripping into the house, he cried, "God bless your soul ! is it Brother Asbury ? Wife, get up." Having had my feet and legs wet for six or seven hours causes me to feel very stiff.

N. C.]

The Care of All the Churches.

Sunday, 23. My subject at Justice White's was Heb. ii, 1-3 ; I had more people than I expected. I have visited this place once a year ; but Mr. K. and L. have both failed coming at all ; I pity them and the people. If I could think myself of any account, I might say with Mr. Wesley, "If it be so while I am alive, what will it be after my death ?" I have written several letters to the westward to supply my lack of service. I am mightily wrought upon for New Hampshire, Province of Maine, Vermont, and Lower Canada.

Va.] Why Some Left the Methodist Episcopal Church.

Wednesday, 23. I attended the funeral of R. O., who, I learn, died in the fear and love of God, of a consumption. I was too systematical for my con-

gregation, who were wild and unawakened. I baptized a few children, then crossed Symes's Ferry and came twelve miles to Brother Spencer's, in Charlotte County. Here report saith that there is sad work with those who have left us, and who are now exerting themselves to form as strong a party as they can. The principal of these are J. O'K., E. A., J. K., and J. C. I learn by a letter from J. Ellis that matters are not desperate; this letter, with some others, I shall reserve for a future day. If the real cause of this division was known, I think it would appear that one wanted to be immovably fixed in a district; another wanted money; a third wanted ordination; a fourth wanted liberty to do as he pleased about slaves, and not to be called to an account, etc.

"I Took my Staff and Faintly Ascended the Hill."

Monday, June 9. Rested at Brother Phelps's. My mind is in peace, but I feel the spiritual death of the people; they are not what they were in religion. I am now on the head branches of Opecken. I stopped awhile at J. H.'s, and then came on to Shepherdstown. It was a very instructive time to me; I cannot pretend to preach, yet I talk a little to the dear people, who flock to see and hear me by hundreds. I hope to be as much resigned to a life of affliction as a life of health, and thus may I be perfect in love and wholly crucified with Christ! I concluded, after my high fever and my being forced to bed, that it was out of the question for me to attempt to speak; but when I saw the people coming on every side, and thought "this may be the last time," and considered I had not been there for nearly five

years, I took my staff, faintly ascended the hill, and held forth on 1 John i, 6, 7, and felt strengthened, having a clear view of the word of God. After meeting we administered the sacrament, and I then returned to my bed. I preached at Fredericktown. Rode to Liberty. When I came there I was so faint, and my strength so spent, that I felt as if I could by no means attempt to preach; but after Brother R. had sung a hymn and prayed, I made a feeble attempt on Gal. i, 11, 12.

Md.] Asbury Submits to Have his Likeness Taken.

Tuesday, 17. I rode twenty-three miles to the Stone Chapel, where I preached on Peter's denial of his Lord.

Wednesday, 18. I once more came to Baltimore, where, after having rested a little, I submitted to have my likeness taken. It seems they will want a copy, and if they wait longer perhaps they may miss it. Those who have gone from us in Virginia have drawn a picture of me, which is not *taken from the life*. We called a meeting at Cokesbury, and made some regulations relative to the salaries of the teachers and the board of the students. I returned to Baltimore, and spent *Sabbath day, 22d*, there, and found the people but dull. Brother M'C. took his stand at the windmill between town and Point. My soul was quickened while applying these words: "Every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, things on earth, and things under the earth, and every tongue shall confess that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father." I was grieved to find the hearts of the people so cold in religion; the world is a thief, stealing the heart from God.

Pa.] At the New African Church in Philadelphia.

Sunday, 29. I preached at the new African church. Our colored brethren are to be governed by the doctrine and discipline of the Methodists. We had some stir among the people at Ebenezer. In the evening we had a cold time at the great church on Amos iv, 11. This has been a hard day's work.

N. J.] From Philadelphia to New York.

Monday, 30. I rode to Trenton—an exceedingly warm day—and preached in the evening. We rode to Kingston; thence to Brunswick; thence to Bonhamtown, and were weary enough when we got to Mr. B's. Poor Brother S. almost fainted, and went, outdone, to bed.

Came to Elizabethtown, and was grieved at the conduct of some of the preachers. O how careful should each one be lest he become a stumbling-block and destroy precious souls! As I cannot help, so neither am I to answer for, other men's sins.

N. Y.] Important Distinction—Asbury Firm.

Friday, July 4. Was the anniversary of Independence. I preached on 2 Pet. iii, 20, 21.

At dinner Mr. P. spoke a word in favor of Mr. G., (who was once with us, as also *he* had been;) this brought on an explanation of matters. My answer was, 1. That I did not make rules, but had to execute them. 2. That any one who desired me to act unconstitutionally either insulted me as an individual or the conference as a body of men. I hardly know sometimes where to set my foot. I must be

always on my guard, and take heed to what I say of and before any one. Lord, make me upright in heart and life before thee and all men !

Conn.]

Rate of Services.

Friday, 11. We came to New Haven ; thence to North Haven ; thence to Middlefields. The rain took us as we crossed the mountains, and made it heavy work. We found it poor times. Were I to be paid by man for my services I should rate them very high, it being so painful at present for me to ride that a small sum would not tempt me to travel forty miles a day. I bless the Lord for daily afflictions of body and mind. O may these things terminate in my total resignation to the will of God !

The Old Prophet.

Saturday, 12. The rain detained us till noon. I then came to Middletown, and preached at three o'clock in the Separate meeting-house with some life. I lodged with the old prophet, Frothingham. After this dear old man had labored and suffered many years, and had been imprisoned three times for the cause of Christ ; after he grew old and his memory failed, and he could not receive the *New Divinity*, they mistook and wrested his words, and his congregation turned him out to starve. But the Lord will provide.

Mass.]

Asbury in Boston—The Jack Tars.

Monday, 21. I came to Boston unwell in body, and with a heavy heart. I passed the road and bridge from the University to Boston. A noble road and

grand bridge. We have very agreeable lodging in this town, but have to preach, as did our Lord, in an upper room. We had a prayer-meeting, and the Lord was present to bless us.

Thursday, 22. I took up my cross and preached in a large room, which was full enough and warm enough. I stood over the street. The boys and Jack tars made a noise, but mine was loudest. There was fire in the smoke; some, I think, felt the word, and we shall yet have a work in Boston. My talk was strange and true to some.

R. L.] Not Free to Eat and Drink in Providence.

Tuesday, 29. Rode through Attlebury to Providence. I had no freedom to eat bread or drink water in that place. I found a calm retreat at General Lippelt's, where we can rest ourselves. The Lord is in this family. I am content to stay a day, and give them a sermon.

Conn.] New London Church Building.

Friday, August 1. Brother R. preached in the evening in New London.

Saturday, 2. I made my appearance in the court-house, and preached to about seven hundred people with considerable freedom.

Sunday, 3. We had a love-feast in the upper room of the court-house, where some spoke feelingly. Our sermon and sacrament took up three hours. God is certainly among these people. We have set on foot a subscription to build a house of worship, and have appointed seven trustees.

Ecclesiastical Chains—A Prophecy.

Sunday, 10. Brother R., though sick, went to Coventry, and I was left alone at Tolland, where I preached in the forenoon, on Acts ii, 37, 38, with some freedom, and in the afternoon on Colossians ii, 6, and found it heavy work. After meeting I was taken with a dysentery, (attended with great sinking of bodily powers,) which held me most of the night. *Monday* I was better, and preached in a school-house at Ellington. I felt great dejection of spirit, but no guilt or condemnation. Ah! here are the iron walls of prejudice; but God can break them down. Out of fifteen united States thirteen are free, but two are fettered with ecclesiastical chains—taxed to support ministers who are chosen by a small committee and settled for life. My simple prophecy is, that this must come to an end with the present century. The Rhode Islanders began in time, and are now free. Hail, sons of liberty! Who first began the war? Was it not Connecticut and Massachusetts? and priests are now saddled upon them. I heard — read a most severe letter from a citizen of Vermont, to the clergy and Christians of Connecticut, striking at the foundation and principle of the hierarchy, and the policy of Yale College and the independent order. It was expressive of the determination of the Vermonters to continue free from ecclesiastical fetters, to follow the Bible, and give liberty, equal liberty, to all denominations of professing Christians. If so, why may not the Methodists (who have been repeatedly solicited) visit these people also?

Mass.]

The New Chapel in Wilbraham.

Sunday, 17. I came to the new chapel in Wilbraham, forty by thirty-four feet, neatly designed on the Episcopal plan. I preached to about four hundred people, who were very attentive, but appeared to be very little moved. The standing order have moved their house into the street, not far from ours, and they think, and say, they can make the Methodist people pay them; but I presume in this they are mistaken.

Conn.]

Through Connecticut.

Monday, September 8. We spent this day on the road, passing Windsor and East Hartford, and came to the city. The next day we reached Middletown, where I was taken ill. We have a call for preachers to go to New Hampshire and to the Province of Maine.

Wednesday, 10. We rose at three and set out at five o'clock, and breakfasted at North Haven. We came in the evening to Stratford, and had a little meeting, although I was heavy, sick, and sleepy.

Thursday, 11. We rode to General W.'s. Here I learn they guard Kingsbridge, and will not suffer any one to pass from New Haven. It is also said the pestilential fever prevails in the city of New York, having been brought there by a brig from the Islands. I thought it best to stop and consult the preachers in the Albany district before I go into the city. As the yellow fever is so prevalent in the West Indies, and our vessels continually trading there, the United States will partake, I fear, of their plagues; and so the Lord will punish us for our sins and prodigality.

I only wish to be holy, and then let come whatever the Lord pleases. I came through Poquonnock, Fairfield, and Norwalk; but there is no room for the Methodists in those places.

N. Y.]

A Methodist Church in Brooklyn.

Sunday, 21. I preached in the old house on Psalm cxxxii, at the new church in the afternoon on Psalm i, and at Brooklyn in the evening. Here our brethren have built a very good house. The labors of the day, pain of body, and my concern for the peace of the Church, tended to keep me from proper rest, and caused an awful night.

Monday, 22. We opened conference, and sat closely to our business. Several of our preachers want to know what they shall do when they grow old. I might also ask, What shall I do? Perhaps many of them will not live to grow old.

Asbury Overworked.

Tuesday, 23. I preached with liberty, but on *Thursday* night I had a powerful temptation before I went into the church, which sat so heavily on me that I could not preach; yet I trust I was kept from sin. My sleep is so little that my head becomes dizzy, and distresses me much; four hours sleep in the night is as much as I can obtain. We concluded our work, and observed *Friday* as a day of abstinence and prayer, and had a good time at our love-feast.

Sunday, 28. Preached at ten o'clock at Brooklyn. In the afternoon at the new church on "Woe to them that are at ease in Zion!" I ordained seven deacons and five elders, and in the evening, at the old church,

I preached again. We had the best time at the last, at least it was so to me. All day I was straitened in my throat, and in my heart. We collected two hundred and fifty dollars for the relief of the preachers in distress.

This has been a serious week to me ; money could not purchase the labor and exercise I have gone through. At this conference it was resolved that nothing but an English free day-school should be kept at Cokesbury.

N. J.] *Malignant Fever and Whisky Insurrection.*

Tuesday, 30. Rose at three o'clock. Set out at five o'clock, rode forty-two miles to Milford, and preached ; but I found this heavy work.

Wednesday, October 1. I had some life in preaching at Croswick's meeting-house. I then came to Brother Hancock's, and took sweet counsel with my friend, whose wife I received as a member of society twenty-two years ago. I was in suspense about going through Philadelphia, lest I should not reach Baltimore in due time. Now report saith that they have stopped the Baltimore stage on account of the malignant fever, which rages powerfully at the Point. There is a great stir among the people concerning the Western Insurrection : the people have risen up against government on account of the excise law relative to the distillation of spirits. A number of the militia are called out. Thus trouble comes on in Church and State. O, my Lord, give us help, for vain is the help of man !

Pa.]

Asbury Soon Tires of the City.

Saturday, 4. Brother M. and myself came to Philadelphia, and on

Sunday, 5. I preached three times, and was not a little fatigued with this day's labor. I felt assisted, and had some openings in preaching.

Monday, 6. Our conference began, and our matters were talked over freely. Our session continued until *Friday*, by which time I felt tired of the city, and had a desire to be on horseback. I have felt liberty in preaching to the citizens, and indulge some hope of a revival among them.

Md.] Cokesbury in Debt—A Christian School or None.

Thursday, 16. Crossed Susquehanna, and came to Cokesbury College. I found it £1,200 in debt, and that there were between £500 and £600 due us; £300 of what we owe ought now to be paid.

Saturday, 18. We came to Perry Hall. The preachers were afraid to go into Baltimore, but the brethren from there came out to calm their fears and I invited them in. I have been hurried, and have not as much time for retirement as my soul panteth for—yet I desire nothing but Christ.

Monday, 20. We rode to Baltimore, and in the afternoon opened our conference. We had about fifty preachers, including probationers. Our business was conducted in peace and love. Myself and others being unwell, we sat only six hours in the day.

Tuesday, 21. I gave them a sermon on Exodus xxxii, 26. We had a list of names from Fairfax, who required an explanation of a minute in our form of

discipline relative to the trial of members ; inquiring whether the "select members were as witnesses or judges, and had power to vote members in or out of society." (Sec. viii, p. 56.) We answered them.

Our collegiate matters now come to a crisis. We now make a sudden and dead pause. We mean to incorporate and breathe, and take some better plan. If we cannot have a Christian school (that is, a school under Christian discipline and pious teachers) we will have none. I had peace of mind, but not much rest.

Va.] Sable Sons of Africa—The Question now Answered.

Thursday, 30. Crossed the Potomac, at the mouth of Goose Creek, and came, unexpected by the brethren, to Leesburg. Thence we journeyed on through Prince William and Fauquier counties. We passed Germantown, and came along Rogues' Road to Norman's Ferry on Rappahannock. After a disagreeable journey, and being exposed to uncomfortable weather, on *Tuesday*, the 4th of *November*, we came safe to Father Kaubler's, in Culpepper county. Thank the Lord, there is here and there a house for God. At Father K.'s I had many women and but few men to hear. Some of the men are gone to war, some to their sports, and some have no desire to hear.

We rode ten miles to Brother Frye's. After a long absence of ten years I am here again. I learn that about the month of June last died the great politician, Richard Henry Lee, of Westmoreland county, one who took an active part in promoting the independence of the United States of America. O when will liberty be extended to the sable sons of Africa?

General Conference Action on Slavery.

Tuesday, November 25. We opened our conference, and had great siftings and searchings, especially on the subject of slavery. The preachers, almost unanimously, entered into an agreement and resolution not to hold slaves in any State where the law will allow them to manumit them, on pain of forfeiture of their honor and their place in the itinerant connection ; and in any State where the law will not admit of manumission, they agreed to pay them the worth of their labor, and when they die to leave them to some person or persons, or the society, in trust, to bring about their liberty. After raising and applying what money we could, (which was about £50,) we calculated that one fourth of the preachers at this conference had received for their salary the past year about £10 ; one half from about £12 to £15, and one fourth their full quarterage, (sixty-four dollars.) We had great peace, and not one preacher objected to his station. We sent an apology to our brethren in Petersburg for not having held conference there according to appointment, for reasons already assigned. We were greatly obliged to our friends in Greenville for accommodating the conference. Men and horses were well entertained—all for love.

N. O.] “Still Onward—Fainting but Fighting.”

Saturday, December 13. We crossed Roanoke, and came to Mr. Smith's, in Granville county. On *Sunday, 16th*, crossed Mountain and Grassy Creeks, and came to Brother Owens's, whose wife is a true daughter of D. Grant, my dear old friend in Georgia. He was among the last fruits of that great man, Mr.

Davies, when he labored in Hanover, in Virginia, forty years ago.

Monday, 15. Crossed the head streams of Tar River, which are only small branches, and rode on to R.'s, where I had an appointment, and found I had another twenty-five miles forward at L.'s ; so I left Brother C. to fill up my place, and went forward to the latter, where I preached to about two hundred people. I feel weak in body and mind, yet find my soul stayed upon God. "Still onward I go, fainting yet fighting."

Thursday, 18. I have a long journey to Charleston, (S. C.,) and but thirteen days to perform it, having appointed to be there the 1st of January.

S. C.]

Charleston Conference.

Wednesday, 31. Myself with the main body of the preachers came into the city of Charleston. I felt faint and unwell after the fatigues I had passed through on my journey.

Thursday, January 1, 1795. New Year's Day. I was called upon to preach, unwell as I was, which I did on Psalm xc, 12. We entered on the business of our conference, and continued until *Wednesday, 7th.* We had preaching every night during the sitting of conference. It was the request of the conference that I should preach them a sermon on *Tuesday* night, with which I complied, and made choice of Jer. xxiii, 29-32. In times past I have endeavored to keep on traveling all the year, but I now judge it meet to stay in Charleston a little longer and then take the field ; yet it is with fear and trembling.

Asbury on Berridge.

Sunday, February 1. I went to the church, and lectured on the second table of the law, attending particularly to our Lord's comment on each precept. In the afternoon I enlarged on Jer. xxxi, 33, and I do hope there was some stir in the hearts of the people. I began reading Berridge's *Christian World Unmasked*. How like the man and his conversation, which I heard by the hour thirty years ago! I think there is some tartness in his Christian remarks on the Checks and dear Mr. Fletcher, of whom I have heard Mr. Berridge speak in terms of very great respect.

Prospective Work.

Wednesday, 25. We had a love-feast for the Africans, and many gave in their experiences with life.

In the evening we had a love-feast for the whites. I have had a long stay here, and now rejoice in the hope of going again into the field to work. Nothing would have kept me here but the hope of preserving my health the other ten months of the year, which will enable me to run through North and South Carolina, the New Territory, Virginia, Maryland, Delaware, Pennsylvania, Jersey, New York, Connecticut, Rhode Island, Massachusetts, Province of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, and sometimes Kentucky.

The Third Revival.

Friday, 27. Mr. Wesley lived to see two general revivals of religion: one at the beginning, the other about thirty-six years ago; though, doubtless, they had generally a gradual growth of religion. We also have had two revivals: one at the beginning, the other

about seven years ago. The third revival has now taken place in England, and I hope ours will soon follow.

The New Still-House—A Warning.

Saturday, March 14. I came to A.'s chapel, but the weather was so exceedingly cold, and the house so open, that we went to the dwelling-house, where I preached and prayed, and (the people said) stormed and scolded. When meeting was over I saw the new still-house, which, as George Fox said, "struck at my life," and we found it necessary to deal plainly with Brother——about his distillery, and to tell him what we apprehended would be the consequence if persisted in. Its natural tendency would be to corrupt his family and the neighborhood, and to destroy the society. We came to G.'s meeting-house, where we had as wild and disorderly a congregation as could well be without words and blows. I preached a little, and stormed a great deal, but all would not do.

N. C.]

A Comprehensive Prayer.

Friday, April 10. We came to G.'s, in Wilkes county. I fear lest darkness should be felt here. Ah, Lord, help me to go through good and evil report; prosperity and adversity; storms and calms; kindness and unkindness; friends and enemies; life and death, in the spirit and practice of the Gospel of Jesus Christ!

"From White's to Nelson's."

Wednesday, 22. Crossed the Ridge, and kept on to the westward. We met Major J. White's path, and found it abundantly better than the old one. We reached the top of the Ridge in about six miles. Here we found ourselves among fruitful hills; then we had

a good path for six miles more, except where there were some laurel branches and roots. We stopped at S.'s, and it was well we did, or we should have been well-nigh starved, both man and horse. I went on to D.'s, and thence to Nelson's, where I met with Brothers B., A., and W., ancient men among us. I stood the fatigue and sleeping three in a bed better than I expected. From White's to Nelson's is eighty miles. We crossed the Wattawba about twenty times. At supper we ate of the perch that are taken in great plenty from Smith's fish spring. I judge there must be a subterraneous communication from that to the river. I was led to speak with life and power on "Will ye also go away?" I spent a night with Brother Whitaker. I wish his wife may not love him to death.

Tenn.]

A New Meeting-House.

Monday, 27. We hasted to F. Earnest's, on Nola-chucky River, where we held our western conference. Here six brethren from Kentucky met us, and we opened our conference with twenty-three preachers, fifteen of whom were members. We received every man's account of himself and his late labors, and inquired of each man's character among his brethren. Our business was conducted with love and harmony. Our brethren have built a meeting-house, and I must needs preach the first sermon, which I did on Exod. xx, 24. Notwithstanding it was a time of great scarcity, we were well and most kindly entertained.

Va.]

The "Hope" of Asbury now Realized.

Monday, May 4. We rode thirty-five miles to the head branches of the main Holstein, and the next day reached Alfred's, on New River.

Wednesday, 6. We rode to Pepere's ferry, and made it thirty-five miles to M'Daniel's. *Thursday* we rode to Brother W.'s, near Fincastle, thirty-eight miles. The toils of this journey have been great, the weather sultry, the rides long, and roads rough. We suffered from irregularity in food and lodging, although the people are very kind, and give us the best they have, and that without fee or reward, so that I have only spent about two shillings in riding about two hundred miles. I hope posterity will be bettered by my feeble efforts. Hail, happy day of rest! It draws nigh, and this labor and toil will soon be at an end!

Harper's Ferry—Its Impending Rocks.

Monday, 18. We rode to Charlestown, Jefferson county, and lodged with a pious physician. Next morning breakfasted with J. H., and then came to Harper's Ferry, where the impending rocks impress the mind of the traveler with terror. This scene is truly awful and romantic. We came to S. Phillip's, but were not expected until next week; so I directed my course to Baltimore.

Md.] Death of Judge White—His Character.

Thursday, 21. We set out for Baltimore. The rain came on very heavily—I have not felt nor seen such since the sixth of March, since which time I have ridden about one thousand two hundred miles. This day I heard of the death of one among my best friends in America—Judge White, of Kent county, in the State of Delaware. Lord, help us all to live our short day to thy glory! I have lived days, weeks,

and months in his house. O that his removal may be sanctified to my good and the good of the family ! He was about sixty-five years of age. He was a friend to the poor and oppressed ; he had been a professed Churchman, and was united to the Methodist connection about seventeen or eighteen years. His house and heart were always open, and he was a faithful friend to liberty in spirit and practice ; he was a most indulgent husband, a tender father, and an affectionate friend. He professed perfect love, and great peace, living and dying.

Asbury Subject to Depression.

Thursday, June 11. Still under awful depression. I am not conscious of any sin, even in thought ; but the imprudence and unfaithfulness of others bear heavily on my heart. I feel a degree of willingness to die and enter into rest. For the first time I visited Centerville and preached in the new house. I saw Doctor Hall, who is greatly changed since 1792, and under deep exercise about preaching, so that he cannot attend to his practice, and appears to be lost in thought. I wrote to him to try Baltimore. It is a pity such a man of sentiment, learning, and fine feeling should be lost. I rode home with R. W. He is rich in the world, but wants more of the life of religion ; he appears still to love the preachers and the cause of God. I received information that Doctor M.'s wife, before she died, manumitted her favorite servant-maid ; not long after the Doctor himself was called away, but before his removal he manumitted all his slaves. This man claimed no high Gospel light, and professed no more religion than the

generality of the world among us do. I have a hope that God is preparing me for greater usefulness in my latter days. O how happy should I be if after laboring thirty years, as I sometimes fear to very little profit, it should hereafter appear that hundreds have been converted by my ministry! Of late I have had but little to do but pray, preach, ride, converse, and take my necessary refreshment.

Del.] An Evening with Dr. A. Ridgeley.

Wednesday, 17. I had a solemn season at Dover. I spent the evening with Doctor A. Ridgeley, in the late dwelling-house of his father. In some houses we serve the fathers, not the children; in some the children, not the fathers; and in some we serve both parents and children.

Pa.] Asbury Spends Three Days in Meeting Classes.

Sunday, 21. I preached in the city of Philadelphia three times, not with the success I would wish. I was exceedingly assisted in meeting the classes, in which I spent three days, and am now of opinion that there is more religion among the society than I expected. I trust both they and myself will remember this visit for days to come. I was also much quickened in meeting the local preachers and leaders, who spoke feelingly of the state of their souls and the work of God. I now go hence to meet new troubles, and to labor while feeble life shall last.

N. J.] Brother Morrell Sick but Recovering.

Saturday, 27. I came to Elizabethtown, and found Brother Morrell (who had been bled and physicked

almost to death) on the recovery. My troubles are greater than ever: my body is weak, and my spirits very low. At the request of my friends I stayed in town until *Sunday*, and was assisted in a manner I least expected in preaching to about eighty people from 1 Cor. xv, 58. After sermon I called the society together, and had a melting time in speaking personally to each.

N. Y.] The Bishop at Work in the Classes.

Sunday, July 5. I preached in Brooklyn in the morning, and returned to assist in the sacrament in the afternoon at the new church. I then met the black classes, and preached at half past six. I closed my day's work by meeting two men's classes.

Monday, 6. I met nine classes; so that I have now spoken to most of the members here, one by one. I left the city in peace, and received of their bounty toward bearing my expenses. We came to Stamford, where I preached in a private house.

Conn.] Asbury Preaches in Dr. Edwards's Meeting-House.

Friday, 10. We had a very warm ride, fourteen miles, to New Haven. I think it as sultry here as it was the tenth of June in Delaware. Nothing would do but I must preach in Doctor Edwards's meeting-house, which I did on these words: "Yea, doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Jesus Christ my Lord."

Conference at New London.

Monday, 13. We had some life at Middle Haddam.
Tuesday, 14, preached at New London about six

o'clock, where I found most of the preachers present. *Wednesday*, 15, we opened our conference, which consisted of about twenty members, and sat until noon on *Saturday*. We had great peace in our conference; but some exercises relative to the externals arose from the ancient contest about baptism, these people being originally connected with those that are of that line. O what wisdom, meekness, patience, and prudence are necessary! Our brethren were exceedingly kind, and I hope this conference will be for the good of the people in this place and thousands besides.

R. I.]

“Either Cursing or Blessing.”

Thursday, 23. We came in the evening to Providence. When we entered the town some drunken fellows raised a cry and shout, and made a sacrifice of the Methodists to hell. Mr. — is now pastor of, and the Tennant-house is shut against us. I wished to ride on and not to stop in town, but Mr. Robertson, an ancient Englishman, constrained us to turn in with him. We dined at Milton, and made it thirty miles to Boston, where I preached twice on the Sabbath (though very unwell) in a room that will hold about two hundred and fifty people. It seemed as if we hardly had either cursing or blessing among the people here. I have no doubt but that if we had a house we should command a large congregation; but we labor under great inconveniences where we preach at present. I feel myself feeble in body and faint in spirit; yet Christ is mine, and I hope to be his in time and forever. Amen.

Mass.] Departure from Lynn—Brother Roberts.

Sunday, August 2. Was a warm, sultry day. I rose in the morning very feeble in spirit, and attended prayer-meeting at six o'clock. I preached three times, administered the sacrament, and met two classes, and was not so fatigued as I expected I should have been. I have had some refreshing seasons; and now I bid farewell to Lynn for two years. I rode a solitary way through Malden, Mystic, and North Cambridge, and preached at Waltham, at five o'clock, to a few people; the great rain prevented many from attending. Brother Roberts took an intermittent fever when we were at New Haven, and hath labored and suffered, sick or well, until he is almost dead. I received from the quarterly meeting held in Fairfield circuit what I should be glad to receive once a year from every circuit in the Union. It was as follows: "The preachers of the Methodist Episcopal order who have traveled on this circuit since the last conference have so conducted themselves that their characters are unimpeachable." Signed by the local preachers, exhorters, stewards, and leaders.

Asbury's Plan for 1797.

Monday, 10. I stopped and gave an exhortation at Springfield. After a thunder-gust we came on to Agawomin. If I accomplish the tour I have in contemplation it will make about six or seven hundred miles to the city of New York. I was stopped by the rain, but when I cannot do one thing another offers. I could read, write, pray, and plan. I laid out a plan for my travels in 1797: through Connect-

icut, Rhode Island, Massachusetts, Province of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, New York, making a distance of twelve or fifteen hundred miles. I set out for Williamstown on the banks of Hoosac, on the west borders of Massachusetts. I lodged at Sister H.'s. I was well steeped in water, although my cloak saved me in a good degree, as is frequently the case. My rest was interrupted. To labor hard all the day, and have no sleep at night, ill suits the flesh.

N. Y.]

Ashgrove—Philip Embury.

Friday, 21. We rode in the afternoon into the woods of Bennington. Preached at Brother D.'s, and had a melting, comfortable season with about fifty souls. There are sinners, Deists, Universalists, etc., and they all have something to say about religion. I feel my soul stayed upon God, although I am in heaviness through manifold temptations.

Saturday, 22. Brother Roberts and myself parted. He went to Pownell and myself to Ashgrove, where we have a society of about sixty members. They originated with P. Embury, who left the city of New York when the British preachers came there. He continued to pursue his purpose of forming societies in the country, but dying in a few years, the society was left, and were without preaching by the Methodists for fifteen years. We have now a neat little chapel here.

Conn.] A Difference whether in Company with Saints or
Sinners.

Sunday, 23. My soul has been much quickened this *Sabbath*, and I find a difference between being

among saints and sinners. We came through Cambridge county, now Washington, and passed Argyletown, named after Argyle in Scotland. We came to Brother M.'s ; we and our horses were quite weary ; but it is enough, the Lord is with us. Let this suffice at all times and in every place. We came through a mere wilderness of swamp ; the roots of the white pine, beech, and hemlock were a good deal in our way. We reached Westfield, where is a considerable settlement and a promising society.

N. Y.] Plattsburg Asking for Methodist Preachers.

We passed Skeynesborough, and turned our course eastward through some rough ground, and came to Hampton township, where we held a quarterly meeting at Brother M.'s in a pleasant vale. We rode through considerable heat, nearly twenty miles, without obtaining any refreshment. I have reason to praise God that I have been able to travel from Lynn to this place ; the distance the way I have come I compute to be about four hundred miles. I am now within a mile of the line of Vermont. There is only one county (in the State of New York) between this and Lower Canada. There is a place called Plattsburg, where they have often solicited us to send preachers. I find some similarity between the northern and western frontiers.

Methodism at Coeyman's Patent.

Wednesday, September 2. We had a solemn meeting at Bethlehem, in Ashgrove. *Thursday, 3,* we had a warm-hearted people at R.'s, and a better time than weakness of body or mind could promise. On *Friday* we came to Lansingburg, and thence to Troy. At

last we got to Coeyman's Patent, weary, sick, and faint, after riding thirty-six miles.

Saturday, 5. We were crowded with people. I suppose we had, perhaps, a thousand at the Stone Church at Coeyman's Patent, and I felt some life and warmth among them.

Sunday, 6. In the morning we had baptism, ordination, sacrament, and love-feast. Some spoke with life of the goodness of God. I gave them a discourse at eleven o'clock, and then went to bed with a high fever. Brother Roberts pleased, and I trust profited, the people with a discourse after I had done.

Brother Garrettson Spiritually Rich.

Saturday, 12. We reached Brother Garrettson's, and *Sunday*, 13, I preached at R.'s chapel. Then returned to Rhinebeck chapel, and preached on Heb. xiii, 5. God once put into Brother Garrettson's hands great riches of a spiritual nature, and he labored much. If he now does equal good according to his temporal ability he will be blessed by the Lord and by men.

Conference at White Plains—Forty-three Preachers Present.

Sunday, 20. I had a comfortable time at Croton chapel on Rom. i, 16. I returned to General Van Courtlandt's, and dined with my dear aged friends. Shall we never meet again? We came to Fisher's, near the White Plains chapel, to hold conference. My soul is kept solemn, and I feel as if earth were nothing to me. I am happy in God, and not perplexed with the things of this world.

Tuesday, 22. A few of us met in conference, the main body of the preachers not coming in until about

twelve o'clock. We went through the business of the conference in three days, forty-three preachers being present. I was greatly disappointed in not hearing the preachers give a full and free account of themselves and circuits. Although we sat ten hours in each day we did not close our business until *Thursday* evening, after sitting each night till twelve o'clock.

N. J.]

Through New Jersey Again.

Friday, 25. We crossed Hudson River twenty-six miles above the city of New York, and came on to the waters of Hackensack, a river that is only thirty miles long and navigable two thirds of the way. We then came to Passaic River, crossed at Second River, and made out this day to ride forty miles, much fatigued.

Saturday, 26. We rode about thirty-two miles with but very little to eat ; however, we had the pleasure of seeing the famous Brunswick bridge, which is now nearly finished. It is the grandest of the kind I have seen in America. I was *properly* wearied, and prepared to rest on *Sunday*. I was sorely tired yesterday, more so than I have been these six weeks past.

Monday, 28. We came to Monmouth. We would have gone to Shrewsbury, but time and horses failed us. I learn that the ancient spirit of faith, prayer, and power is taking place in a few places below. I was shocked at the brutality of some men who were fighting. One gouged out the other's eye ; the father and son then beset him again, cut off his ears and nose, and beat him almost to death. The father and son were tried for a breach of the peace and roundly fined, and now the man that lost his nose and ears is

to come upon them for damage. I have often thought that there are some things practiced in the Jerseys which are more brutish and diabolical than in any of the other States. There is nothing of this kind in New England: they learn civility there at least. We rode twenty miles to Emley's church, where the great revival of religion was some years ago. I felt a little of the old, good spirit there still. Thence we journeyed on to Penny Hill, fifteen miles, where I was enabled to speak strong words. Thence I came to New Mills, and gave them an alarming talk on judgment beginning at the house of God.

Pa.] Extensive Conference Appointments.

Saturday, October 3. I came through the sand to Philadelphia, and on *Sunday* evening I preached on "All seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's."

Monday, 5. We opened our conference, and went on with great peace, love, and deliberation, but were rather irregular, owing to some preachers not coming in until the third or fourth day. We made better stations than could be expected, extending from Northampton, in Virginia, to the Seneca Lake.

Md.] Conference in Baltimore.

Saturday, 17. I came to Baltimore to attend the quarterly meeting. Brother Whatcoat and myself filled up *Sunday*, the 18th, and were crowded with people.

Tuesday, 20. Our conference began. We had preachers from the Northern Neck, and what is called New Virginia, (Pitt District,) and the west of Maryland; about fifty-five in number. On *Friday*

night there was a public collection for the assistance of the preachers who were deficient in their quarterage.

Va.]

Methodism Regains its Proper Tone.

Monday, November 23. I preached at W.'s chapel, and in the evening came, cold and hungry, to L. Holmes's, in Mecklenburg.

Tuesday, 24. Our conference began at Salem chapel; there were present about fifty members and sixteen probationers. We had close work, and great harmony in sentiment.

Saturday, 28. Brothers A. and C. preached, and we had a warm, living season.

Sunday, 29, was a great day. I preached on 1 Tim. iii, 15, 16, and there were ten elders and nine deacons ordained. This part of the connection has regained its proper tone, after being kept out of tune for five years by an unhappy division. We were kindly entertained by our friends and brethren. Preachers and people were blessed, and we parted in peace.

N. C.]

"If there were no Sinners."

Saturday, December 19. We crossed the south branch of Black River, and came to Elizabethtown, about fifty miles above Wilmington. We had a very cold day, and nothing to eat for thirty miles. Brother M'Rea met us near the town and took us to his house, and it was well he did, or we might have been lost in the woods. But the kindness of the people in supplying our wants made up for our toil. Lord, comfort them who comfort us! Here we had a quiet retreat, and spent the *Sabbath* in public and private exercises.

Monday, 21. We set out by sunrise, and had to work our way through the swamps, where I feared being plunged in head foremost. I have lately been much tried several ways, and much comforted. We came down Brunswick county, North Carolina, twenty miles to Norman's, within the line of South Carolina. Cross where you will between the States, it is a miserable pass for one hundred miles west. I was much led out on Rev. xxi, 6-8. This country abounds with bays, swamps, and drains. If there were here no sinners I would not go along these roads. Sometimes I feel as though I could rejoice to die and go home; but at other times the work of God is in my way, and sometimes my own unworthiness.

S. C.] *Christmas Day—Only an Apple to Eat.*

Christmas Day, 25. We set out at six o'clock for Georgetown, and came to Urania ferry, which we crossed and came to Wacamaw River. We were detained at the two ferries about three hours, then rested one, and came to Georgetown about four o'clock in the evening, having ridden thirty-seven miles without eating or drinking, except a lowland hard apple which I found in my pocket. After ten years' labor we have done but little; but if we could station a preacher here we might yet hope for success. I found Brother Cannon had not labored in vain. He hath established class-meetings among white and black, and the good would have been still greater had prayer-meetings been properly kept up. We try to do good, but who among us try to do all they can? For myself, I have no company without fears of not having discharged my duty. Were it not

for Jesus, who would be saved? When I have preached I feel as though I had need to do it over again, and it is the same with all my performances. Brother Blanton, my faithful friend, who freely offered himself to go to South Carolina, now my companion in travel, had not preached for a month, so I thought it time for him to begin again, which he did in the evening. I preached on Psalm xii, 1, and on the *Sabbath* I preached on Deut. v, 12-14. In the afternoon the people were attentive and somewhat moved. I find the scene is changed in Georgetown: we have a number of very modest, attentive hearers, and a good work among the blacks. The Methodists begin to stand on even ground with their antagonists.

Cokesbury College Burned.

Wednesday, 30. We reached Charleston, having made about seventy-four miles from Georgetown, along an excellent road. Here are the rich, the rice, and the slaves; the last is awful to me. Wealthy people settled on the rice lands of Cooper River hold from fifty to two hundred slaves on a plantation in chains of bondage; yet God is able of these stones, yea, of these slaveholders, to raise up children unto Abraham. My soul felt joyful and solemn at the thoughts of a revival of religion in Charleston. I find several young persons are brought into the fold of Christ.

Thursday, 31. Several of the preachers came into the city to conference. We had a melting time at the love-feast at Brother Wells's.

Friday, January 1, 1796. I gave them a sermon suited to the beginning of the year, and the sacred fire was felt. *Saturday, 2,* we began our conference.

Lord's Day, 3, was a day of extraordinary divine power, particularly at the sacrament; white and black cried out and shouted the praises of God—yea,

“Clap your hands, ye people all,
Praise the God on whom ye call.”

Monday, 4. We again entered on the business of conference. Present, about twenty members and seven graduates.

Tuesday, 5, continued our business. We have great peace and love—see eye to eye, and heart to heart. We have now a second and confirmed account that Cokesbury College is consumed to ashes, a sacrifice of £10,000 in about ten years! The foundation was laid in 1785, and it was burned December 7, 1795. Its enemies may rejoice, and its friends need not mourn. Would any man give me £10,000 per year to do and suffer again what I have done for that house I would not do it. The Lord called not Mr. Whitefield nor the Methodists to build colleges. I wished only for schools; Dr. Coke wanted a college. I feel distressed at the loss of the library.

President Washington.

Monday, 11. My soul is stayed upon God, momentarily looking unto him. In reading Mr. Winterbotham, I compared the great talk about President Washington formerly with what some say and write of him now. According to some he then did nothing wrong; it is now said that he was always partial to aristocrats and Continental officers. As to the latter, I ask, Who bought the liberty of the States? The Continental officers; and surely they should reap a little of the sweets of rest and peace. These were not chimney-

corner whigs. But favors to many of the officers now would come too late—a great number of them are gone to eternity, their constitutions being broken with hard fare and labor during the war. As to myself, the longer I live, and the more I investigate, the more I applaud the uniform conduct of President Washington in all the important stations which he has filled.

Asbury Happy with the Poor Slaves.

Friday, February 5, I spent in reading and writing, and observed it as a day of fasting and prayer. I felt myself under dejection of spirit. Ah! what a dreary world is this! My mind is under solemn impressions—the result of my reflections on God and souls. I will endeavor not to destroy myself above measure. If sinners are lost I cannot save them, neither shall I be damned for them. I was happy last evening with the poor slaves in Brother Wells's kitchen, while our white brother held a sacramental love-feast in the front parlor up stairs. I must be poor: this is the will of God concerning me.

The Methodists have now about ninety thousand members of society in Europe, about seventy thousand in America and the Islands, and about four hundred in Africa.

The Seventh Commandment.

Sunday, 14. I began the solemnity of the day by opening and applying our Lord's comment on the seventh commandment, which is designed to condemn the adultery of the heart. It appears to have been the will of our Lord not to give liberty for a second marriage while a former husband or wife is living. St. Paul

undoubtedly understood it so, even when heathen husbands left their wives, or wives their husbands.

Asbury's Labors in Charleston.

Sunday, 28. My morning subject was Philippians i, 8, 9. In the evening I treated on *wolves in sheep's clothing*. Some laughed, some wept, and some were vexed. Ah! how I wish to make my escape and be gone! I must pay for this indulgence with pain of mind. I feel for these souls. Many who have been sitting under my ministry appear more hardened than when I began first to preach to them, and no wonder, seeing they have so insulted the Spirit of God.

Wednesday, March 2. For my unholiness and unfaithfulness my soul is humbled. Were I to stand in my own merit, where should I be or go but to hell? The time drawing nigh when I expected to leave the city, I was visited by my poor Africans, and had their prayers and best wishes. And now what have I been doing? I have preached eighteen sermons, met all the classes, fifteen in number, written about eighty letters, read some hundred pages, visited thirty families again and again. But who are made the subjects of grace? Such are my impressions that I am apprehensive God will work more in judgment than in mercy, and that this will be an eventful year to the inhabitants of this place. In the course of my stay here I have written more than three hundred pages on subjects interesting to the society and connection.

Ga.1 "If They Could Hear Me Think."

Thursday, 10. I crossed W.'s ferry. The point on the south side is washed like a beach and the house

swept away by the late freshets. I saw how the flood had plowed up the street of Augusta. I walked over the ruins for nearly two miles, viewing the deep gulfs in the main street. I suppose they would crucify me if I were to tell them it is the African flood; but if they could hear me think they would discover this to be my sentiment. I was honored with the church to preach in, where I had about four hundred respectable hearers. I have delivered my own soul, it may be once for all. I have ridden about one hundred and ninety miles from Charleston into Georgia. I have attended four meetings, and have not had, in all, above six hundred hearers.

S. O.]

Asbury a Friend of Learning.

Tuesday, 29. I held forth about an hour and a half on Acts iii, 26. We set out again about two o'clock, and had to ride for our dinner *only twenty miles*. We crossed Muddy and Lick Creeks, Little and Great Bush Rivers. These afforded bodies of excellent land.

Wednesday, 30. We had a meeting of the trustees of Bethel school, and it was agreed it should be a *free school*, and that only the English tongue and the sciences should be taught. I drew up an address on behalf of the school in order to raise three hundred dollars per annum to support a president teacher. I dined with my unshaken friend, W. P., an Israelite indeed. He hath all things richly to enjoy, and a good conscience also. He was formerly a traveling preacher among us, and labored for and with us nearly as long as he was able. The weather here is as warm as in the month of June to the north. I was so weary with the riding I could not sleep.

Asbury's Wig!

Sunday, April 3. A multitude of sinners came together at W. S.'s. I feel myself still faint and feeble, and would not live always.

Monday, 4. I crossed Fair Forest, and came to J. G.'s, where I had to stop and rest. Since I came into South Carolina I have ridden through Newbury, Spartansburg, Union, and Lawrence counties. There is a general complaint of the want of corn in these parts; and no wonder, when we consider the great storm which they have had, and the number of stills in the country. The people here drink their bread as well as eat it. I am so very poorly in body that close study injures me. I crossed Lawson Fork at the high shoals a little below the Beauty Spot. I could not but admire the curiosity of the people—my wig was as great a subject of speculation as some wonderful animal from Africa or India would have been. I had about one hundred people at the meeting-house. Some came to look at and others to hear me. We must needs go off without any dinner, intending to ride nearly forty miles to Father Moore's, in Rutherford county, (N. C.) After Brother M. and myself had preached we crossed the Cow Pens, where Morgan and Tarlton had their fray. We made it nearly twenty-five miles to the Upper Island ford, on the main Broad River, and after traveling until seven o'clock at night were glad to stop at Brother S.'s, ten miles short of the place we intended to reach when we set out.

N. C.]

A Mountain Wedding.

Thursday, 14. We took our departure from John's River, up the branches of Catawba. On our way we

met with a half dozen living creatures, like men and women, who seemed quite pleased with their mountain wedding. They were under the whip, riding two and two as if they would break their necks. One had a white cloth like a flag, and the other a silk handkerchief. When they had spent their fire they called at a still-house to prime again. I ascended about one mile up a mountain, and came to M. Davenport's. Here I felt deep dejection of mind as well as great weakness of body, and as if I could lie down and die, owing, in some measure, I presume, to the great fatigue I underwent in ascending the mountain, which was very steep.

Tenn.] Conference—Parting with the Preachers.

Monday, 18. I rested at D.'s ; my body very feeble, and mind under exceeding dejection with imaginary and real evils.

Tuesday, 19. This evening the preachers came in from Kentucky and Cumberland.

Wednesday, 20. Our conference began in great peace, and thus it ended. We had only one preacher for each circuit in Kentucky, and one for Green circuit in Tennessee. Myself being weak, and my horse still weaker, I judged it impracticable to attempt going through the wilderness to Kentucky, and have concluded to visit Nolachucky. I wrote an apology to the brethren in Kentucky for my not coming, and informed them of the case.

Monday, 25. On the banks of Nolachucky I parted with our dear suffering brethren going through the howling wilderness. I feel happy in God. Sinners appear to be hardened, and professors cold. The

preachers, although young men, appear to be solemn and devoted to God, and doubtless are men who may be depended upon.

N. C.] The Workmen Falling in Death.

Sunday, May 1. We came to Acuff's chapel. I found the family sorrowful and weeping on account of the death of Francis Acuff, who from a fiddler became a Christian ; from a Christian, a preacher ; and from a preacher, I trust, a glorified saint. He died in the work of the Lord in Kentucky. I found myself assisted in preaching on Ephes. ii, 1, 2. The house was crowded, and I trust they did not come together in vain. I was somewhat alarmed at the sudden death of Reuben Ellis, who had been in the ministry upward of twenty years—a faithful man of God, of slow but very solid parts. He was an excellent counselor, and steady yoke-fellow in Jesus. My mind is variously exercised as to future events—whether it is my duty to continue to bear the burden I now bear, or whether I had not better retire to some other land.

Va.] "I Expect a Crown."

Saturday, 7. I escaped from Abingdon as out of a prison, and rode to Clinch. I passed by Mr. Cummings's. He hath not labored for naught. Few men have a better house or plantation, but his plea is, "He put his life in his hand ;" and so have I every time I have crossed the wilderness and mountains. I expect a crown for my services. Were I to charge the people on the western waters for my services I should take their roads, rocks, and mountains into the account, and rate my labors at a very high price.

We crossed North Holstein and came to D.'s, sixteen miles, where we had a congregation of about two hundred people.

Indian Barbarities—A Thrilling Narrative.

Monday, 9. I hobbled over the ridge, through the capital part of Russell county, sixteen miles to B.'s. These people have lived in peace ever since the death of Ben, the half-blooded Indian warrior, who was shot through the head while carrying off two women. He was a dreadful wicked wretch, who, by report, may have been the agent of death to nearly one hundred people in the wilderness and on Russell. Here I preached to a few insensible people, and had time to read, write, and sleep in quiet. Yesterday our prayers were requested on behalf of F. D. This day in the evening Brother K. was called upon to perform her funeral solemnities. Perhaps she has been as great a female sufferer as I have heard of. The following account, in substance, was taken from her own mouth, some time ago, by J. Kobler, who performed her funeral rites.

Her maiden name was Dickenson. She was married to a Mr. Scott, and lived in Powell's Valley, at which time the Indians were very troublesome, often killing and plundering the inhabitants. On a certain evening, her husband and children being in bed, eight or nine Indians rushed into the house. Her husband being alarmed started up, when all that had guns fired at him. Although he was badly wounded he broke through them all and got out of the house. Several of them closely pursued him, and put an end to his life. They then murdered and scalped all her

children before her eyes, plundered her house, and took her prisoner. The remainder of the night they spent around a fire in the woods, drinking, shouting, and dancing. The next day they divided the plunder with great equality. Among the rest of the goods was one of Mr. Wesley's hymn-books. She asked them for it, and they gave it to her ; but when they saw her often reading therein they were displeased, called her a conjurer, and took it from her. After this they traveled several days' journey toward the Indian towns ; but, said she, my grief was so great I could hardly believe my situation was a reality, but thought I dreamed. To aggravate my grief one of the Indians hung my husband's and my children's scalps to his back, and would walk the next before me. In walking up and down the hills and mountains I was worn out with fatigue and sorrow. They would often laugh when they saw me almost spent, and mimic my panting for breath. There was one Indian who was more humane than the rest. He would get me water, and make the others stop when I wanted to rest. Thus they carried me on eleven days' journey, until they were all greatly distressed with hunger. They then committed me to the care of an old Indian at the camp, while they went off hunting.

While the old man was busily employed in dressing a deer-skin, I walked backward and forward through the woods, until I observed he took no notice of me. I then slipped off, and ran a considerable distance and came to a cane-brake, where I hid myself very securely. Through most of the night I heard the Indians searching for me, and answering each other with a voice like that of an owl. Thus

was I left alone in the savage wilderness, far from any inhabitants, without a morsel of food, or any kind of help but the common Saviour and friend of all. To him I poured out my complaint in fervent prayer that he would not forsake me in this distressing circumstance. I then set out the course that I thought Kentucky lay, though with very little expectation of seeing a human face again, except that of the savages, whom I looked upon as so many fiends from the bottomless pit, and my greatest dread was that of meeting some of them while wandering in the wilderness.

One day as I was traveling I heard a loud human voice, and a prodigious noise, like horses running. I ran into a safe place and hid myself, and saw a company of Indians pass by, furiously driving a gang of horses which they had stolen from the white people. I had nothing to subsist upon but roots, young grapevines, and sweet-cane, and such like produce of the woods. I accidentally came where a bear was eating a deer, and drew near in hopes of getting some ; but he growled and looked angry, so I left him, and quickly passed on. At night when I lay down to rest I never slept, but I dreamed of eating. In my lonesome travels I came to a very large shelving rock, under which was a fine bed of leaves. I crept in among them, and determined there to end my days of sorrow. I lay there several hours, until my bones ached in so distressing a manner that I was obliged to stir out again. I then thought of and wished for home, and traveled on several days, till I came where Cumberland River breaks through the mountain.

I went down the cliffs a considerable distance until I was affrighted, and made an attempt to go back, but found the place down which I had gone was so steep that I could not return. I then saw but one way that I could go, which was a considerable perpendicular distance down to the bank of the river. I took hold of the top of a little bush, and for half an hour prayed fervently to God for assistance. I then let myself down by the little bush until it broke, and I went with great violence down to the bottom. This was early in the morning, and I lay there a considerable time, with a determination to go no further. About ten o'clock I grew so thirsty that I concluded to crawl to the water and drink, after which I found I could walk. The place I came through, as I have been since informed, is only two miles, and I was four days in getting through it. I traveled on until I came to a little path, one end of which led to the inhabitants, and the other to the wilderness. I knew not which end of the path to take. After standing and praying to the Lord for direction, I turned to take the end that led to the wilderness. Immediately there came a little bird of a dove-color near to my feet, and fluttered along the path that led to the inhabitants. I did not observe this much at first, until it did it a second or third time. I then understood this as a direction of Providence, and took the path which led me to the inhabitants. Immediately after her safe arrival she embraced religion, and lived and died an humble follower of Christ.

Tenn.]

"Ah, If I were Young Again!"

Friday, 20. We rode forty miles to Indian Creek, about fifteen miles above the mouth. We had no

place to dine until we arrived at Father C.'s about six o'clock. If I could have regular food and sleep I could stand the fatigue I have to go through much better. But this is impossible under some circumstances. To sleep four hours, and ride forty miles without food or fire, is hard, but we had water enough in the rivers and creeks. I shall have ridden nearly one thousand miles on the western waters before I leave them. I have been on the waters of Nalachucky to the mouth of Clinch; on the north, middle and south branches of Holstein; on New River, Green Brier, and by the head springs of Monongahela. If I were able I should go from Charleston, (S. C.,) a direct course, five hundred miles to Nalachucky; thence two hundred and fifty miles to Cumberland; thence one hundred to Kentucky; thence one hundred miles through that State, and two hundred to Saltsburg; thence two hundred to Green Brier; thence two hundred to Red Stone, and three hundred to Baltimore. Ah, if I were young again! I was happy to have a comfortable night's sleep after a hard day's ride, and but little rest the night before. I have now a little time to refit, recollect, and write. Here forts and savages once had a being, but now peace and improvement.

Monday, 23. I rode to Rehoboth chapel, in the sinks of Green Brier, where we held conference with a few preachers. Here I delivered two discourses. *Thursday,* crossed Green Brier River, and had to pass along a crooked and dangerous path to Benton's. My mind is in peace.

Pa.]

Conference at Uniontown.

Saturday, June 11. I rode to Uniontown, and after a solemn meeting I sat in conference with the preachers.

Monday, 13. We left Uniontown and rode about thirty-five miles and the next day forty-five to J. F.'s.

Md.]

A Review.

Tuesday, 21. I preached in Fredericktown at ten o'clock and at Libertytown at five o'clock.

Wednesday, 22. I had some life at the new meeting-house on the Ridge. I borrowed a horse to ride nine miles, and then made out to get to Baltimore. O what times are here! The academy is crowded; they have five teachers and nearly two hundred scholars. I will now take a view of my journey for some months past. From the best judgment I can form the distance is as follows: from Baltimore to Charleston, (S. C.,) one thousand miles; thence up the State of South Carolina two hundred miles; from the center to the west of Georgia two hundred miles; through North Carolina one hundred miles; through the State of Tennessee one hundred miles; through the west of Virginia three hundred miles; through Pennsylvania and the west of Maryland, and down to Baltimore, four hundred miles. I was employed in town as usual in preaching and meeting classes, etc. I continued in town until *Thursday, 30*, and then set off and came in the evening to Esquire G.'s, our ancient lodging, and was received with their usual kindness.

Large Congregations in Delaware.

Monday, July 11. We came to Snow Hill on Pocomoke River. I called on the weeping Widow Bowen, whose late husband, after being the principal in building a house for divine worship, died in peace. Here I met about one thousand people. Being unable to command the congregation from the pulpit, I stood in one of the doors, and preached to those who were out of the house.

Tuesday, 19. We rode forty miles to Lewistown. We stopped to dine near H.'s grand mill-seat. My spirits of late keep up greatly, not being subject to depression as heretofore. It cleared away about noon, and gave us the opportunity of riding two miles out of Lewistown, after preaching to the brethren and the Africans. I dined with Mr. Shanklin, whose house was the first that was opened to me in this place. We then urged our way up the county, and escaped the rain until we came within two miles of Milford. It then poured down heavily, and we came in dripping about eight o'clock.

Friday, 22. We had a living love-feast. Many opened their mouths, but spoke too much of what was past. We had an exceeding great company, to whom I preached on Isaiah lxii, 12. The two following days, *Saturday* and *Sunday*, I attended Dover quarterly meeting, where I suppose we had nearly two thousand people. It was a living, open season. There was great sweetness and love among the brethren.

Pa.] Asbury Originates a Fund for the Support of the Ministry.

Sunday, 31. I had some life and more liberty at Ebenezer in the morning at five o'clock. I must needs attend the second African church; and at half past seven o'clock, in the great unwieldy house and congregation in Fourth street, I preached on John i, 17.

Monday, August 1. I drew the outlines of a subscription, that may form a part of a constitution of a general fund, for the sole purpose of supporting the traveling ministry. To have respect,

1. To the single men that suffer and are in want.
2. To the married traveling preachers.
3. To the worn-out preachers.
4. To the widows and orphans of those who have lived and died in the work. And
5. To enable the yearly conference to employ more married men; and, finally, to supply the wants of all the traveling preachers, under certain regulations and restrictions, as the state of the fund will admit.

Friday, 5. Having concluded on the presentation of the subscription, I hasted with it from house to house.

N. J.] Laying a Corner-Stone near Schooley's Mountain.

Tuesday, 9. We made our way twenty-five miles to Brother M'Collough's, near Schooley's mountain, properly a remnant of the Blue Ridge. After a good meeting at Brother M'C.'s we went to lay the foundation of a new meeting-house. We sang part of Dr. Watts's hymn on "The Corner-Stone," and prayed. I then had to lend a hand to lay the mighty corner-stone of the house. We then sung and prayed, and

retired to Brother Budd's, an Israelite indeed, my never-failing friend in time, and I hope will be to all eternity.

Wednesday, 10. I thought it good not to be idle, so I went to Hackettstown and preached on "The promise is to you and to your children," etc. We had few people, but a feeling, serious time. Thence we rode to Dover, where we had many people at a short warning. I admired the solemnity of the women; the men appeared to be outdone with the heat and labors of the day.

**N. Y.] Asbury Preaches Three Times, and Meets Six Classes
in One Day.**

Sunday, 28. I preached in the morning in John-street, in the afternoon at the new church on Heb. ii, 3, and in the evening at the old church again on Rev. iii, 2, 3, besides meeting six classes in the course of the day. In general I have had no extraordinary assistance in preaching of late. Brother L. preached twice in the north end of Broadway; the congregation appeared serious and attentive. Notwithstanding the labors of the day were considerable, I was not much wearied. In meeting the society I observed to them that they knew but little of my life and labors, unless in the pulpit, family, or class meetings; that they were unacquainted with my labors even in that city, much less could they tell where I had been, and what I had been doing for one year.

Definition of Heresy and Schism.

Wednesday, 31. I had a meeting with the leaders in close conference, and found it necessary to explain some parts of our discipline to them, particularly that

of the right of preachers to expel members when tried before the society or a "select number," and found guilty of a breach of the law of God and our rules; and if an appeal were made, it should be brought before the quarterly-meeting conference, composed of traveling and local preachers, leaders, and stewards, and finally be determined by a majority of votes. I found it also needful to observe there was such a thing as heresy in the Church; and I know not what it is if it be not to deny the Lord that bought them, and the eternity of the punishment of the damned, as is virtually done by the Universalists. *Schism* is not dividing hypocrites from hypocrites, formal professors from people of their own caste; it is not dividing nominal Episcopalians from each other, nominal Methodists from nominal Methodists, or nominal Quakers from nominal Quakers, etc. But *schism* is the dividing real Christians from each other, and breaking the unity of the Spirit. I met the trustees, and after going hither and thither, and being much spent with labor through the day, I gave them a discourse at the new house (in the evening) on Acts xx, 32. My attempt was feeble but faithful.

Conn.]

Old Haddam.

Monday, September 12. I came to Old Haddam. Here they have built a new meeting-house, and there are some gracious souls here. I sensibly felt the effects of heat and the labors of the day. We made it fifteen miles to Father Wilcox's. I conclude that since I have left New York I have ridden about one hundred and forty miles, and a great part of the way is rough and rocky; my body is full of infirmities,

and my soul of the love of God. I think that God is returning to this place, and that great days will yet come on in New England.

A Conference of Thirty Preachers.

Monday, 19. We rode through Windham, Scotland, and Abingdon. After dining at Captain P.'s we rode on to Thompson; a few of the preachers were present, and we were able to form a conference. That evening and the next morning, *Tuesday, 20,* and *Wednesday, 21,* we were closely employed; we had about thirty preachers, some of whom were from the Province of Maine, three hundred miles distant, who gave us a pleasing relation of the work of God in those parts. I delivered a discourse on Acts xxvi, 18, 19, and we ordained seven deacons and five elders. About four o'clock I took my leave of town, and stopped at Eastford and saw Father —, a solemn saint, lamenting the decline of religion among the Baptists.

N. Y.] Asbury Preaches with Deep Emotion.

Sunday, October 2. I preached at the house in John-street on Eph. iv, 11–13, and had great enlargement; the feelings of the people were touched, and my own also, as if it had been the last time, as it probably may be with some of my hearers if not myself. I could not have been much more moved; it was with difficulty I could continue speaking. In the afternoon, at the new house, there was also a move in the congregation while I enlarged on 1 Cor. iv. 10, 11. I ordained in both houses, in all, eight deacons and seven elders, and was on my feet six hours in the course of this day.

N. J.] Weary and Unwell, yet Cheerful.

Tuesday, 4. We came to the Ferry, and after being detained about an hour we made out to get a passage. Here we met with the preachers who had been retarded in their journey by the late storm. I pushed along, weary and unwell, to Brother Hutchinson's, and next day, faint, though cheerful, we reached Burlington.

Thursday, 6. We reached Philadelphia about noon. My mind is in peace, but my body and spirits fail.

Pa.] "Great Love and Great Riches."

Monday, 10. We opened a conference of between forty and fifty preachers. We had great love and great riches also. Never before have we been able to pay the preachers their salaries, but at this conference we have done it, and had two hundred dollars left for debts and difficulties the preachers had been involved in.

Del.] Asbury Seldom Travels on the Sabbath.

Saturday, 15. We dined at Chester with my dear old friend, M. Whitby, and came in the evening to Wilmington.

Sabbath Day, 16. The morning was rainy, but we had a few serious people to whom I preached on Rev. ii, 1-7. My soul enjoys sweet peace. Being in haste to get to Baltimore, we rode on the *Sabbath* afternoon to my old friend S. Heansey's; of this I am not fond, and where necessity does not compel me, rarely do it. I turned out of the way on *Monday* to preach at Bethel, in the place of Dr. Coke; my subject was, "Let us labor to enter into that rest, lest any man

fall after the same example of unbelief." It was a happy season. In the course of the day I rode thirty-five miles and lodged at North East.

Md.] General Conference of 1796.

Wednesday, 19. We came to Baltimore, where about a hundred preachers were met for general conference. They agreed to a committee, and then complained; upon which we dissolved ourselves. I preached on "The men of Issachar that knew what Israel ought to do;" and again on "Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock." There were souls awakened and converted. No angry passions were felt among the preachers; we had a great deal of good and judicious talk. The conference rose on *Thursday*, the 3d of November; what we have done is printed. Bishop Coke was cordially received as my friend and colleague, to be wholly for America, unless a way should be opened to France. At this conference there was a stroke aimed at the president eldership. I am thankful that our session is over. My soul and body have health, and have hard labor. Brother Whatcoat is going to the south of Virginia, Brother M'Claskey is going to New Jersey, Brother Ware to Pennsylvania, and Brother Hutchinson to New York and Connecticut. Very great and good changes have taken place.

Va.] Coke, Whatcoat, and Asbury.

Saturday, November 5. We rode twenty miles, and on *Sabbath* morning we came directly to Alexandria. Doctor Coke preached on "The wise men that came to Jesus." Brother Whatcoat and myself exhorted.

Rejecting Mr. Wesley—Asbury's Statement.

Monday, 28. We crossed a small ferry, and came through Suffolk to Brother Jolliff's, twenty-two miles. I had solemn thoughts while I passed the house where Robert Williams lived and died, whose funeral rites I performed. The weather is remarkably cold for the season, the ice being more than an inch thick on the streams. I was amazed to hear that my dear aged friend, Benjamin Evans, (now gone to glory,) was converted to the new side by being told by J. O'Kelly that I had offended Mr. Wesley, and that he being about calling me to account, I cast him off altogether. But, *query*, did not J. O'K. set aside the appointment of Richard Whatcoat? and did not the conference in Baltimore strike that *minute* out of our discipline which was called *a rejecting of Mr. Wesley?* and now does J. O'K. lay all the blame on me? It is true, I never approved of that binding minute. I did not think it practical expediency to obey Mr. Wesley, at three thousand miles distance, in all matters relative to Church government; neither did Brother Whatcoat, nor several others. At the first General Conference I was mute and modest when it passed, and I was mute when it was expunged. For this Mr. Wesley blamed me, and was displeased that I did not rather reject the whole connection, or leave them if they did not comply. But I could not give up the connection so easily, after laboring and suffering so many years with and for them. After preaching at Jolliff's we rode to Portsmouth, and preached in the evening, where we had many people at a short warning. My subjects this day were 1 John i, 3, 4, and Isa. i, 9. We visited Norfolk, and preached at

noon, *Wednesday*, 30, on 1 Peter ii, 11, 12; at night on 1 Cor. xv, 58.

"Noble Animal—Poor Slaves."

Monday, December 19. We had to ride early; my horse trots stiff; and no wonder, when I have ridden him, upon an average, five thousand miles a year for five years successively. I preached on Heb. iii, 7, 8. I felt as if the Lord and his messengers had left this place. My spirit was grieved at the conduct of some Methodists that hire out slaves at public places to the highest bidder, to cut, skin, and starve them. I think such members ought to be dealt with. On the side of oppressors there are law and power, but where are justice and mercy to the poor slaves? what eye will pity, what hand will help, or ear listen to their distress? I will try if words can be like drawn swords, to pierce the hearts of the owners.

S. C.]

Serious News from Baltimore.

Friday, 30. We set out in the rain, crossed Santee, (we had a quick passage for once,) and rode about fifty miles, and came to Brother Jackson's about nine o'clock. Here our rapid march was ended; I rested two days. Serious news from Baltimore—the academy, and our church in Light-street, with Brother Hawkins's elegant house, all destroyed by fire! The loss we sustain in the college, academy, and church I estimate from fifteen to twenty thousand pounds. It affected my mind; but I concluded God loveth the people of Baltimore, and he will keep them poor to make them pure; and it will be for the humiliation of the society.

Asbury's Depression of Spirits Constitutional.

Sunday and Monday, January 29, 30, 1797. I consulted a physician, who judged my disease to be an intermittent fever, and such it proved itself. On *Tuesday, 31*, I was taken about two o'clock with a powerful ague, which held me till nearly nine o'clock. I presume it has been working for two weeks. I probably took it by going out at the death of Brother Wells. *Wednesday, February 1*, I took the powders of Columbo after the bilious pills. *Thursday, 2*, my fever did not return. *Friday, 3*. Growing better, I had serious thoughts about going home to God. Of late I have been kept uncommonly happy. I am solemnly given up to God, and have been for many months willing to live or die in, for, and with Jesus.

"The Pain of Parting."

Friday, 10. This day Dr. Coke is waiting to sail for Ireland. Strangers to the delicacies of Christian friendship know little or nothing of the pain of parting. Glad tidings of great joy from New York. A second glorious work is begun there, twenty souls converted, a great love-feast, and Sabbath evening meeting held until one o'clock in the morning. This news hath given a spring to us in this city.

Church Building in Charleston.

Tuesday, 14. I met the stewards on the subject of the new house. We have adjourned on the question. If materials fall in their price, and we can secure £400, shall we begin? O we of little faith! It is a doubt if we had fifty in society, and £100 on hand, when we laid the foundation-stone of Cumberland-

street house, which cost us (including the lot) £1,300. The society has been rent in twain, and yet we have wrought out of debt, and paid £100 for two new lots, and we can spare £100 from the stock, make a subscription of £150, and the Africans will collect £100.

Generosity of a Poor Black.

Tuesday, 21. My mind has been greatly afflicted, so that my sleep has been much interrupted, yet there was a balm for this : a poor black, sixty years of age, who supports herself by picking oakum and the charity of her friends, brought me a French crown, and said she had been distressed on my account, and I must have her money. But no ! although I have not three dollars to travel two thousand miles, I will not take money from the poor. I am very unwell, my soul and body is distressed ; ah ! that such trifles should affect me. I have read four books of Moses critically.

"Hail, Ye Solitary Pines !"

Monday, 27. I felt a fever, yet rejoiced to leave Charleston. Many came to see me. I have persuaded one person to give up the use of what I feared would be her ruin : she promised she would ; if so, all will be well. On my way I felt as if I was let out of prison. Hail, ye solitary pines ! the jessamine, the redbud, and dogwood ! how charming in full bloom ! the former a most fragrant smell. We reached Monk's Corner, and were most agreeably entertained at Mr. Jones's. We came on the next day, and had but hard fare till we reached Nelson's ferry. It being a rainy day, the gentlemen were regaling themselves

with cards. Blunt Frank Asbury asked for dinner, but told them he could not dine upon cards. The cards were very politely put away, and every necessary mark of attention paid. Mr. Gurdine, who commands several ferries on the river, is a complete gentleman. We came off in the rain, and it fell very freely. Through the swamp we had deep wading, and steeped our feet. We wrought along as night came on, and after riding four miles in the dark, dirt, and rain we came to the Widow Bowman's, where I found shelter and was kindly entertained. Her husband was a godly, gracious man, and died in the Lord some years ago.

N. C.]

Asbury Preaches Sitting.

Sunday, March 12. We were at Daniel Asbury's. My leg was inflamed by riding, and I found it necessary to poultice it. I sat down and taught the people on "He that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him." We had a living meeting in the evening; some souls were greatly blessed.

Crossing Toe River.

Friday, 24. I was unwell; the clouds were lowering. We had ridden but a mile when the rain began. Brother Jones's house was at hand. Here we stopped two hours, until some of the rain fell to the earth. There was a short cessation, and about half-past twelve o'clock we set out again, rode six miles, and were driven into Mr. Cook's by thunder, hail, and rain. Here we stopped to talk with God and man. Hard necessity made us move forward; the western branch of Toe River, that comes down from the Yel-

low Mountain, was rapidly filling, and was rocky, rolling, and roaring like the sea, and we were compelled to cross it several times. When we came to ascend the mountain we had a skirmish of rain, thunder, and lightning—it was distant—it was mercy. I found hard work to ride where Thomas White had driven his wagon, for which he deserves a place in my journal and a premium from the State. When we had ascended the summit of the mountain we found it so rich and miry that it was with great difficulty we could ride along; but I was wrapped up in heavy, wet garments, and unable to walk through weakness of body, so we had it, pitch, slide, and drive to the bottom. We then came upon the drains and branches of Great Toe River. From Fisher's we had to ride through what I called the *shades of death*, four miles to Miller's. Here we had to cope with Toe River, and near the house came into deep water. My horse drove to the opposite bank above the landing and locked one of his feet in a root, or something like it, but freed himself. At last we made the house; the people received us kindly, and gave us such things as they had. We could only partially dry our garments.

Tenn.]

"Live or Die, I Must Ride."

Wednesday, 29. I rode to William Nelson's and after dinner to Nathan Davies's. *Thursday morning* I was very weak, and have slow, but almost continual fevers. I preached with great difficulty in the afternoon, and returned to William Nelson's. This night I felt a total change of mind. The weakness of my body, and the cold and unsettled state of the weather, made me, with the general advice of the preachers

present, give up the cause ; they also advised me to make the best of my way to Baltimore, and not to ride in the rain. It may be the Lord intends to lead me in a way I have not yet known ; it is perhaps best that I should go with all expedient haste from conference to conference, only stopping at the towns and chief places on *Sabbath days*. Live or die, I must ride. After all the disappointments, perhaps every purpose is answered but one. I have sent Brother Cobler to take charge of Kentucky and Cumberland, by visiting the whole every quarter ; Brother Bird I have stationed in the Holstein district. I have written a circumstantial letter to Brother Poythress and the Kentucky Conference. I have made a plan for the stationing of the preachers, at least those of any standing, and now I will make the best of my way to Baltimore ; perhaps there may be some special call for me there. I must, as the burden of meeting the conferences, ordaining, and stationing the preachers resteth on me, save myself. I am peculiarly concerned for the cities ; the prosperity of the work of God depends much on having proper men for any and every part of the work.

Va.]

A List of Sympathizing Friends.

April 10. My fever never left me, as I thought, from *Monday* until *Friday* night. I am kept cheerful, but very weak. My diet is chiefly tea, potatoes, Indian-meal gruel, and chicken broth. My reading is only the Bible ; I cannot think much, and only write a few letters. I think of my charge, of the conferences, and the Church, and of my dear parents, who will probably outlive me. I must be made perfect through

sufferings. I rest in rainy weather, and have to ride from eighty to one hundred and twenty miles in a week. The way we now go we have sometimes to ride thirty miles to get to a house. From the 9th of *April* to the 27th of *May* I have kept no journal. The notes of our travels and troubles taken by Jonathan Bird and Joshua Wells will tell a small part of my sorrows and sufferings. I have traveled about six hundred miles, with inflammatory fever and fixed pain in my breast. I cannot help expressing the distinguishing kindness of some families where I have been forced by weakness to stop—Captain Shannon, on Walker's creek; my friend Scarborough, on the sinks of Green Brier; Colonel Moffat and Brother Young, in Augusta; neither can I forget Mr. Lee and Mr. Moore; the Harrisons, at Rocktown, and Brother and Sister M'Williams; Sisters Phelps and Reed, in Winchester, and my dear, kind friend, Doctor Tiffin. By a strange providence I was cast upon Ely Dorsey, on Linganore, who nursed me as if I had been his own father.

Md.] "A Worthless Lump of Misery and Sin."

From the 27th of *May* until *June* 10, no journal. We rode nearly forty miles from Linganore to Baltimore. I lodged at Brother Hawkins's retreat, about one mile from the city. I lounged away a week in visiting a little.

Sunday, June 18. I was only able to speak about fifteen minutes. I recover but slowly. The constant resort of the wealthy and poor visiting me made me much ashamed that they should look after such a worthless lump of misery and sin.

"My Bow is Weak if not Broken."

Saturday, July 8. I cannot now, as heretofore, spend ten hours out of sixteen in reading the Bible in English or Hebrew, or other books, or write letters from morning until night. My bow is weak if not broken ; but I have more time to speak to God and souls. *Sabbath day* I performed at Mr. Gough's alone.

Pa.]

Asbury Cannot be Inactive.

Saturday, 15. Warm as it was I reached Philadelphia, and *Sabbath evening, 16,* I felt free to labor a little, feeble as I was, and enlarged on John xiv, 1. I have great reason to be thankful for my sulky ; I should soon be silent without it. I rode to Germantown to see aged Mother Steel and Sister Lusby, and found freedom, although I could hardly walk or talk, yet must needs speak to the women of the house about their souls. Dined at Brother Baker's retreat, and came back to the city very sick and went to bed.

N. J.]

A Living Fire Kindled in New Brunswick.

Monday, 24. We came to Brunswick. Dined, prayed, and rejoiced to hear that God had kindled a living fire here through the instrumentality of a brother from Elizabethtown. We came on to Elizabethtown, forty miles. It was ample labor for man and horse. Here I was sick again.

Tuesday, 25. I rode to Newark, and dined with Mr. Ogden, a steady friend. After the rain I came to New York. Here I spent a few painful days, being unable to visit or be visited.

N. Y.]

Asbury at Mr. Sherwood's.

On *Monday* I came to Shotwell's, very unwell, and the next day to Kingsbridge. Here I was compelled by affliction to spend two weeks. I then rode to New Rochelle, and lodged at Mr. Sherwood's. Finding myself swelling in the face, bowels, and feet, I applied leaves of burdock, and then a plaster of mustard, which drew a desperate blister. I had such awful sore feet I knew not but that they would mortify, and only after two weeks was I able to set them to the ground. I took cream of tartar and niter daily to cool and keep open the body. I also made use of the bark.

"Awfully Dumb Sabbaths."

Thursday, September 14. The kindness of this Sherwood family is great—my dear Mamma and Betsy Sherwood, and Jonathan and Bishop also. If I had not been at home here, what additional distress of mind would have attended me! My friends, also, were welcome to come and see me. *Sabbath day*, at the Widow Sherwood's, I had the pleasure of hearing our Brother Matthias make a pointed, profitable, and powerful discourse. It is now eight weeks since I have preached—awfully dumb Sabbaths! I have been most severely tried from various quarters; my fevers, my feet, and Satan, would set in with my gloomy and nervous affections. Sometimes subject to the greatest effeminacy; to distress at the thought of a useless, idle life. But what brought the heavy pang into my heart, and the big tear to roll that never rises without a cause, was the thought of leaving the connection without some proper men of their

own election to go in and out before them in my place, and to keep that order which I have been seeking these many years to establish.

Going Down into Egypt.

Monday, 18. I felt strength of faith and body, as if I should be raised up again. I rode for recreation nine miles. O that my future life may be holiness to the Lord, prudent and exemplary to many! I wished to speak to a poor African whom I saw in the field as I went out, and as I came along on my return he was at a stone wall within eight or nine feet of me. Poor creature! he seemed struck at my counsel, and gave me thanks. It was going down into the Egypt of South Carolina after those poor souls of Africans I have lost my health, if not my life, in the end. The will of the Lord be done!

Asbury an American Bishop in Principle and Practice.

Saturday, 23. I slept well last night, but waked with a slight fever. I received a letter from Dr. Coke. As I thought, so it is. He is gone from Ireland to England, and will have work enough when he cometh there. The three grand divisions of that connection are alarming. It is a doubt if the Doctor cometh to America until spring, if at all until the General Conference. I am more than ever convinced of the propriety of the attempts I have made to bring forward Episcopal men. First, from the uncertain state of my health. Secondly, from a regard to the union and good order of the American body and the state of the European connection. I am sensibly assured the Americans ought to act as if they expected

to lose me every day, and had no dependence upon Doctor Coke, taking prudent care not to place themselves at all under the controlling influence of British Methodists.

Honorable Mention of Elijah Crawford.

Monday, 25. The day was clear and very warm. I rode up to the Plains, and stopped at Elijah Crawford's. God hath honored this house. Two young men are gone into the ministry out of it. I have ridden nearly twenty miles, and had it not been for the heat I should have done well.

N. J.] Asbury Sick, but Traveling and Visiting Families.

Tuesday, October 3. We rode thirty miles to Joseph Hutchinson's. I lament most of all that I have not lived in a constant state of prayer. I have had most deep and sore temptations of many kinds, such as I could have hardly thought of in health. I must be tried so as by fire. By reason of the fever in Philadelphia our conference is moved to Duck Creek, in the State of Delaware.

Wednesday, 4. After the storm was over we moved on as far as Crosswick's, and lodged at Father Lovell's. I was weak in body, but comfortable in mind. I visited three families, called at Hancock's and saw my old friend of twenty-six years' membership. I came on to Burlington. Serious times still in Philadelphia.

Del.]

Great Times at Duck Creek.

Monday, 9. We came thirty-eight miles to Duck Creek.

Tuesday, 10. We began conference. I appointed

the president elders to take my seat, and I sat alone because the hand of the Lord was upon me. I was resolved to put out my strength to the last in preaching. My first subject was Isaiah i, 26-28, my second was on Luke xvii, 12, my third 2 Cor. xiii, 11. Great times. Preaching almost night and day. Some souls converted, and Christians were like a flame of fire. Eleven persons were set apart for elders' and three for deacons' orders.

Md.] Baltimore Conference—All the Preachers Satisfied.

Friday, 20. After all the alarm we came to Baltimore. A blessed rain settled the amazing dust and purified the air.

Saturday, 21. I opened conference, and gave up the presidency to the presiding elders. Returned unwell. Very uncomfortable easterly winds and rainy weather. I mentioned in my speech to the conference the weakness of the episcopacy.

Friday, 27. The conference rose. There was great peace, and all the preachers but myself satisfied with their stations.

Asbury Opens the New Church—(Light-street.)

Sunday, 29. I opened the new church in Light-street with reading 2 Chron. vii, 12; Psalm cxxxii; Haggai xi; Mark xi. The elders read and prayed. My subject was Eph. ii, 19-22, and at Old Town I preached on 2 Sam. xvi, 17. I had to preach the funeral sermon of Father Gatch on 1 Thess. iv, 13, 14. I observed the pleasing, cheering, and charming manner in which the apostle described the death of the righteous. Sleep—sleep in Jesus! a rest from labor,

sorrow, affliction, and pain. Happy opening visions of God! Secondly, The hope the pious who are alive have for their pious dead who have had experience and long continuance in religion, and a comfortable dying in the Lord. Those who have no hope for themselves nor their dead, how awful their sorrow! I feel myself very weak. I dined at Mr. Rogers's.

Va.] Advised by the Conference to Rest.

Friday, November 24. I visited my old friends and wrote to Alexander Mather. My route, which I only guessed at, is now fixed by Norfolk, Portsmouth, Newbern, Kingston, Georgetown, and Charleston, between five and six hundred miles in little more than a month. Sick or well, living or dead, my appointments go on.

Saturday, 25. The conference began their sitting at Lane's chapel. About sixty preachers were present. Nine or ten had located and four or five were added. *Sabbath day*, two hours were spent in speaking of the circuits and for souls.

Wednesday, 29. At noon the conference rose; the business was conducted with dispatch and in much peace. I desired the advice of the conference concerning my health. The answer was, that I should rest until the session of the conference to be held in April in Virginia.

Asbury Declines to Rebaptize.

Thursday, December 14. My mind is grieved with the *old sore* in Virginia, but I must bear it patiently. One of our sisters asked me if we would not rebaptize persons that desired it. This put me to thinking

and revolving the subject in my mind. I considered that there was neither precept nor example in holy writ to justify our rebaptizing one who had been baptized in the name and form which Christ commanded in Matt. xxviii, 19.

Book List for 1798.

Monday, January 8, 1798. I wrote a long letter to John Dickins upon the manner of expediting his books to the distant parts, namely, the Journals, Sermons, Saints' Rests, Patterns, Hymn Books, and that the Magazine should be our grand circulating medium. Only let us have more American Lives and Letters.

Asbury Never Idle.

Saturday, 20. Very unwell. I am strangely brought down. Lord, let me suffer with patience: thy will be done! I could not do any thing at my books, but, that I might not be wholly idle, I wound cotton brooches among the children.

Sunday, 21. I sat at home reading a little. *Monday,* I am better. My fever is greatly broken. I can only write and meditate about an hour in a day. I must have some exercise, if it is only women's work.

Importance of Asbury's Journal.

Tuesday, February 6. My fever was very light last night. I received a most loving letter from the Charleston Conference. There is great peace and good prospects there. I hope to be able to move next week. I have well considered my journal: it is inelegant, yet it conveys much information of the

state of religion and country. It is well suited to common readers ; the wise need it not. I make no doubt the Methodists are, and will be, a numerous and wealthy people, and their preachers who follow us will not know our struggles but by comparing the present improved state of the country with what it was in our days, as exhibited in my journal and other records of that day.

Local Preachers—Their Relation to Slavery.

Sunday, March 18. I have visited four families in Brunswick and three in Dinwiddie counties. On *Saturday* I had a close conversation with some of our local ministry. We had great union.

Sunday, 25. Since the last sacred day I have visited seven families. A friend of mine was inquisitive of my trade and apprenticeship, as Mr. Glendenning had reported. As he asked me so plainly, I told him that I counted it no reproach to have been taught to get my own living. My health is somewhat better. I am yet unable to read or write largely. I can pray and praise the Lord a little. I assisted Philip Sands to draw up an agreement for our officary to sign against slavery. Thus we may know the real sentiments of our local preachers. Some of our local preachers complain that they have not a seat in the general annual conference. We answer, if they will do the duty of a member of the yearly conference they may have the seat and privilege of the traveling line. The local preachers can receive fifty or a hundred dollars per year for marriages, but we travelers, if we receive a few dollars for marriages, must return them at the conference, or be called refractory or

disobedient. Let us not have the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ with respect of persons in ministers any more than in members, in local preachers any more than traveling ones.

Md.] Half-yearly Conference at Baltimore.

Monday, April 23. We reached Turner's, and made a rapid ride to the city of Baltimore. I visited until the *Sabbath, April 29.* They would publish for me at Old Town meeting-house. I made an attempt on Psalm cxxxii, 9: "Let thy priests be clothed with righteousness, and let thy saints shout for joy." I went to the Point and heard a sermon on "Speak evil of no man." I gave a short exhortation, and came home much more comfortable than I expected. Our beautiful house is not yet ready. I fear, I tremble in imagination, lest it should have more temporal than spiritual glory.

Wednesday, May 2. Our conference began. It was *half-yearly*, to bring on an equality by the change from fall to spring. We had to correct the many offenses given at many conferences to one particular man. I pleased myself with the idea that I was out of the quarrel. But no; I was deeper in than ever, and never was wounded in so deep a manner. It was as much as I could bear. I cannot stand such strokes.

Pa.] Conference in Philadelphia—Trouble with City Societies.

Saturday, June 9. Our conference began on *Tuesday*, and we were closely confined until this day.

Sabbath, 10. I preached on Matt. xxiv, 45-47. We had close work, but good tempers abounded, and just

measures were pursued. I made an attempt to ride to Germantown, but returned. And it was well I did, for I had no sooner discharged the fragments of the conference business, and the stationing of the preachers, than the affairs of the society came in sight respecting the city. I have my difficulties with the government of the preachers, but I have some trouble with the city societies—they wish to have the connection drafted, and some of the most acceptable preachers to serve them. I made all haste to leave the city, but not until I had met the trustees of the Church.

N. J.] News of the Death of Asbury's Father.

Wednesday, 13. We came to Hutchinson's, and on *Thursday* to Brunswick, where I bore my feeble testimony, and drew up a subscription for the purchase of a house for divine worship. On *Friday* we came to Elizabethtown, and on *Saturday, 16th*, to New York. Here I received the serious confirmation of the death of my father, aged eighty-four or eighty-five.

N. Y.] The Parting Scene Twenty-seven Years Ago.

Sunday, 17. I preached in the new church on Eccles. i, 1. At the old church in John-street my text was 1 Pet. iv, 10: "As good stewards of the manifold grace of God." I now feel myself an orphan with respect to my father. Wounded memory recalls to mind what took place when I parted with him nearly twenty-seven years next September—from a man that seldom, if ever, I saw weep; but when I came to America, overwhelmed with tears, with grief, he cried out, "I shall never see him again!" Thus by proph-

ecy or by providence he hath spoken what is fulfilled. For about thirty-nine years my father hath had the Gospel preached in his house. The particulars of his death are not yet come to hand.

Children Dying—Rain Needed.

Sunday, July 1. At the old church I preached from Phil. iii, 18–20. At the north church, in the afternoon, on 1 Cor. ix, 2. I was much heated, and rather hurried in preaching. The weather is excessively warm. The children are dying, and probably so will the parents unless God send rain. I live wholly upon vegetables, and wear flannel.

Conn.] How Asbury was First Called Bishop.

Thursday, 19. At four o'clock Brother Lee gave a warm, encouraging sermon from 1 Cor. xv, 58. At the new meeting-house, (properly West Haddam,) where the Methodists are upon free principles, I added a few words, and then began our march to New London. We crossed Connecticut River at Chapman's ferry. We came on without touching the ground sometimes, as the carriage would frequently jump from rock to rock. After riding about thirty-two miles we reached New London at eight o'clock. James O'Kelly hath told a tale of me which I think it my duty to tell better. He writes: "Francis ordered the preachers to entitle him bishop in directing their letters." The secret and truth of the matter was this. The preachers having had great difficulties about the appellation of the *Rev.* or *Mr.*, that is, to call a man by one of the divine appellations, supposing *Mr.* to be an abbreviation of Master, ("call

no man master upon earth,") it was talked over in the yearly conference, for then we had no general conference established. So we concluded it would be by far the best to give each man his official title, as deacon, elder, and bishop. To this the majority agreed. James O'Kelly giveth all the good, the bad, and middling of all the order of our Church to me. What can be the cause of all this ill-treatment which I receive from him? Was it because I did not, I could not, settle him for life in the south district of Virginia? He was in this district for ten years, part of the time in the very best circuits in the district, and then in the district as presiding elder.

R. L.]

No Adequate Pay But Souls.

Friday, August 3. Preached at Bristol; my subject, Luke xviii, 7. It was to me a serious, comfortable time. What but the mighty power of God and the unceasing cries of his people can help us here?

Saturday, 4. We came through Warren, Swansey, Somerset, Dighton, and Taunton, thirty-two miles. The day was excessively warm; and O! rocks, hills, and stones! I was greatly outdone. No price can pay—there is no purchase for this day's hire but souls. We frequently spend a dollar per day to feed ourselves and horses. I never received, as I recollect, any personal beneficence—no not a farthing—in New England, and perhaps never shall, unless I should be totally out of cash.

Mass.]

Reflections on Pestilence.

Tuesday, 7. I rode twenty-two miles through heat and hunger to Boston. Here I spent one night very unwell in body, and with pains and pleasures of mind

upon account of the preachers and people, who are ever in my thoughts.

Wednesday, 8. I was advised to retire a few days to Waltham. There is affliction in Boston—the malignant fever. But who can tell the sick that are in the second or third house from his own in a town or city where it is needful to observe secrecy lest people should be frightened away from their homes, or the country people from bringing food? O a social family, a comfortable table, pure air, and good water are blessings at Waltham!

Whitefield's Tomb.

Monday, 13. We began our march to Lynn, in weakness of body and distress of mind. I gave a discourse, late in the evening, on Heb. iv, 9, and that night I slept but little. On *Tuesday* we began our journey for the province of Maine. We passed through Danvers, Salem, Beverly, and thence to Hamilton, where we were kindly entertained by some aged people. Dined, and hasted along through Ipswich, and thence to Newburyport. Here I passed in sight of the old prophet, dear Whitefield's tomb, under the Presbyterian meeting-house. We crossed the Merrimac River and bridge, and came in late to Mr. Merrill's, where we were kindly entertained.

N. H.]

Portsmouth a Well-fortified Town.

Wednesday, 15. We entered properly into New Hampshire. We passed Hampton Falls, where the people and priests were about installing a minister into the deceased Dr. Langdon's congregation. We had a dripping morning. We set out, however, and

rode about twenty miles to Portsmouth. There is a fever somewhat malignant and mortal here. This is a well-fortified town against the Methodists. Mr. Hutchinson and daughter received us with great Christian politeness. Being exceedingly outdone with heat and labor, I was easily persuaded to tarry until morning. We crossed Piscataqua River, at the town of Portsmouth, in a flat-bottomed boat. I am so weak that the smallest shock shakes me. We came through Old York, Father Moodie's parish, of whom many tales are told. One is worth telling to posterity: it is that the only salary he received was the prayers of his people. We came on to Wells, and were kindly entertained at Mr. Maxwell's. I was restless through the night, and sleepy and sick through the day, yet we rode forty miles to Major Illsley's, near Portland.

Me.] **The First Conference ever Held in Maine.**

Saturday, 25. We had to beat through the woods between Winthrop and Redfield, which are as bad as the Alleghany mountain and the Shades of Death. We have now laid by our carriage and saddle, to wait until Wednesday next for conference; the first of the kind ever held in these parts, and it will probably draw the people from far and near.

Wednesday, 29. Ten of us sat in conference. Great was our union and freedom of speech with each other.

N. H.] **Place of Mr. Whitefield's Last Sermon.**

Tuesday, September 4. I passed Hampton and Hampton Falls. At the latter Mr. Whitefield preached his last sermon, and probably caught the cause of his

death. I came over Piscataqua Bridge, a most admirable piece of architecture ; it is double, and the toll-gate and tavern stand upon the island. We dined at Greenland, and had great attention paid us. The fever is breaking out again in Portsmouth, and it is awful in Philadelphia ; it seemeth as if the Lord would humble or destroy that city, by stroke after stroke, until they acknowledge God. Very serious appearances of this fever are now in New York.

Mass.]

Conference at Granville.

Tuesday, 18. We came up to Granville, sixteen miles. It is well that I had help over the rocks and mountains.

Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday. We sat in conference. About fifty preachers of different descriptions were present. Ten were admitted on probation. We had many weighty and deliberate conversations on interesting subjects, in much plainness and moderation. Six of us lodged among Deacon Loyd's kind Congregational people.

Conn.]

Asbury Compares his Travels to a Flight.

Saturday, 22. We began our flight to the White Plains, across the hills and along most dreadful roads for a carriage. We came to Canaan, about thirty-six miles, and lodged by the Falls of the Housatonic River. Its source is in some ponds and springs north and south-west of Pittsfield, Massachusetts, and running through the heart of Connecticut, empties into Long Island Sound at Stratford. It is the second in magnitude to that which gives a name to the State.

N. Y.] Awful Times in P'

New York.

Monday, 24. We came through Dutchess County, near the line of the two States, and down the waters of Croton River. We lodged at Webb's, near New Salem. We reached the Plains in about thirty-six miles, and came in about sundown. Most awful times in Philadelphia and New York—citizens flying before the fever as if it were the sword! I now wait the providence of God to know which way to go.

N. J.]

Death of John Dickins.

Wednesday, October 3. Called upon James Sterling. This morning the certainty of the death of John Dickins was made known to me. He was in person and affection another Thomas White to me for years past. I feared death would divide us soon. I cannot write his biography here. We came to Germantown, and *Thursday*, twenty-five miles to Daniel Meredith's, where we tarried for a night. Next day we reached Thomson's Mill, upon Great Elk. Within a mile of this place, while going over a desperate piece of road, my carriage turned bottom upward; I was under and thrown down a descent of five or six feet. I thought at first I was unhurt, but upon examination I found my ankle was skinned and a rib bone bruised. O the heat, the fall, the toil, the hunger of the day!

Md.]

His Character.

Tuesday, 9. We came to Baltimore. Here they have little to boast of but health and trade. The outward building of a society house is going on. I had John Dickins's son with me. We sketched out a

few traits of his father's life. For piety, probity, profitable preaching, holy living, Christian education of his children, secret, closet prayer, I doubt whether his superior is to be found either in Europe or America.

Va.]

Mortality Among the Preachers.

Friday, 19. We came through the dust, thirty-five miles, to Richmond. Here I heard of the death of John Norman Jones, who departed in joy and peace in Charleston; this is the second preacher we have lost in about one year in that city. Likewise of Hickson and Brush in New York, M'Gee and Dickins in Philadelphia, and Francis Spry in Baltimore. M'Gee, William Dougharty, J. Brush, Stephen Davis, John Ragen, James King, and John Dickins died of the malignant fever.

Asbury Hard at Work Again.

Saturday, 20. I rested in Richmond. I here must record my thanks to my ancient and firm friend, Philip Rogers, for the loan of a horse when mine was fully worn down, and unable to stand my long and rapid rides.

Sabbath, 21. I preached in the court-house, at the east end of the city, on 1 John i, 6, 7, and in the afternoon on Romans x, 13-16. On *Monday, 22,* I preached at Manchester on Heb. viii, 10, 11, and on *Tuesday* rode to Petersburg by three o'clock, and preached on Heb. iii, 16. I spent the evening with and slept at Joseph Harding's; it was a renewal of our former friendship. I spent *Wednesday* at Wood Tucker's in as sweet affection as in ancient times. I exhorted his children to come to Christ.

Thursday, 25. In company with my never-failing friend, (as far as man can be so,) Richard Whatcoat, I came to Roper's. My horse was taken sick, which detained me a night. On *Friday*, at Henry Reese's, my subject was Matt. vi, 16. I had the pleasure of seeing seven preachers present. On *Saturday*, 27, we had what was much wanted—rain.

N. C.] "It Will Make Death Welcome."

Friday, November 16. We rode to Mr. Bell's, on Deep River, thence thirty miles to Wood's, upon — River. This day was very warm, and we had exceedingly uncomfortable roads. Going at this rate is very trying; but it will make death welcome, and eternal rest desirable. *Saturday* and *Sunday*, at quarterly meeting, my subject was Acts iii, 26. We rode down twelve miles to D. West's, and were benighted, which ill suited me. As we had to travel an unknown road to Henry Ledbetter's I wished to continue on our journey and not stop at Hancock; but the people thought and said otherwise, so I stopped, and Brother Lee preached, after which I gave a discourse on Acts ii, 39, and came off in haste. D. West escorted me down to the ferry, where we called in vain for the flat. D. West went over, and it was with difficulty that he persuaded the ferryman to come with the boat and take me. It being dark, and the wind blowing very strong and cold, we had hard work in crossing. I told the company so in the morning, but stay I must and preach, or be accounted proud. At Henry Ledbetter's I preached on Heb. x, 23, 24, and at John Randell's on 2 Cor. vi, 1. Brother Jackson had secured for me riding and preaching enough as far as Camden.

S. C.]

A Cooling Breeze from the North.

Friday, 30. We have ridden since Brother Jackson hath had the command of us nearly one hundred and fifty miles, from Montgomery, in North Carolina, to Camden, in South Carolina. If I attempt my appointments that Brother Lee has gone upon I must ride one hundred and fifty miles next week to Washington, in Georgia. The people are remarkably kind in this country. I preached in Camden on 1 Kings viii, 35, 36. Here we have a beautiful meeting-house. It was a time of very severe drought, but I hope this place will yet be visited in mercy. *Monday* we rode to Brother James Rembart's, and on *Tuesday* I preached there on Heb. vi, 18. Here we seated ourselves for writing until *Saturday*, 10. On *Sabbath day* my subject was Acts iv, 20. *Monday* we rode to Brother Bradford's, and on *Tuesday* to Jack Creek. The changes of weather and lodging affect me much. I called and preached at Robert Bowman's. On *Friday* we came to Monk's Corner, and on *Saturday* to Charleston. I received a *cooling breeze* in a letter from the North. For the first time I opened my mouth upon Psalm lxvi, 13, 14. We have peace and good prospects in Charleston; very large congregations attend the ministration of the word. Brother Harper opened his mission upon "Thy word have I hid in my heart that I might not sin against thee." In the evening I spoke upon our Lord's lamentation over Jerusalem. On *Christmas day* I preached from Luke ii, 14, and at the new church on Haggai ii, 7.

Great Harmony and Good Humor in Conference.

January 1, 1799. Our yearly conference assembled at Charleston. We kept our seats for four days. Thirty preachers present. We had great harmony and good humor. I gave a short discourse, addressed to the conference, from Heb. xiii, 17.

I ordained three elders and seven deacons. The generosity of the people in Charleston was great. After keeping our ministers and their horses, they gave us nearly one hundred dollars for the benefit of those preachers who are in want.

N. C.]

A Visit to the Sea.

Thursday, February 9. I preached at the meeting-house from Luke iv, 18, 19, and came the same evening to Father William Gause's, where I preached on *Friday*, 10, upon Rom. v, 1-5. We had a living season here. I paid a visit to the sea, and saw the breakers—tremendous sight and sound! but how curious to see the sea-gull take the clams out of the sand and bear them up into the air, drop them down to break them, and then eat the flesh! This I saw demonstrated; and if they fail once in breaking the shell they will take it up again, bear it higher, and cast it down upon a hard spot of ground until they effect their purpose.

We are now in Bladen circuit, Brunswick county, North Carolina. I have traveled nearly four hundred miles in the Southern States, and spent three months therein.

Newbern Originally Settled by Germans.

Thursday, 21. We came to Newbern, originally settled by Germans, and called after *old Berne* in

Switzerland. For sixteen miles of this road we had heavy rain ; but I was well cased up, notwithstanding which I took cold. We have traveled from Charleston three hundred and thirty miles in this our retrograde journey, which we have made longer by frequently turning out of our way.

Moving Rapidly Through the Counties.

Thursday, March 14. At Nixonton I declined preaching, but made an exhortation after Brother Lee had given them a long sermon. It is probably eight years since I came through this circuit, which caused this people to exert themselves in coming out, so that we had a very large congregation.

We have ridden since we have come across Roanoke one hundred and forty-three miles to John Russell's. We have moved rapidly through Gates, Chowan, Perquimons, and Pasquotank counties ; as we pass we have lovely levels, fine white cedar on the rivers, creeks, and swamps, for between six or seven hundred miles ; from the low lands in Georgia to Blackwater in Virginia it is fine lumber land, but unhealthy in some places.

Va.] Asbury Raising Blood—Unable to Preach.

Monday, April 8. We rode thirty miles to Jones's chapel. *Tuesday, Wednesday, and Thursday,* conference sat in great peace and love.

Friday, 12. We rode to Father Nathaniel Lee's, and on *Saturday, 13,* to Frederick Bonner's, where I rested—a solemn Sabbath.

Monday, 15. By ten o'clock we came to Petersburg, and then rode on and crossed James River

at Woodson's ferry. We lodged at Keezee's, having ridden thirty-two miles.

Tuesday, 16. We came to Philip Davis's, twenty miles, near Putney, New Kent. I feel low in body, but serene in soul. The brethren in Virginia, in conference, gave it me in charge not to preach until the Baltimore conference. I was willing to obey, feeling myself utterly unable. The houses that we preach and lodge in this severe weather are very open. My breast is inflamed and I have a discharge of blood.

Journeying Toward Baltimore.

Thursday, 25. The general fast day. I attended at Fairfax chapel; Philip Bruce gave a discourse upon these words of our Lord: "And then shall they fast in those days." As I was unable to preach, I gave an exhortation from the subject. I find that very small rest, when joined with comfortable accommodation, gives me great strength of body; by this means I might be restored, but I must keep moving. I was caught in a heavy thunder-storm, from which I took cold and had a high fever and headache. I rested on *Friday* at William Watters's. *Saturday*, rode to Alexandria. *Monday* and *Tuesday*, rode to Baltimore.

Md.]

A Home Offered Asbury.

Wednesday, May 1. We opened our conference, which sat four days. We had preaching morning and evening. I gave a short exhortation before the sacrament.

Monday, 6. We rode out to Greenwood, Mr. Roger's country-seat, who told me that when I was past labor there was his house as my own.

A Legacy from a Living Friend.

Tuesday, 21. We came to Anamessex. My horse began to sweat, swell, and tremble, and died upon the road. Brother Levan Moore was with me; we put his horse in the sulky, and both of us rode to Samuel Smith's.

Wednesday, 22. I borrowed a horse of Samuel Smith, crossed Pocomoke, and rode to Littleton Long's, where I gave an exhortation to a few people. It was a very extraordinary legacy of a living friend that put forty-five dollars into my hands; had I not bought a coat I might have had fifty dollars in my pocket; it would have been a wonder for me to have as much money by me; but one hundred or more might be needful to purchase another horse.

Del.] Asbury Advised to Suspend Preaching.

Sabbath Day, June 2. After meeting I rode to Duck Creek Cross Roads, and called at Doctor Cook's to see Thomas White's children. Doctor Anderson, Doctor Ridgely, and Doctor Neadham considered my case: they advised a total suspension from preaching, fearing a consumption or a dropsy in the breast.

Monday, 3. I ordained one person at the Cross Roads, and another at Dickinson's meeting-house. I dined with Mr. Moore near the Appoquimamink bridge, and then rode on to Wilmington; we have made forty miles this day. What with labor and fevers my rest is greatly interrupted.

Pa.] Ezekiel Cooper Appointed Book Agent.

Thursday, 6. We held our conference in Philadelphia. I retired each night to *the Eagleworks, upon*

Schuylkill, at Henry Foxall's solitary, social retreat. The conference was large and the business very important. Ezekiel Cooper was confirmed in his appointment by me as our Agent in the Book Concern.

N. J.] *Asbury Sweeps Through New Jersey.*

Wednesday, 12. After the rising of the conference I rode to Burlington; on *Thursday*, 13, to Milford; on *Friday*, to Mr. Drake's, near Amboy; and on *Saturday*, to New York.

N. Y.] *Conference for New York and the New England States.*

Wednesday, 19. We opened our conference for New York and all the New England States.

The conference was crowded with work; consequently I had but little rest, and what added to my pain was Brother Bostick's lying sick in the next room. Heat and haste!

Sunday, 23. We had a charitable day at all the houses and collected nearly three hundred dollars; but the deficiencies of the preachers were almost one thousand dollars. I attempted to preach a little on Phil. iv, 19, and gave an exhortation at the Bowery church. I met the society at the old church at night. The excessive heat made us wish and haste to leave town.

Thinks of Resigning the General Superintendency.

Monday, July 1. I rested. My health is somewhat better. I must confess I never felt so great a resolution to resign the general superintendency as I do now; and if matters do not work more to my

mind, it is highly probable I shall. My prayers and counsel will be turned this way until next General Conference.

A Group of Honored Names.

Tuesday, 2. I visited Mr. Sands's family, and on *Wednesday* breakfasted with Mrs. Montgomery at her beautiful retreat. Dined at Mrs. Livingston's, on the manor, an aged, respectable mother of many children. The house, the garden, the river view, all might afford much painting for the pen of a Hervey. Brother Garrettson and his agreeable wife attended us.

In Orange County.

Thursday, 18. We rode over hills and rocks, through heat and with hunger, twenty-eight miles, without stopping until we came to Leizer's, near the Jersey line, Orange county. We have traveled and toiled nearly four hundred miles through this State. Weary as I was, I must needs ride five miles further to Nicholas Simonson's, where I was comfortably entertained.

N. J.] In Pain and Heat, Hungry and Sick.

Friday, 19. We came on to Sussex court-house; dined, and pushed on to Father Freeman's. No appointments.

Saturday, 20. I rode in great pain and heat, hungry and sick, twenty-five miles to Mr. M'Collock's. How welcome a good house, kind friends, and a cold day! What is the cause of my affliction? Is it the water, or the weather, or my bilious habit? I am at a loss to know.

Pa.]

"A Balm for Every Sore."

Wednesday, 24. We rose at three o'clock in the morning and began our journey at five, over ridges and rocks, twenty-eight miles to Pottsgrove. We did not eat until we came to Coventry. Thirty-six miles is the amount of this day's journey. O heat, drought, and dust!

Thursday, 25. We had a most dreadful time over the mountains to the Forest chapel. Here we found the people much engaged in religion; this was a balm for every sore. We dined at Kerbury's, and lodged at Abraham Lewis's.

Venerable Names.

Sabbath Day, 28. There was preaching in Thomas Ware's orchard, in Strasburg; we had the respectable of the town, and a large assembly. This place contains, I judge, between sixty and seventy dwelling houses.

Monday, 29. I visited Jacob Boehm's. God hath begun to bless the children of this family. The parents have followed us nearly the space of twenty years.

Tuesday, 30. We had a serious earthquake at five o'clock. The earth is growing old; it groans and trembles, which is the necessary consequence of "palsied eld." I visited John Miller's; thence we rode six miles to Martin Boehm's.

Wednesday, 31. We had a comfortable meeting at Boehm's church. Here lieth the dust of William Jessup and Michael R. Wilson. I feebly attempted a discourse upon Heb. vi, 12. In the evening we rode to Abraham Cagy's, near the mouth of Pagan Creek.

Revival State of the Districts.

Tuesday, August 6. It may suffice to say my mind hath been kept in great peace ; but I have been greatly afflicted and dejected with pain and labor. We have visited six districts since the sitting of the Baltimore conference, and in four out of six there is a happy revival of religion—on the Eastern Shore, in Jersey, Albany, and Pennsylvania—and we hear a rumor of a revival in the northern district of Virginia.

Va.]

A Trip through Nine Counties.

Monday, September 2. At Beaver Creek meeting-house we had a lively time. I have traveled, since I came into Virginia, through Loudon, Berkeley, Frederick, Shenandoah, Culpepper, Madison, Orange, Louisa, and Hanover counties.

Wednesday, 4. We came to Richmond Since Friday week we have traveled two hundred miles ; to which we may add the labor of our meetings—in common three hours long, and sometimes longer.

James O'Kelly's Plan of Union.

James O'Kelly hath sent out another pamphlet, and propounded terms of union himself for the Presbyterians, Baptists, and Methodists. The Presbyterians must give up their confession of faith. The Baptists, if they open a more charitable door, adult dipping. The Methodists must give up the episcopacy and form of discipline, renounce the articles of their religion and the doctrine of the Trinity. I ask in turn, What will James give up? His Unitarian errors? Did he think the Protestant Episcopalians

beneath his notice? I am now more fully satisfied than ever that his book is not worthy of an answer.

"Weary World! when Will it End?"

Wednesday, 11. I put a blister upon my breast. Brother Whatcoat preached at Charity chapel, where we administered the sacrament. We went home with John Hobson, and were treated with every mark of kindness we could desire. On *Friday* I preached at Smith's church, dined at Robert Smith's, and then rode on, in a very warm and dry day, twenty-six miles to Daniel Guerrant's, and came in a little after eight o'clock in the evening. I have stretched along through Chesterfield, Powhatan, Cumberland, Buckingham, into Prince Edward county, and this while enduring a raw and running blister upon my breast, excessive heat, and with very little rest by night or by day. I would not live always. Weary world! when will it end?

N. C.]

Asbury's American Birthday.

Saturday, October 19. We rode through a damp and, in the end, rainy day twenty miles to George Gordon's, near Wilkes's court-house. We crossed and recrossed the Yadkin River.

Sunday, 20. This is my American birthday. I have now passed twenty-eight years upon this continent. Do I wish to live them over again? By no means. I doubt if I could mend it in my weakness and old age. I could not come up to what I have done; I should be dispirited at what would be presented before me.

Crossing Rivers.

Tuesday, 22. We had a serious, laborious ride of thirty miles to William White's, Esquire, upon Johns River, Burke county. In this route we had to cross the Yadkin ten times; Elk and Buffalo each twice. Twenty miles of the path were good, ten miles uneven, with short hills, stumps, sideling banks, and deep ruts. I have renewed my acquaintance with these rivers. They afford valuable levels, with rising hills and high mountains on each side. The prospect is elegantly variegated. Here are grand heights, and there Indian corn adorns the vales. The water flows admirably clear, murmuring through the rocks, and in the rich lands, gently gliding, deep and silent, between its verdant banks. And to all this may be added pure air.

Asbury's Burden.

Saturday, 26. I stayed at the house to read, write, and plan a little. I tremble and faint under my burden—having to ride about six thousand miles annually, to preach from three to five hundred sermons a year, to write and read so many letters, and read many more—all this and more, besides the stationing of three hundred preachers, reading many hundred pages, and spending many hours in conversation by day and by night with preachers and people of various characters, among whom are many distressing cases.

S. C.]

Ecclesiastical Revenue.

Saturday and Sunday, November 9, 10. Quarterly meeting at Bramblet's. I made a discourse upon

Titus ii, 3. We had a good season. I only gave an exhortation on the *Sabbath*. We are now at the Widow Bramblet's, ten miles from the Widow Frank's.

Benjamin Blanton came up with us sick ; his famous horse died of the staggers. He reported two hundred and sixty dollars, and he had received from the connection in four years two hundred and fifty dollars. If we do not benefit the people we have but little of their money. Such is the ecclesiastical revenue of all our order.

Monday, 11. We rode, sick, weary, and hungry, through a most barren country. Jesse Lee stopped to preach at Colonel Wolfe's. I rode on to the Tumbling Shoals Ford upon Reedy River, thence on to William Powell's, upon the banks of Fair Seleuda. I came in as usual, sick indeed, after riding thirty miles—jolting over roots, stumps, holes, and gullies.

Ga.]

The Bishop Turns Nurse.

Tuesday, 26. We came six miles to Cornelius M'Carty's. Here we had to drop anchor again. Brother Blanton could go no further this day, and as there were three of us in company, and one who was well able to do the work, I felt it my duty to do as I would be done by, and have been done by, that is, *to stay and take care of the sick man.*

Wednesday, 27. After Brother Blanton had been very ill, and in bed most of his time, I housed him in my carriage and we proceeded down the Oconee, twelve miles, to Burrel Pope's, after a heavy siege through the woods, from one plantation to another, on Brother Blanton's stiff-jointed horse, that I would

only ride to save souls, or the health of a brother. Our accommodations compensated for all. I admire the soft soil of Georgia, and it is pleasant to see the people plowing on the last of November, as if it were the month of April. The weather was very cold on *Thursday* and *Friday*. *Saturday* I rode seven miles up to Hudson's Ford, at the mouth of Trail Creek, to have a sight of Oconee River. Jesse Lee visited the forks of the river, and formed a circuit for one preacher. The land upon the river is good. I returned to Henry Pope's.

A Gloss Upon Joshua xiv, 8.

Saturday and *Sabbath Day*, *December* 7, 8. We held our quarterly meeting at Mark's meeting-house. I had dreaded this appointment. I had some pain and some pleasure. The state of religion is low here. Hope Hull preached on *Saturday* upon Jer. x, 8. We had some signs, to show that life had not entirely departed, in the love-feast and sacrament. Benjamin Blanton preached, *Sabbath day*, from Isa. xxviii, 8, and I gave a gloss upon Joshua xiv, 8, "Nevertheless, my brethren that went up with me made the heart of the people melt; but I wholly followed the Lord my God." In the introduction peculiar attention was paid to the dealings of God with Israel from the beginning to the end; the influence pious characters had in the case before us, two prevailing against ten; that the well-being of future generations required that a decided tone to the morals, manners, and religious opinions should be given by the first settlers of the country. The weight of the discourse was opened in two divisions: First, What God has done for many

Christians ; Secondly, Their unfaithfulness and complaints, (like the Israelites,) and their bad influence upon the camp of Israel, as at the present day.

An Intestine War.

Tuesday, 17. Rode ten miles to James Allen's, and behold, neither the man nor his wife was at home. The day was far spent, and it was raining, so we stopped.

Wednesday, 18. Before we could get ready to move it began to rain powerfully. We came down the Augusta road, gouged up by wagons in a most dreadful manner, in consequence of which we were five hours in going twelve miles to Thomas Haine's, upon Uchee. I had great *intestine* war, having eat but little ; but here we have all things comfortable. I doubt whether we shall be able to cross Savannah River in five days from this time, the former freshet being increased by latter rains.

S. C.] Conference in Charleston.

Wednesday, January 1, 1800. We began our conference in Charleston, twenty-three members present. I had select meetings with the preachers each evening, who gave an account of the dealings of God with their own souls, and of the circuits they supplied the past year.

Death of Washington—Matchless Man.

Saturday, 4. Slow moved the northern post on the eve of New Year's day, and brought the heart-distressing information of the death of Washington, who departed this life December 14, 1799.

Washington, the calm, intrepid chief, the disinter-

ested friend, first father, and temporal savior of his country under Divine protection and direction. A universal cloud sat upon the faces of the citizens of Charleston; the pulpits clothed in black—the bells muffled—the paraded soldiery—a public oration decreed to be delivered on *Friday, 14th* of this month—a marble statue to be placed in some proper situation—these were the expressions of sorrow, and these the marks of respect paid by his feeling fellow-citizens to the memory of this great man. I am disposed to lose sight of all but Washington—matchless man! At all times he acknowledged the providence of God, and never was he ashamed of his Redeemer. We believe he died not fearing death. In his will he ordered the manumission of his slaves—a true son of liberty in all points.

Asbury Remains in Charleston Awhile.

Monday, 6. The main body of the preachers left the city. I desired Jesse Lee, as my assistant, to take my horse and his own and visit, between this and the *7th* of *February*, Coosawattee, Savannah, and Saint Mary's, (a ride of about four hundred miles,) and to take John Garven to his station. The time has been when this journey would have been my delight, but now I must lounge in Charleston.

At Work With his Pen.

No journal until *Friday, 24.* This week I employed in answering my correspondents in the District of Maine, States of Massachusetts, New York, Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Virginia. *Thursday* night departed this life Edward Rutledge, Governor of

South Carolina. He was one of the tried patriots of 1775 and 1776. The Africans gave him a good character for his humanity. On *Saturday*, 25, his dust is to be committed to dust. "I have said ye are gods ; but ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes."

Leaves Charleston.

Friday, February 7. Jesse Lee and George Dougherty came to town. The former hath been a route of about six hundred miles, and my poor gray hath suffered for it.

Sunday, 9. I gave my last charge at Cumberland-street church from Rom. xii, 14-18.

Monday, 10. I left the city of Charleston ; the day was cold and the roads bad. We came through Broughton Swamp. In the evening my carriage got set fast ; the second draught the hook upon the swingle-tree gave way, and I had to take to the mud to fix the traces. At half past eight o'clock we came to Monk's Corner.

N. C.]

At Camden.

Saturday, 15. We came to Camden. The weather is still cold. We stopped to feed at Navy's. We have ridden, since *Monday* last, one hundred and thirty miles, and my horse would not have been so outdone in two hundred or three hundred miles upon good roads. My soul hath been kept in patience and much prayer ; my body is in great weakness, undergoing disagreeable changes with the weather and my constitutional maladies.

Sunday, 16. At Camden I preached upon 1 Cor.

vi, 19, 20. We administered the Lord's Supper. The day was cold for this climate and but few people attended.

Asbury "Revived" at Sight of the Lawyers.

Wednesday, 26. I had to pass over heavy hills, rocks, and small runs, and through thick clay. We were concluding when in Charleston and after we set out, by the excessive cold, that there was snow not far distant. When we came into North Carolina we found that upon Pedee, and Yadkin and Deep Rivers the snow had fallen fifteen and eighteen inches deep, and continued nearly a month upon the ground, and had swelled the rivers and spoiled the public roads. We lodged at Mr. Bell's, having ridden only fifty miles in two days. We left two appointments on the west side of Uwany; so much for that siege. My horse had hard work, my carriage was very loose in the joints by constant and long play, and myself much tired, but I revived when I saw the lawyers going to the Western courts. I thought, if they toiled and suffered for justice and silver how ought I to labor for truth, and gold that perisheth not, and thousands of people, and hundreds of preachers.

Preaches at the State House at Raleigh.

Thursday, March 6. We came to Raleigh, the seat of government. I preached in the State House. Notwithstanding this day was very cold and snowy we had many people to hear. I baptized a child, and came that evening to Thomas Proctor's.

Friday, 7. We came to the Union church. Many

attended, but the excessive cold penetrated my whole system. We lodged at John Whitefield's.

Saturday, 8. I rode twelve miles through the snow to Edmund Taylor's, senior. This week, from *Monday* to *Saturday* at noon, I have ridden one hundred and ten miles. My mind is kept in great serenity. I have spoken every day but this.

Va.] "Hail, Ancient Virginia, Once More!"

Thursday, 13. We crossed Roanoke at Taylor's Ferry; the river was very full. Hail, ancient Virginia, once more! In little more than four weeks we have ridden nearly two hundred miles in South, and three hundred in North Carolina. We came to Howell Taylor's. N. Snethen preached Father Young's funeral sermon on Isaiah lvii, 1. I could only exhort. We rode home with S. Holmes, fifteen miles, and it was well we did.

"He might as well have asked me for Peru."

Saturday, 15, was a stormy day. One of my friends wanted to borrow or beg £50 of me. He might as well have asked me for Peru. I showed him all the money I had in the world—about twelve dollars, and gave him five. Strange, that neither my friends nor my enemies will believe that I neither have nor seek bags of money. Well, they shall believe by demonstration what I have ever been striving to prove, that I shall die a poor man. At Salem we had a good Sabbath. My subject was Rom. xii, 19–21. Our meeting held nearly three hours.

The Effigy of Washington.

Tuesday, April 15. We rode back to York. I saw the grave where was buried the effigy of General

Washington, at the probable place where Lord Cornwallis delivered up his sword to him. We lodged at Brother John Stubb's, in Gloucester.

Five Hundred Miles in Nineteen Counties.

Saturday, 19. We rode fourteen miles to S. Coles's. I judge I have traveled little short of five hundred miles this route over Virginia, having been in nineteen counties.

Md.]

Eleven Hundred Miles.

Monday, 28. I visited and prepared for the arrangement of the preachers at the annual conference for another year. The great accounts of the work of God in various parts are as cordials to my soul. I am persuaded that upon an exact measurement I have traveled eleven hundred miles from the 10th of February to the 27th of April. My horse is poor, and my carriage is greatly racked.

General Conference at Baltimore—Whatcoat Elected Bishop.

Monday, May 5. We came to Baltimore, and *Tuesday, 6,* we opened our General Conference, which held until *Tuesday, 20.* We had much talk, but little work. Two days were spent in considering about Doctor Coke's return to Europe, part of two days on Richard Whatcoat for a bishop, and one day in raising the salary of the itinerant preachers from sixty-four to eighty dollars per year. We had one hundred and sixteen members present. It was still desired that I should continue in my station. On the 18th of May, 1800, Elder Whatcoat was ordained to the office of a bishop, after having been elected by a majority of four votes more than Jesse Lee. The unc-

tion that attended the word was great—more than one hundred souls at different times and places professed conversion during the sitting of conference. I was weary, but sat very close in conference. My health is better than when we began.

Del.] Conference at Duck Creek—One Hundred Conversions.

Saturday, 31. I preached at the Forest chapel on Habakkuk iii, 2, and rode to Dover that evening.

Sunday, June 1. This was a day to be remembered. We began our love-feast at half past eight. Meeting was continued (except one hour's intermission) until four o'clock, and some people never left the house until nearly midnight. Many souls professed to find the Lord. In the evening I rode to Duck Creek.

Monday, 2. We had sixty-six preachers, all connected with the business of the conference. We sat closely six hours each day, until *Friday, 6*, when about nine o'clock the conference rose. One hour was spent in public each day, but the people would not leave the house night or day; in short, such a time hath been seldom known. The probability is that above one hundred souls were converted to God. The stationing of the preachers was a subject that took my attention. It was with the greatest difficulty that I could unbend my mind from this one hour, by day or night, until I read the plan. I felt myself bound in spirit, and perhaps conscience also, to push on to hold the next *Sabbath* in Philadelphia. Bishop Whatcoat and myself hastened to Wilmington on *Friday*, and on *Saturday* we dined with Mary Withy, now raised above her doubts and rejoicing in God. Through her instrumentality a small society is raised

in Chester, and she hath fed the Lord's prophets twenty-eight or twenty-nine years. We came on to Schuylkill, and thence to Philadelphia.

Pa.]

A Year of Pentecost.

Sunday, 8. I preached morning and evening at Fourth-street. I preached at the African church on 2 Pet. iii, 17, 18, and at St. George's on 1 Pet. i, 5-7. I spoke only once at the conference, on Psa. xxix, 9: "And in his temple doth every one speak of his glory"—truly fulfilled at that time and place. Surely we may say our Pentecost is fully come this year, when we recollect what God hath wrought in Edisto in South, and Guilford in North Carolina; in Franklin, Amelia, and Gloucester, in Virginia; in Baltimore and Cecil, in Maryland; in Dover, Duck Creek, and Milford, in Delaware. My health is restored, to the astonishment of myself and friends. *Monday* and *Tuesday* in Philadelphia.

N. J.]

Two Bishops, and Almost a Third.

Wednesday, 11. We rode to Burlington through excessive heat and dust, in company with Richard Whatcoat and Jesse Lee. The latter wished to preach in the evening and go on in the morning. The Baptist minister had appointed a lecture, and invited Brother Lee to take his place. He accepted, and preached an appropriate sermon on Acts x, 25.

N. Y.] Knotty Subjects Talked Over in Plainness, Harmony,
and Love.

Wednesday, 18. We rode in haste to New York, and on *Thursday*, 19, we opened our conference;

about forty preachers present. We had some knotty subjects to talk over, which we did in great peace, plainness, and love. *Friday* and *Saturday* we were closely confined to business. *Sabbath*, my subject at the old church was Romans xii, 19-21. In my introduction I observed that the text was quoted from Lev. xix, 18, and Prov. xxv, 21, 22, that it might discover to us what veneration the New Testament writers had for the Old, and what was required in a believer under that dispensation. Vengeance is not in our province. We cannot in civil, much less in sacred, causes be our own judges or jurors; if we must feed an enemy, and not only forgive him an injury but do him a favor, surely then we ought to love a friend, a Christian, and more abundantly a minister of Christ. This day we made a general collection for the support of the traveling ministry.

"A Mighty Stir in the Bowery Church."

Tuesday, 24. I have now a little rest. We have had a mighty stir in the Bowery church for two nights past until after midnight; perhaps twenty souls have found the Lord. Bishop Whatcoat preached the ordination sermon in the afternoon at the Bowery church. I have now a little time to unbend my mind from the stations; but still my work is not done. *Tuesday*, *Wednesday*, *Thursday*, and *Friday*, I employed myself in reading, writing, and visiting.

Betsey Sherwood Gone to Glory.

Saturday, 28. We left the city, and rode twenty-six miles through heat, and plagued by the flies, to my old home at the Widow Sherwood's. But dear

Betsy Sherwood, my nurse, is gone, I trust, to glory.

Conn.] Connecticut One Continuity of Landscape.

Tuesday, July 1. In consequence of our circumlocutory motions we have ridden about fifty-five miles since we left the city of New York. We came to Stamford, where Brother Whatcoat gave a sermon on "The faith and choice of Moses." I had only time to speak a few words on Luke xix, 44.

Wednesday, 2. We rode on to Norwalk, stopped an hour at Brother Day's, and thence rode on to Fairfield. It was a cool day. We had an elegant view—the fields in full dress, laden with plenty; a distant view of Long Island and the Sound; the spires of steeples seen from distant hills. This country is one continuity of landscape. My mind is comforted and drawn out in prayer. We had not time to feed nor rest. It was with some exertion we came in time to Joseph Hall's, at Pequonnock. After we got a little refreshment and rest I gave them a short discourse on Luke x, 2. Strength and time failed me, and I could not finish and apply as I wished.

Methodism Getting Foothold in New Haven.

Friday, 4. The weather is damp and very warm. We came on to New Haven, where they were celebrating the Fourth of July. I fear some of them have broken good order, and become *independent* of strict sobriety. Bishop Whatcoat preached in the Sandemanian meeting-house purchased by the Methodists.

Asbury's Estimate of New England Women.

Friday, 11. We came to Preston, and were kindly entertained at Isaac Herrick's. It was the very height of rye harvest, yet many came together. I was greatly led out on the *great salvation*. I was refreshed in soul and body, and rode on in the evening to Nathan Herrick's. The simplicity and frugality of New England is desirable—you see the woman a mother, mistress, maid, and wife, and in all these characters a conversable woman; she seeth to her own house, parlor, kitchen, and dairy; here are no noisy negroes running and lounging. If you wish breakfast at six or seven o'clock there is no setting the table an hour before the provision can be produced.

R. L1

General Lippelt's Chapel.

Saturday, 12. We took our departure for Rhode Island through Plainfield. The weather is still excessively warm; the roads sandy, stony, and rocky, notwithstanding the turnpike. We passed Sterling, the last town in Connecticut. We wandered a mile or two out of our way, and had to pay for it by going a cross path. We made it twenty-six miles to General Lippelt's. The General hath built a neat chapel for the use of the Methodist Episcopal Church near his house.

Sunday, 13. Richard Whatcoat preached in the morning. In the afternoon my subject was Exodus xx, 24: "In all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee." It was a feeling time. Although I was very unwell all the day, I could not stand back from duty.

Mass.]

A New Church in Boston.

Tuesday, 15. We came through Wrentham, Walpole, Dedham, and Roxborough to Boston. It was a damp day, with an easterly wind, unfriendly to my breast. As they were about finishing our church we could not preach in it. The new State House here is, perhaps, one of the most simply elegant in the United States. We made our home at Edward Haynes's, late from England, where we had most agreeable accommodations after our toil.

Heavy Work Accomplished.

Thursday, 17. We have dry weather. We came through much dust to Lynn.

Friday, 18. We sat in conference. There were twenty-one members present; we had great peace and union.

Saturday, 19. The conference rose after voting the session of the next yearly conference to be held at Lynn. And now the toil of six conferences in seven months, and the riding of thirteen hundred miles, is over. I found some difficulty in stationing the married preachers.

Asbury and Whatcoat Preach in the New Tabernacle.

Monday, 21. We came to Boston and preached in the Tabernacle, now nearly finished, on Heb iii, 12-14. We were generously entertained at Edward Haynes's.

Tuesday, 22. Bishop Whatcoat preached in Boston from Psalm cxvi, 7. *Wednesday,* we came thirteen miles to Waltham, where we had a meeting. The subject was Rev. xxi, 6, 7.

Conn.]

The Parsonage in Spencertown.

Wednesday, 30. We rode to Mr. Spencer's, in Hartford. My mind is in peace, but I have uncomfortable feelings in my body. Here I met Brothers Bostwick and Borrough. We have a house built in Spencertown for the Lord, and now they are building one for the Lord's servants—for the married preachers to live in who are sent to the circuit.

Madam Livingston.

Friday, August 1. Freeborn Garrettson came up with us; he attended the funeral of the venerable Mother Livingston, who was suddenly and safely called home, aged seventy-eight, removed by a paralytic stroke, and probably it was apoplectic also. Perhaps it was about thirty-four years ago that this godly woman was awakened under the first sermon the Rev. Dr. Sadly preached in the Reformed Low Dutch Church in New York, as she told me; nor she alone, but six or eight other respectable women. Madam Livingston was one that gave invitation to the Methodist preachers to come to Rhinebeck, and received them into her house; and would have given them more countenance had she been under no other influence than that of the Spirit of God and her own feelings.. I visited her one year before her death, and spent a night at her mansion; she was sensible, conversable, and hospitable.

Goshen, Cornwall, Sharon.

Monday, 4. We came on and stopped at Goshen, at Captain Wright's. The people flocked together at a short warning, and I gave a discourse on Isa. xxxv, 3-6; after which we dined, and came on across the

hills and over dreadful rocky roads to Cornwall, where Brother Whatcoat preached in the meeting-house on "We know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness."

Tuesday, 5. We had another tolerable siege over the Housatonic River and hills to Sharon. Here Brother Whatcoat preached on "The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to reserve the unjust to the day of judgment to be punished." I gave an exhortation, and then we came rapidly, fifteen miles, to C. Levie's, in the Nine Partners.

N. Y.]

Freeborn Garrettson's Residence.

Wednesday, 6. We came to Row's. Bishop Whatcoat preached on 1 John iv, 17. I gave an exhortation. We came on to Freeborn Garrettson's new design, upon the Rhinebeck Flats. He hath a beautiful land and water prospect, and a good, simply elegant, useful house for God, his people, and the family. We have ridden between eighty and ninety miles since last *Sabbath*; not less than five hundred and fifty since we departed from New York, and one third of the roads were rocky and very uneven. I read a book of about five hundred pages, the author of which is a curious writer.

Friday and Saturday, 8, 9. We regaled ourselves and horses upon the pleasant banks of the Hudson, where the passing and repassing of boats and small craft, perhaps fifty in a day, is a pleasant sight.

Two Bishops Dine on a Water-melon!

Tuesday, 12. We came through Poughkeepsie. No place for Methodism. We stopped at Elijah Mor-

gan's; Brother Thacher was preaching when we came in. We have ridden twenty-five miles this day, and dined in the road upon a water-melon that Mrs. Tillotson was kind enough to give us as we came by her house. I was so unwell that I had but little appetite for any thing else.

The Lieutenant-Governor and Lady.

Wednesday, 18. We came on twenty-five miles to Cortlandt-town, where we saw the aged, venerable pair, the lieutenant-governor and his lady; he is in his eightieth and she in her seventy-eighth year. I had a very rocky ride over the mountains of Peekskill. I have great and sore temptations at times, but God is with me. I trust through grace to overcome them all. We stopped at Warren's; fed, talked, prayed, and refreshed ourselves a little.

Thursday, 14. This day is very warm. I preached at Peekskill-town upon the great salvation. Brother Whatcoat preached at Croton. We lodged at General Van Cortlandt's.

A Slight Accident.

Saturday, 16. We pushed on with great courage toward New York, but when within six miles of the city my horse blundered twice, and then came down with great force and broke the shaft. I got out, and my horse recovered from his fall. A smith's shop being at hand the shaft was mended in an hour, and we came to New York and found our service was wanting in the city, there being here only two preachers, and one of them disabled.

N. J.] Through New Jersey Again.

Tuesday, 19. We came off at five o'clock, and reached New Brunswick by twelve o'clock, where we dined and rested, and then continued on to Joseph Hutchinson's, at Milford, forty-six miles. We had a pleasant and cool ride for the season.

Wednesday, 20. We came on to Hulet Hancock's ; and on *Thursday* reached Philadelphia. I preached at St. George's, and Bishop Whatcoat at the African Church.

Pa.] Dutchmen Make Lively Methodists.

Friday, 22. We rode to the Valley ; it was warm enough. Bishop Whatcoat preached at Daniel Meredith's.

Saturday, 23. We had a *proper* siege up to Sawderstown and got in by four o'clock. I gave a discourse on Heb. x, 38, 39.

Sabbath Day, 24. Bishop Whatcoat preached at Martin Boehm's church on Psalm lxxii, 16-20. We have now ridden, from *Monday*, one hundred and seventy miles. We lodged at Abraham Keaggay's. Our Dutch Methodists are as kind and more lively than many of the American ones.

Md.] Mr. and Mrs. Gough Not at Home.

Wednesday, 27. I preached at the Forks meeting-house (fifteen miles on a carriage road) warm as it was. Brother Whatcoat gave us a sermon on Psalm cxvi, 7 : "Return unto thy rest, O my soul." I exhorted very little. The heat continued. That evening we came with equal difficulties to *Perra Hall* ; but the greatest trouble of all was that the elders of

the house were not at home ; the walls, the rooms no longer vocal ; all to me appeared hung in sack-cloth. I see not the pleasant countenances, nor hear the cheerful voices, of Mr. and Mrs. Gough ! She is in ill-health, and writes : “ I have left home, perhaps never to return.” This intelligence made me melancholy. Mrs. Gough hath been my faithful daughter ; she never offended me at any time.

Revival on the Western Shore of Maryland.

Saturday, 30. We had a most severe ride, nearly twenty miles, to Daniel Elliott’s. At St. James’s chapel God hath begun to pour out his Spirit, and almost generally through Montgomery and Frederick circuits.

Wilson Lee is all upon the wing in the work : glory ! glory ! glory ! I will not speak of numbers or particular cases without more accurate information, which in my haste I cannot now obtain ; but without doubt some hundreds in three months have been under awakenings and conversions upon the Western Shore, District of Maryland.

Va.]

Good News from Virginia.

Saturday, September 13. We rode to New London Academy, sixteen miles, now under the direction of Samuel K. Jennings, a local preacher of ours ; the institution belongeth to the Presbyterians and Episcopalians. R. Whatcoat preached. I was deprived of my rest the last evening, and very unwell, yet I gave a short discourse in exhortation. We have been going at such an unreasonable rate that I have not had time to put pen to paper for a week together.

Good news from the South District of Virginia ; Brother Jackson writes : " Two hundred souls have been converted this last quarter ; there is a revival in all the circuits but two, and great union among the preachers and people." I am kept in patience, faith, and love.

"Only Now and Then Sending Up a Message to Heaven."

Friday, 19. We began at six o'clock to bend for Holston. It was computed to be forty miles distant. We came in about the going down of the sun at Father Carlock's, a German. For two days past we found we could not stop to dine ; we rested only to feed our horses. After we cleared the mountains we came upon the perpetual hills. I judge we may charge for one hundred and thirty miles from Edward Mitchell's, in Bottetourt, to Russel's old place upon Holston. We took *Saturday* to refit and write. Brother Whatcoat attended the meeting. My mind hath been kept in peace. I had enough to do to drive. I could think but little—only now and then sending up a message to heaven.

Ky.] Bethel and Cokesbury not Well Located.

Friday, October 3. We came on to our Brother Howard's. We crossed Kentucky River at the mouth of Hickman ; it was so low that we forded it with ease. We have traveled in five days one hundred and forty-five miles. I have slept uncomfortably this week.

Saturday, 4. I came to Bethel. Bishop Whatcoat and William M'Kendree preached. I was so dejected I could do little but weep. *Sabbath day* it rained

and I kept at home. Here is Bethel: Cokesbury in miniature, eighty by thirty feet, three stories with a high roof and finished below. Now we want a fund and an income of three hundred per year to carry it on, without which it will be useless. But it is too distant from public places. Its being surrounded by the Kentucky River in part we now find to be no benefit. Thus all our excellences are turned into defects. Perhaps Brother Poythress and myself were as much overseen with this place as Dr. Coke was with the seat of Cokesbury. But all is right that works right, and all is wrong that works wrong, and we must be blamed by men of slender sense for consequences impossible to foresee—for other people's misconduct. *Sabbath day, Monday, and Tuesday*, we were shut up in Bethel with the traveling and local ministry and the trustees that could be called together. We ordained fourteen or fifteen local and traveling deacons. It was thought expedient to carry the first design of education into execution, and that we should employ a man of sterling qualifications, to be chosen by and under the direction of a select number of trustees and others, who should obligate themselves to see him paid, and take the profits, if any, arising from the establishment. Dr. Jennings was thought of, talked of, and written to. I visited John Lewis, who lately had his leg broken; I left him with good resolutions to take care of his soul.

A Running Blister and a Long Ride.

Friday, 10. We rode to Pleasant Run to John Springer's. It was a very warm day for the season. I had a running blister at my side, yet I rode and

walked thirty-two miles. We refreshed ourselves at Crawford's tavern upon the way. We have visited Knox, Madison, Mercer, and Washington counties in this State. It was strongly insisted upon by preachers and people that I should say something before I left Bethel—able or unable, willing or unwilling—accordingly, on *Tuesday*, in the academical hall, I gave a long temperate talk upon Hebrews x, 38, 39.

Good Quarters, Fire, and Food.

Wednesday, 15. We crossed Green River, the main branch of which riseth near the Crabb Orchard. We crossed at the mouth of Little Barren River. We then made a bold push for the Great Barren. Dining at Mr. Morrison's, I could not eat wallet-provision, but happily for me I was provided with a little fresh mutton at the house, made warm in a small space. A little after dark we came to Mr. Hagin's, upon Big Barren River. A good house, an excellent fire to dry our clothing, good meat and milk for supper, and the cleanest beds; all this we had. I have paid for this route.

Tenn.]

A Trio of Good and Great Men.

Sunday, 19. I rode to Nashville, long heard of but never seen by me until now. Some thought the congregation would be small, but I believed it would be large. Not less than one thousand people were in and out of the stone church, which if floored, ceiled, and glazed would be a grand house. We had three hours' public exercises: Mr. M'Kendree upon "The wages of sin is death;" myself on Rom. x, 14, 15; Brother Whatcoat on "When Christ, who is our life,

shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory." We returned the same evening, after dining with Mr. M'Kain. I had a feeling sight of my dear old friend Greenhill and his wife. Who would have thought we should ever meet in this distant land? I had not time, as formerly, to go to their house to eat and sleep. We had a night meeting at Mr. Dickinson's.

Asbury Reaches his Thirtieth Year of Labor in America.

Monday, 20. We came by Manslick to Drake's Creek meeting-house at the close of a sacramental solemnity that had been held four days by Craghead, Hodge, Rankin, M'Gee, and Mr. Adair, Presbyterian officiating ministers; we came in, and Brother M'Kendree preached upon Jer. iv, 14; after him Brother Whatcoat upon "We know that we are of God." I also spoke; my subject was *the work of God*." Last Sabbath was my birthday. This will make the thirtieth year of my labors in America. It is supposed there are one thousand souls present, and double that number heard the word of life on *Sunday*.

Christian Union and Primitive Simplicity.

Tuesday, 21. Yesterday, and especially during the night, were witnessed scenes of deep interest. In the intervals between preaching the people refreshed themselves and horses, and returned upon the ground. The *stand* was in the open air, embosomed in a wood of lofty beech trees. The ministers of God, Methodists and Presbyterians, united their labors and mingled with the child-like simplicity of primitive times. Large fires blazing here and there dis-

pelled the darkness, and the shouts of the redeemed captives and the cries of precious souls struggling into life broke the silence of midnight. The weather was delightful: as if heaven smiled while mercy flowed in abundant streams of salvation to perishing sinners. We suppose there were at least thirty souls converted at this meeting. I rejoice that God is visiting the sons of the Puritans, who are candid enough to acknowledge their obligations to the Methodists.

The Wilderness as the Garden of God to Asbury.

Thursday, 30. We rode slowly on to Starr's, twenty-two miles, and had a heavy shower of rain on our way. From *Monday* morning to *Thursday* afternoon we have made one hundred and thirty miles. We have experienced no stoppage by water-courses, and have found the roads of the wilderness, their unevenness excepted, pretty good. And here let me record the gracious dealings of God to my soul in this journey. I have had uncommon peace of mind and spiritual consolations every day, notwithstanding the long rides I have endured and the frequent privations of good water and proper food to which I have been subjected. To me the wilderness and the solitary places were made as the garden of God, and as the presence-chambers of the King of kings and Lord of lords.

Asbury's First Visit to Knoxville.

Saturday, November 1. Came twenty miles to Knoxville, of which I had often heard and which mine eyes now saw. We visited my old friend Greer.

Sabbath Day, 2. I preached in the State House on Isa. lv, 6, 7. I was very unwell, but was enabled to bear the heavy cross of public speaking. We had about seven hundred people in and about the house. We came off in haste, intending to make twenty miles that evening; but Francis Alexander Ramsay pursued us to the ferry, franked us over, and took us to his excellent mansion—a stone house. It may not be amiss to mention that our host has built his house, and also takes in his harvest, without the aid of whisky. We were kindly and comfortably entertained.

“An Ugly Accident.”

Thursday, 6. Crossed Nolachucky at Querton's ferry and came to Major Cragg's, eighteen miles. I next day pursued my journey and arrived at the Warm Springs, not, however, without an ugly accident. After we had crossed the Small and Great Paint mountain, and had passed about thirty yards beyond the Paint Rock, my roan horse, led by Mr. O'Haven, reeled and fell over, taking the chaise over with him. I was called back, when I beheld the poor beast, and the carriage *bottom up*, lodged and wedged against a sapling, which alone prevented them both being precipitated into the river. After a pretty heavy lift all was righted again, and we were pleased to find there was little damage done. Our feelings were excited more for others than ourselves. Not far off we saw clothing spread out, part of the loading of household furniture of a wagon which had over-set and was thrown into the stream, and bed-clothes, bedding, etc., were so wet that the poor people found it necessary to dry them on the spot. We passed

the side fords of French Broad and came to Mr. Nelson's. Our mountain march of twelve miles calmed us down for this day. My company was not agreeable here—there were too many subjects of the two great potentates of this western world—whisky and brandy. My mind was greatly distressed.

N. C.] Only Twenty Appointments in a Thousand Miles.

Friday, 14. We had no small labor in getting down Seleuda mountain. Arriving at Father Douthat's, on the south branch of Seleuda, I had leisure to reflect upon our western visitation. On the 16th of September we set out from Botetourt, in Virginia, and on the 14th of November we were in North Carolina, at the foot of the grand mountain division of South Carolina. In this time I presume we have traveled one thousand miles; have had about twenty appointments, not many of which were large; have lodged about twenty nights under strange roofs, or at houses of entertainment, and have expended about fifty dollars.

Ga.] Augusta—Prospects of Methodism.

Saturday, 29. Came twelve miles through deep sands to Augusta. We have traveled nearly one hundred miles since last Sabbath day. My soul hath been kept in great peace, but I feel the effects of riding a stiff, aged, falling horse with a sore back, and my saddle is old and worn.

We have a foundation and a frame prepared for erecting, in a day or two, a house for public worship, two stories high, sixty by forty feet; for this we are indebted to the favor of Heaven and the agency of Stith Mead; and what is better, here is a small society.

Augusta is decidedly one of the most level and beautiful spots for a town I have yet seen. It is of ample extent in its plan, well begun, and when their intentions shall be fulfilled of building a court-house, a college, episcopal churches for Methodists and others, it will do great credit to its founders and inhabitants.

S. C.] General Conference Address on Slavery.

Friday, December 19. It rained. After it had holden up, we rode thirty miles to Benjamin Hernon's, upon the waters of Enoree.

Saturday and Sunday, 20, 21. Held quarterly meeting. Brother Whatcoat spoke from 1 Thess. iii, 8. A very profitable improvement. On *Sabbath day* my choice was Acts iii, 22, 23. We continued about six hours at Bethel. I saw one of the members of the General Assembly of South Carolina, who informed me that our address from the General Conference had been read and reprobated, and furthermore, that it had been the occasion of producing a law which prohibited a minister's attempting to instruct any number of blacks with the doors shut, and authorizing a peace-officer to break open the door in such cases and disperse or whip the offenders. But more of this law when I see it.

Between Two Fires—"Poor Bishop."

Tuesday, 30. Came to Camden. I have received several letters from the North: they bring small consolation—"While he was yet speaking there came also another"—murmurs—complaints of partiality; and with this I may console myself in the midst of unremitted and hard traveling and labor. I was pre-

sented with a petition from about eighty male members of the society in *the city of brotherly love*, entreating me to do what I had no intention of doing ; that was, to remove Brother Everett from the city. How, indeed, was this to be done ? He and they had acquitted M. Manly of all the charges brought against him, and restored him to membership ; the presiding elder had also restored to office three or four elders who had been put out for murmurings and mischiefs, and had ejected the elder stationed in the city, and had filled his place by another ; and they had great congregations, great shoutings, and God was with them, and nearly one hundred had joined society. To all this what can we do but say, " Well done, good and faithful servant " and servants ! Poor bishop ! No money for my expenses. I am afflicted—my life threatened on the one hand, my brethren discontented on the other. True, I received from them a petition dipped in oil and honey, and if I approve all will be well ; but if not, drawn swords may be feared.

Conference at Camden.

Thursday, January 1, 1801. We began our conference with the new year. Sat from nine to twelve o'clock in the forenoon, and two hours in the afternoon ; the band-meeting was held between the hours of seven and eight. A clerk for the minutes was appointed, and another to keep the journal. We admitted four probationers ; re-admitted two deacons to their standing in the traveling connection who had left it to locate ; located three, and re-stationed Gains, Wiley, and West, who had all located themselves in the course of the last year. We had great

union. Our sitting continued five days, and we rested one *Sabbath*. We were richly accommodated at Smith's and Carpenter's, and two other houses. We only failed forty-eight dollars in paying all the preachers their demands.

Dining on the Sand Hills upon Bread and Bacon.

Wednesday, 14. We left Hanging Rock and came to Little Lynch and Flat Creeks, crossing the great branch at M'Meenas's Ford. This last is called a creek; but it rises near the Waxaws, and flows about one hundred and fifty miles, mingling its waters with the Great Pedee below Port's Ferry. We had an excessively warm day for the season. The horses and their riders were both fatigued much in riding forty miles in ten hours. We dined, at the root of a pine, upon a morsel of bread and bacon, and then remounted and pushed on to Anson in North Carolina. We sheltered ourselves for the night at Thomas Shaw's, upon Little Thompson's Creek.

"Murmurs of Partiality"—Asbury's Defense.

Saturday, 24. We have ridden since the commencement of the year one hundred and eighty miles in the Carolinas.

Monday, 26. I find reasons enough in my own mind to justify myself against the low murmurs of *partiality* in which some have indulged. We are impartial. We know not Maryland or Delaware, *after the flesh*, more than Kentucky, Cumberland, Georgia, or the Carolinas. It is our duty to save the health of preachers where we can; to make particular appointments for some important charges; and

it is our duty to embrace all parts of the continent and Union, after the example of primitive times and the first and faithful preachers in America.

N. Snethen's Answer to James O'Kelly.

Thursday, February 5. I received the compilation of N. Snethen, intended as an answer to James O'Kelly. It is well done, except in a few cases. There was no sharpness at all upon my side with Doctor Coke at Charleston respecting the proposed general conference, which was afterward held, (in 1792.) I was fully convinced that nothing *else* would finish the unhappy business with O'Kelly; and that did finish it.

"No More of Solomon than the Name."

Friday, 13. At Ebenezer. The house was unfinished, and the day windy and uncomfortable. Brother Whatcoat and myself held the people nearly three hours. My text was Gal. vi, 14-16.

A Solomon Reeves let me know that he had seen the *Address* signed by me, and was quite confident there were no arguments to prove that slavery was repugnant to the spirit of the Gospel. What absurdities will not men defend! If the Gospel will tolerate slavery, what will it not authorize? I am strangely mistaken if this said Mr. Reeves has more grace than is necessary, or more of *Solomon* than the name. We lodged for the night at William Gore's.

N. C.] Wilmington—The Tabernacle Crowded.

Wednesday, 25. We dined with General Smith—there was abundance and hospitality. We came into

town. Jeremiah Norman gave us a sermon. Our tabernacle is crowded again. The minds of the people are strangely changed, and the indignation excited against us is overpast. The people see and confess that the slaves are made better by religion, and wonder to hear the poor Africans pray and exhort.

Thursday, 26. I preached for the first time in our house, and for the second in Wilmington. My text was found in Acts xxvi, 17, 18. At eleven o'clock we were crowded, and I felt uncommon enlargement. One of the *respectables* came in the name of some of the *reputables* to request that I would preach in the brick church. I was weak—had spoken long and loud, and was more than ordinarily unwell—but Brother Whatcoat was unwell and not able to go out. We had a large congregation; I lectured upon Rom. x, 1-4. In the evening, numbers, both white and black, came again to the tabernacle. After John Norman had preached, I read and commented upon two letters respecting the work of God in Delaware and Cumberland, in the West.

"An American-made Methodist."

Monday, March 9. We rode thirty-seven miles to Washington. In our way we crossed the Neuse, swiftly and safely, at West's Ferry. At twenty-one miles we stopped to feed—high price and poor fare. We have ridden six hundred and fifty miles toward the fourth thousand since the Carolina Conference. Here Ralph Potts, a Northumbrian, (Old England,) but American-made-Methodist, received us as the angels of God.

A "Flight Through Several Counties."

Monday, 23. We made twenty-two miles to Samuel Simmons's. Our flight has carried us through Pasquotank, Camden, and Currituck counties, in North Carolina, which we shall leave to-day.

Ostervald's Christian Theology.

April 5. I recollect having read some years since Ostervald's Christian Theology. Having a wish to transcribe a few sentiments in the work, I met with it, and extracted from chap. 2, page 317, what follows: "Yet it cannot be denied that in the primitive Church there was always a president who presided over others who were in a state of equality with himself. This is clearly proved from the catalogues of bishops to be found in Eusebius and others. In them we may see the names of the bishops belonging to the principal Churches, many of whom were ordained while the apostles (but especially John) were still living." So far Ostervald, who, I presume, was a Presbyterian. In Cave's Lives of the Fathers, and in the writings of the ancients, it will appear that the Churches of Alexandria and elsewhere had large congregations, many elders; that the apostles might appoint and ordain bishops. Mr. Ostervald, who, it appears, is a candid and well-informed man, has gone as far as might be expected for a Presbyterian. For myself, I see but a hair's breadth difference between the sentiments of the respectable and learned author of Christian Theology and the practice of the Methodist Episcopal Church. There is not—nor indeed, in my mind, can there be—a perfect equality between a constant president and those over whom he always presides.

Asbury Preaches the Funeral Sermon of Mr. Jarratt.

Sabbath, 19. There had been put forth a printed appointment for me to preach the funeral sermon of the late Rev. Devereux Jarratt, who had lately returned to his rest.

Mr. Devereux Jarratt was settled in Bath Parish, Dinwiddie county, Virginia, in the year 1763, and continued until February, 1801. He was a faithful and successful preacher. He had witnessed four or five periodical revivals of religion in his parish. When he began his labors there was no other, that he knew of, evangelical minister in all the province! He traveled into several counties, and there were very few parish churches within fifty miles of his own in which he had not preached; to which labors of love and zeal were added preaching the word of life on solitary plantations and in meeting-houses. He was the first who received our despised preachers; when strangers and unfriended, he took them to his house and had societies formed in his parish. Some of his people became traveling preachers among us. I have already observed that the ministry of Mr. Jarratt was successful. I verily believe that hundreds were awakened by his labors.

Md.] Conference at Pipe Creek.

Thursday, 30. We arrived to dine at Alexander Warfield's, on Sam's Creek, and pushed on to Henry Willis's, on Pipe Creek, where it had been our intention to open conference.

We had about forty members present, and sat on *Friday*, *Saturday*, and *Monday*. On *Tuesday* morning we rose. We had great peace, and good news from

several circuits—revivals of religion. I was greatly supported in mind and body. On *Sabbath day* I preached from Matt. xxiii, 18–20. We had six elders present; to wit, William Watters, John Phillips, Solomon Harris, Joseph Stone, John Cullison, and Alexander M'Caine. There was preaching every day and every night. Our own people and our friends in the settlement were equally kind, and we had rich entertainment. The settlement of Pipe Creek is the richest in the State. Here Mr. Strawbridge formed the first society in Maryland—and *America*.

“How Strange!—How Merciful!”

Wednesday, May 13. I preached once more at Josias W. Dallam's. I could speak with more faith than usual upon Acts ii, 37, for behold, Henry Watters's son, many years insensible to the things of God, was converted! When we parted with Godfrey he looked after us with wishful, willing eyes and heart. That the dear soul should sit nearly thirty years under the Gospel unconverted and almost unconcerned—how strange! and should be at last visited and converted—how merciful!

“Pressing Out Life with Labor.”

Tuesday, 19. We came off, cool and calm, to Easton Brother Whatcoat preached. I gave an exhortation. We take a county and a circuit in a day. I can only say I am kept from murmuring and sinning; but ah, it is like pressing out life with labor! Such extraordinary exertions call for great Divine support for soul and body. O how sweet will be eternal rest to laboring souls!

Large Congregation in Dover.

Monday, 25. Arrived in Dover we found the people collected at the meeting-house so numerous that they could not be well accommodated. We therefore adjourned to the State House, where I spoke to them from Haggai ii, 5-9. Brother Whatcoat preached at the chapel, and I gave an exhortation ; and so ended the great meeting in Dover with us.

Pa.] Philadelphia Conference—Asbury “in Patience and in Pain.”

Saturday, 30. Most excessive heat, through which we rode to conference in Philadelphia.

Sabbath, 31. I preached in Fourth-street on John iii, 19. I was very lame. On *Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday* and *Friday*, I attended the session of conference, but on *Saturday* I remained in my lodgings and ministered to my sore foot. Our conference was a gracious one. It appeared as if the preachers were unwilling to elevate their voices lest there should be an appearance of heat or anger ; yet with the greatest plainness would they differ from each other, calmly and in love.

Sabbath, June 7. I took up my cross, and stayed quietly in the house with a blister to my foot. We shall see if another operation will be necessary. Minutes and letters took up my attention. We elected and ordained eight deacons, and the same number of elders ; on account of my lameness it was done at my lodgings. We were well satisfied in the stationing of the preachers ; we received one from Canada, and sent three thither.

Wednesday, 10. Doctor Physick applied a caustic to my foot.

I wrote to Dr. Coke. My mind is greatly supported under my own troubles and the afflictions of the Church ; nevertheless, the Lord appears glorious upon our continent, and my soul exults in Zion's prosperity. From the 7th to the 16th no regular journal. Our conference meets this day in New York, and here am I in Philadelphia, and here must I remain in patience and in pain.

Del.]

Goes Southward Again.

Friday, July 31. After a serious confinement in Philadelphia of two months of trouble and affliction I took my departure and rode to the Wheatsheaf, where we breakfasted, and thence proceeded to Wilmington, Delaware. I stopped with Allen M'Lean. I found Mr. Worrel very ill, and addressed him seriously on the concerns of his soul, commending him to God in prayer. After supper we went to John Miller's, in Newport.

August 1. I called upon Mr. M'Intyre. We talked, we prayed, and rejoiced in the work of God. I could not pass my old friend, Isaac Hearsey, without calling. We could with gratitude review the past, and dwell upon the present dealings of the Lord with us as a people, and say, What hath God wrought !

Md.]

Asbury Sick at Perry Hall.

Monday, 3. I came on to Perry Hall. Here were things to arrest my attention—out of sixty or seventy servants, many shouting and praising God. My dear Mr. Gough was somewhat unwell, Mrs. Carroll

seriously ill, and her mother absent in attendance on old Mrs. Carroll at the Mount.

I continued at Perry Hall from *August 3 to Saturday, 15*. An intermittent fever came upon me every morning, and it was with difficulty I could attend to the performance of family and closet duties. Gough Hollady professed to find the Lord, and one or two more of the family appear to be earnestly seeking him. Our family, when in the chapel, makes a respectable congregation.

Out-door Preaching.

Sunday, 16. I spent this day in Baltimore. My indisposition of body was amply compensated by the consolation I felt while holding forth upon Matt. v, 8 : "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God."

I had a desire to preach in the market-house upon Howard's Hill. I spoke to hundreds, perhaps thousands, upon Luke xiv, 21 : "Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind." I thought it my duty, and I felt it a delight, to sanction what the preachers do in preaching abroad ; I wished to do it in Philadelphia, and had appointed it, but some of the brethren made strong objections and it was abandoned.

Episcopal Plan.

Friday, 28. At Frederickton I spoke on Matt. xi, 5, 6. Here I met with Bishop Whatcoat and Sylvester Hutchinson, and we formed a plan for our future journeys and labors. They to visit Maryland by the

way of Baltimore and Annapolis, and thence on to Richmond and the towns on the route to Camden in South Carolina, and southward to Georgia ; I, in company with Nicholas Snethen, to go out to the Western Conference in Nolachucky, then afterward cross over to the South.

Va.]

Asbury and the Local Preachers.

Sunday, September 20. We came over the mountain to Salisbury, and preached at the Widow Russell's. N. Snethen was greatly enlarged upon Luke xi, 3, 4. I was so feeble I had but little to say upon "Behold, now is the day of salvation." I was pleased to see our local brethren come forty and fifty miles to visit me. We met with joy, and parted in tears !

"Our Host Became Our Guide."

Saturday, 26. We wrought down Mockison to the Gap, where the accumulated waters of the stream have, at some time, apparently burst their way through Clinch Mountain. After recrossing the north branch of Holston we stopped at John Wadley's and refreshed man and beast. Our host became our guide, and tripped over the hills with us in the rain, his mare barefoot, and himself without a saddle to ride on or a great-coat to shield him from the weather. At length we reached Charles Baker's, upon Main Holston, in safety.

Tenn.]

"Why should It Not Always be Thus?"

Wednesday, 30. I spoke on Heb. ii, 1, and hasted on to Ebenezer to attend the conference. Our brethren

ren in Kentucky did not attend ; they pleaded the greatness of the work of God. Twelve of us sat in conference three days, and we had not an unpleasant countenance, nor did we hear an angry word. And why should it not always be thus ? Are we not the ministers of the meek and lowly, the humble and holy, Jesus ?

N. Snethen gave us two sermons. We ordained on *Friday*, *Saturday*, and *Sabbath day*, and upon each day I improved a little on the duties of ministers. On the *Lord's day* we assembled in the woods, and made a large congregation. My subject was Isa. lxii, 1. On *Friday* and *Saturday evenings*, and on *Sabbath morning* there was the noise of praise and shouting in the meeting-house. It is thought there are twenty-five souls who have found the Lord ; they are chiefly the children of Methodists—the children of faith and of many prayers.

“Lame Feet and Old Feeble Joints.”

Tuesday, October 13. We came in haste up to Elder Davidson's, refreshed man and beast, commended the family to God, and then struck into the mountain. We came down Seleuda River near Seleuda Mountain. It tried my lame feet and old, feeble joints.

S. C. I. “Cotton Sells High—More Gold than Grace.”

Saturday, 24. We had to attend a meeting appointed at Broad River circuit. N. Snethen spoke from 2 Tim. ii, 8. I only exhorted, and read a letter giving an account of the work of God in Kentucky.

We have been working this week from Seleuda to Reedy River. I cannot record great things upon

religion in this quarter, *but cotton sells high*. I fear there is more gold than grace—more of silver than of “that wisdom that cometh from above.”

A Plan for Future Labors and Travels.

Friday, 30. We came in haste to Daniel Baugh's. Here we met Bishop Whatcoat and Sylvester Hutchinson, who had come along rapidly. At the meeting-house, where we spent about three hours, we were joined by Stith Mead, John Garven, and Lewis Mycrel. Now we formed a plan for future labors and travel. It was concluded that Bishop Whatcoat should go from the center, east to Savannah and St. Mary's, while I go west, in Georgia.

Ga.]

Methodism Flourishing in Augusta.

Saturday, 31. We came to Augusta. On the *Sabbath day* N. Snethen preached, after which I gave a few thoughts upon “My house shall be called a house of prayer for all people.” N. Snethen spoke again in the afternoon on “The choice of Moses.” Bishop Whatcoat held forth at night. We have a very large and most elegant house in this place, for which we are indebted chiefly to the generosity of the inhabitants. Our congregations are most respectable and very attentive, but I heard of no conversions. The time for this is not yet come.

Asbury an Englishman—Can't Help It.

Saturday, November 8. I suppose we have now traveled twelve hundred miles since leaving Philadelphia. I often have it whispered in my ear what certain folks are pleased to say of my being an English-

man. How can I help that? I am not ashamed of it. But I am seeking souls and Zion's glory.

Another Episcopal Plan.

Saturday, 14. We came to Park's meeting-house. Brother Blanton spoke on John xii, 35; my subject was Heb. vi, 11, 12. We have traveled about one hundred miles since our entrance into Georgia, passing through parts of Richmond, Columbia, Lincoln, Elbert, and Franklin counties. The evenings and mornings have been cold; the people, however, are extremely kind. I have experienced great sensible enjoyment of God—our cabins are courts when Jesus is there. In my ministry I have been greatly assisted; but unless I am more temperate in my talk, in tone and time, I shall not be able to manage more than every other day.

In a serious conference with Bishop Whatcoat, N. Snethen, Lyle, Hutchinson, and myself, it plainly appeared that the best way in future would be to meet at the Virginia Conference, and thence continue together to the New York Conference, after which one might go to the East and the other to the Western Conference. The Bishop who went east would then visit the Eastern States and lake country, and thence onward to Pittsburg and the Virginia districts; the Bishop who went west will visit over the Blue Ridge, Holston, Kentucky, Tennessee, Georgia, South and North Carolina, to the conferences in the center of the work, where both will meet again. In this we all agreed. It was also determined that each Bishop should always have an elder as a traveling companion.

"Why Should a Living Man Complain?"

Thursday, 19. We found at Tidwell's a very open house in the woods. I spoke from Acts iii, 26. At Freeman's, next day, we had another open house, lately put up, where Brother Blanton held forth upon "The whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint." My subject was Isaiah xxxv, 3-6. We started, hungry and cold, crossing at Malone's mill a branch of Oconee, and came to Henry Pope's in Oglethorpe. We have ridden about eighty miles this week of short and cold days. Why should a living man complain? but to be three months together upon the frontiers, where, generally, you have but one room and fire-place, and half a dozen folks about you, strangers perhaps, and their family certainly, (and they are not usually small in these plentiful new countries,) making a crowd—and this is not all; for here you *may* meditate if you can, and here you *must* preach, read, write, pray, sing, talk, eat, drink, and sleep—or fly into the woods. Well! I have pains in my body, particularly my hip, which are very afflictive when I ride; but I cheer myself as well as I may with songs in the night. In this country are seen evident traces of a great population which has some time existed before the present discoverers and settlers of America.

S. C.] Strong Faith for the Prosperity of Zion.

Thursday, December 17. At Jacob Barr's, upon Edisto, I spoke from 2 Tim. iv, 7, 8. Few people. In Georgia "I groaned, being burdened;" but my congregations were considerably larger, my rides shorter,

and the people abundantly more feeling and fervent than they are here. I have ridden eighty sand-hill miles. The weather is very changeable ; I feel my old age and infirmities ; my eyes and feet are feeble ; but, glory to God ! I have strong faith for myself and for the prosperity of Zion.

An Observation of John Wesley.

Saturday, 26. We came to Westone's meeting-house to hold our quarterly meeting ; many people attended at noon and at night. I have made a *proper* visit through Edisto, which I had not before done. I find the truth of an observation made by dear John Wesley to Doctor Coke upon his going to Nova Scotia ; the Doctor said he did not think highly of the place. "That is because you have never been there," replied Wesley ; "when you are there you will think and feel for the people."

Conference in Camden.

Friday, January 1, 1802. We opened conference. I gave a discourse upon Isa. lxvi, 1-3. We conducted our business in great peace, and upon the *Sabbath day* were ready for the ordination of seven elders and seven deacons. The members of our conference with a few others made up our congregations, to whom we preached at noon and at night each day. N. Snethen spoke on "Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased," and also on the *hidden leaven*. Our finances were low. The married and single preachers were paid up, but there was no surplus for the children. On *Tuesday, 5th*, we concluded our labors in the greatest harmony. It

was thought best to divide South Carolina into two districts, one called Seleuda, the other Camden. They were placed under the president eldership of two natives of the State, James Jenkins and George Dougherty.

Pains and Pleasures in a Small Compass.

Saturday, 9. We reached Georgetown. I shall put our pleasures and our pains in a small compass. We were but four days riding one hundred and twenty miles ; the weather is like April. I have now made one thousand nine hundred miles. My soul hath been surprisingly stayed upon and devoted to Jehovah.

N. C.]

Asbury's Expectation Realized.

Saturday, 16. We attended a meeting at Charlotteville meeting-house. N. Snethen spoke upon "Faith, hope, and charity ;" I followed on "Let us come boldly to the throne of grace." We have ridden a solitary, sandy way about a hundred and ten miles, and in three meetings there were not many more than one hundred souls. O Lord, can these dry bones live? I trust the seed sown in the hearts of some will live and grow to the glory of God and the good of generations to come to the end of time. I have now filled up two thousand miles of the three thousand I had calculated to be the distance from and back again to Philadelphia. Hitherto I have been mightily helped.

"Farewell to that House Forever."

Sabbath, 24. N. Snethen spoke upon Rom. viii, 6, 7. I gave an exhortation upon John v, 39, 40. It was

not at all agreeable to me to see nearly a hundred slaves standing outside and peeping in at the door, while the house was half empty. They were not worthy to come in because they were black! Farewell, farewell to that house forever!

Encouraging Prospects at Newbern.

Sabbath Day, 31. Cold and cloudy. I gave a sermon upon Rom. ii, 7, 8. N. Snethen spoke from Heb. xiii, 16, and in the evening on 1 John iv, 10, 11. We made a public collection which amounted to nearly sixty dollars, and parted from our brethren, whom we left full of good resolutions to finish the house of God. The African Methodists also were about to build a place of worship. Truly we are encouraged; our people are stirred up, and judges, counselors, doctors, and ministers attended our preaching and appeared to be pleased.

Va.] Conference at Salem—Deficiency of Preachers.

Sunday, February 28. At Salem.

Monday, March 1. We began and held close conference four days, and had preaching each day. Bruce, Lee, Jackson, and Snethen were our speakers, and there was a shaking among the people. Seven deacons and one elder were ordained. I was well pleased with the stations as far as they went, but Portsmouth, Bertie, Roanoke, Haw River, Guildford, and Salisbury should each have had an additional preacher if we had them; yea, Petersburg, Hanover, Williamsburg, and Richmond also; but the Lord hath not sent them, and how can we make them? There was a great strictness observed in the examina-

tion of the preachers' characters. Some were re-proved before the conference for their lightness and other follies.

John Lee's Funeral Sermon.

Thursday, 18. I dined at friend Nixon's, where I was kindly entertained. I left my kind host and came on to Petersburg.

Next day, by appointment, I preached John Lee's funeral sermon. My text was Philippians ii, 22: "But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father hath he served with me in the Gospel."

Md.]

Conference at Baltimore—Statistics.

Sabbath, 28. I had uncomfortable feelings, occasioned by a cold I had taken. Upon my watch-tower in Light-street I stood and delivered a message on James v, 19, 20. I wrote and rested until *Thursday*, the first day of April, when our yearly conference commenced. We went on with our business smoothly and rapidly, and had preaching each noon and evening in every Methodist house for public worship in the city.

Monday, *April* 5. We had a day of fasting and humiliation for the conference, the continent, and the Church of God. I improved the occasion, and spoke from Acts xiv, 23. On *Monday evening* the conference rose. All the demands of the preachers were answered. Money was advanced toward the purchase of horses. To those who had distant circuits and far to go donations were made, and nearly two hundred dollars very liberally sent to the Monmouth conference which is to meet in July next. Within the circling lines of this conference we report to this

sitting an addition to the society of three thousand souls and upward, besides those who may have died within the last eleven months.

Death of Asbury's Mother—Tribute to her Memory.

John Pawson's letter, and fifty copies of a volume of sermons, came safely to hand. His and other letters concerning the work of God I read to my brethren. While in Baltimore I received an account of the death of my mother, which I fear is true. And here I may speak safely concerning my very dear mother. Her character to me is well known. Her paternal descent was Welsh; from a family ancient and respectable, of the name of Rogers. She lived a woman of the world until the death of her first and only daughter, Sarah Asbury. This afflictive providence graciously terminated in the mother's conversion. When she saw herself a lost and wretched sinner she sought religious people, but "in the times of this ignorance" few were "sound in the faith" or "faithful to the grace given." Many were the days she spent chiefly in reading and prayer; at length she found justifying grace and pardoning mercy. So dim was the light of truth around her, from the assurance she found, she was at times inclined to believe in the final perseverance of the saints. For fifty years her hands, her house, her heart, were open to receive the people of God and ministers of Christ, and thus a lamp was lighted up in a dark place called Great Barre, in Great Britain. She was an afflicted yet most active woman, of quick bodily powers and masculine understanding. Nevertheless, "so kindly all the elements were mixed in her," her strong mind

quickly felt the subduing influences of that Christian sympathy which "weeps with those who weep," and "rejoices with those who do rejoice." As a woman and a wife she was chaste, modest, blameless ; as a mother (above all the women in the world would I claim her for my own) ardently affectionate. As a "mother in Israel" few of her sex have done more by a holy walk to live, and by personal labor to support the Gospel and to wash the saints' feet. As a friend she was generous, true, and constant. Elizabeth Asbury died January 6th, 1802, aged eighty-seven or eighty-eight years. There is now, after fifty years, a chapel within two or three hundred yards of her dwelling. I am now often drawn out in thankfulness to God, who hath saved a mother of mine, and, I trust, a father also, who are already in glory, where I hope to meet them both.

Va.]

Eastern Shore of Virginia.

Friday, 23. Bishop Whatcoat preached at the meeting-house in Diamond Town, Eastern Shore, to a numerous audience. That evening we had to ride twenty miles to Mr. Watts's, upon Chincoteague, but the Lord was in the family and blessed the people. We have a most pleasing prospect in Accomac. A general revival is going through the county. Next day we had a heavy ride to Snow Hill. Our new meeting-house not being finished, I preached in the court-house to many serious people upon Phil. i, 6. After worship we rode on to Isaac Bowman's, fifteen miles, and lodged at Dr. Wilson's plantation, now in the possession of Mr. White.

Md.] A Great Time at Bowen's Chapel.

Sunday, 25. We had a great time at Bowen's chapel. There were present about one thousand souls, to whom Brother Whatcoat preached. I read a letter and gave an exhortation. We came on nine miles to William Leicester's that evening.

Del.] A Trip Through Delaware.

On *Monday* we had to ride to the Sound chapel, where we found a large congregation; the prospect of religion here is good. In the evening we reached Mr. Lacey's, near the head of Indian River, making little short of thirty miles for our day's ride.

On *Tuesday*, Brother Whatcoat went to Lewistown, while myself preached at Milford.

Wednesday, 28. I preached at Dover on Ephes. v, 1, 2; thence I hastened to Duck Creek Cross Roads, where I spoke in the evening.

Pa.] Conference in Philadelphia—The Academy.

Saturday, May 1. Our conference opened on the first of May. We had an increase of probationers. In two sittings we did not get through the first question: Who are admitted upon trial? We appointed a committee of *five* to manage the temporal concerns, and recommended a day of fasting and prayer to be observed on the fourth of May, for the conference, the Church in general, and the continent at large. By a hasty calculation I find I have ridden three thousand three hundred and three miles, from and returning to Philadelphia.

To my happy surprise, George Roberts and John M'Claskey came forward and moved that the breth-

ren of the city who had bought the academy should have the offer of a preacher. The conference at once agreed that the superintendents of the Methodists of the United States should make them an overture upon the best terms ; there was but one dissenting voice.

N. J.]

A Sudden Choice of Subjects.

Monday, 10. We came on to Clemmell, dined at Robert Newell's, and attended our appointment at three o'clock. Brother Whatcoat made an improvement upon Isaiah xxv, 20, 21. My mind was in an unexpected manner led to John ii, 15.

Tuesday, 11. We rode to Henry Frith's and dined, after which we attended our appointment at Salem. My mind here was overruled on my subject ; I made a sudden choice while I was singing a hymn of 1 Cor. vii, 29-31. We had many serious people at Salem. We returned to Henry Frith's and lodged there.

Pa.]

At Pittsgrove.

Wednesday, 12. We had a blessed rain, but not pleasing to ride through to Humphrey's meeting-house at Pittsgrove. Bishop Whatcoat preached upon the *abundant entrance* ; I only exhorted upon the seasons, natural and spiritual, and read Mr. Hodges's letter. We lodged at Joseph Newkirk's.

N. J.]

At "Crosswicks."

Monday, 17. Through heavy, continued rain, we came on to Crosswicks. We dined with Mr. Lovell, and after drying our clothes, about two o'clock went to the meeting-house. Here we found a fire and a

stove, and warmth and comfort. How different this from visiting an open house in the woods, with wind and rain beating upon you, and sitting in your damp dress and a damp house for three hours, after which you are to ride five or ten miles to a bad lodging, where you are to dry yourself and find comfort if you can!

N. Y.]

On Staten Island.

Saturday, 22. We came upon Staten Island at the old *Blazing Star*. I called at the mansion of Justice Wright, where I had been entertained and where I had preached almost thirty-one years past. I was thankful to find Mrs. Wright happy in God although afflicted in body. Here I saw the third generation rising into accountability; we prayed, and were comforted together. We housed for the night with Joseph Totten upon the south side.

N. J.]

"Wonders Will Never Cease."

Monday, 24. I came to Elizabetown. Unwell as I had been on the Sabbath evening, and deprived of rest, I was expected to preach at eight o'clock; my subject was Ephes. ii, 10. Wonders will never cease. Nothing would serve but I must marry Thomas Morrell to a young woman. Such a solitary wedding, I suppose, has been but seldom seen. Behold Father Morrell, seventy-five—Father Whatcoat, sixty-six—Francis Asbury, fifty-seven—and the ceremony performed, solemnly, at the solemn hour of ten at night.

N. Y.] Memorable Names in the Early History of Methodism.

Friday, 28. I spoke in John-street upon 1 Thess. ii, 4-9.

Sunday, 30. After Bishop Whatcoat had preached, I read letters respecting the great revival of religion westward and southward. The death of Sarah Hutchinson gave occasion to my preaching her funeral sermon at the Bowery church in the afternoon. The deceased was the daughter of Frederick Devoe, whose house and family in New Rochelle were the first to receive and welcome the Methodist preachers, and thus became the gate by which we have had such an abundant and permanent entrance into the State of New York. After sitting under the ministry of the Gospel above thirty years, the saint, as I was informed by her sister, Hester Wilson, died very happy in God.

Yearly Conference in John-street.

Tuesday, June 1. We opened our yearly conference in John-street meeting-house, and continued our labors in great peace and union. We have a large admission of preachers upon trial as travelers. At this conference there are twenty-two, and in six conferences sixty-three.

Saturday, 5. We had a day of solemn fasting and prayer for the Church, the conference, the continent, and for the world, upon the eve of which I preached from 2 Cor. ii, 14, 15, with great plainness, and so much fire as made my earthly tabernacle very restless through the night. John M'Claskey gave us the first sermon upon Joel ii, 15-17.

Sunday, 6. We had a love-feast at eight o'clock, preaching at ten o'clock, and sacrament at twelve o'clock. Some good shakings went through the house, but there was nothing very signal. The col-

lection for the preachers gave occasion to a sermon, which I must needs preach ; it was done upon 1 Cor. xvi, 14. I attended and read a letter at the Bowery church, where a collection for the same purpose was also made. At six o'clock I preached in the North River church on Luke xi, 13, and so we closed our labors in the city. But instead of a page, it would require a volume to tell the restless tossings I have had—the difficulties and anxieties I have felt about preachers and people here and elsewhere—*alternate joy and sorrow*—but I have been supported—I am done ; I am gone—New York, once more, farewell !

Asbury Journeys Eastward.

Monday, 7. We had a very warm, dusty ride to the Widow Sherwood's, where we held meeting at four o'clock.

As it appeared to be the wish and will of this conference that I should be at that of Monmouth, I desired N. Snethen to go upon my appointments.

Conn.] Students of "Yale" Under the Ministry of Saml. Merwin.

Wednesday, 9. We were at James Banks's, Byram River. Bishop Whatcoat preached ; I only exhorted, and read a letter. Next day I preached at *the Old Well*, at Absalom Day's, near Norwalk, upon Acts iii, 26. I had to walk out at eight o'clock in the night to a crowded school-house. There has been a small stir here ; and now, among Congregationalists, Episcopalians, and Methodists, it is *who shall*. Brother Whatcoat was very ill with a bilious fever. I was afraid of pushing him too swiftly.

Friday, 11. With the kind family of Mr. Jocelin we

rested two hours in New Haven. I was pleased to hear that the students of Yale College, as many as ninety or one hundred, had been under gracious impressions. They would come to hear the Methodists, and, like other *very genteel* people, mock and deride; but God struck some of the vilest of them by the ministry of Samuel Merwin. This may be denied; but it is known to God, and to their own consciences.

R. I.]

Meeting at Cranston.

Saturday, 19. To General Lippett's, at Cranston, twenty-eight miles.

Sunday, 20. I opened the meeting at half past ten o'clock; then followed the ordination, then the sacrament, after which Brother Whatcoat preached upon Eph. iii, 8. My subject was 2 Cor. iii, 11, 12.

Mass.]

Asbury in Boston.

Monday, 21. We dined at Mr. Turpin's in Providence, and came on to Joseph Guild's in Attleborough, making a journey of about twenty-six miles. Next day, after a heavy, hungry, weary, dusty ride, we reached Boston. I closed the labors of the day by a sermon from 1 Peter, and had two Baptist and three Methodist preachers to hear me. It was an open time.

N. H.]

Across the State.

Monday, 28. We came away in haste to Greenland, breakfasted, resumed our journey, passing through Berwick, and brought up at Deacon Clarke's, in Wells; and thus one day's ride of fifty-one miles brought us across the State of New Hampshire.

Me.]

Conference in an Upper Room.

Wednesday, 30. We had a racking ride of about forty-five miles to Monmouth. Our breakfast we took at Gray, and dined with Mr. Bradbury at New Gloucester.

Thursday, July 1. Our conference continued three days. We held it in the upper room of Sewell Prescott's house. We had fifteen members and nine probationers. The married preachers who came deficient to our conference received about one hundred and twenty dollars; the single brethren about sixty-two dollars; and the probationers a small donation of two dollars each, which came from far. The whole of my doing was to read two letters, exhort a little, and examine the deacons, Samuel Hillman, John Gove, Gilman Moody, and Joseph Baker, whom Brother Whatcoat ordained.

Sunday, 4. We concluded with a love-feast, sacrament, and the ordination of five elders, to wit: Comfort Smith, Epaphras Kibby, Daniel Webb, Asa Heath, and Reuben Hubbard; they kneeled outside at the door of the house, and received the imposition of hands from myself and the elders present. May they open the door of the Church of God in discipline, and the way to heaven by preaching the Gospel! Five sermons were preached through the day.

N. H.]

George Pickering's Name Appears.

Tuesday, 6. We passed through Scarborough, Saco, Kennebunk, Wells, Berwick, and Somersworth, which last is in New Hampshire; thence onward through Dover, Madbury, Lee, and Epping.

Thursday, 8. We held a meeting at Captain Fogg's, in Epping ; my subject was Titus ii, 2. George Pickering spoke in the evening from 1 Cor. xv, 34. After preaching we rode twelve miles to Hawke. On our route next day to Waltham we passed through Kingston, Plasto, Haverhill, Andover, Wilmington, Woburn, Lexington, and Lincoln, nearly completing another thousand miles. We shall have a great opening in New Hampshire, and a district formed there in a few years.

Mass.] The Law of Church Rates Opposed.

Monday, 12. We came through Needham. George Pickering stopped to demand the Church rates taken from the Methodists, amounting to one hundred dollars or upward. This is to pay the Independent ministers, whose forefathers fled from Episcopal tyranny ; yet, be it known unto all men, their children's children are risen up and glory in supporting the Gospel *according to law*. Happy the descendants who condemn not themselves by doing that which their ancestors disallowed ! We lodged at Mr. Sterne's, at Milford.

Conn.] Asbury's Footsteps in Litchfield County.

Saturday, 17, and *Sunday*, 18. We held quarterly meeting, Litchfield circuit. The *Sabbath day* congregation was small, owing to the rain after the great heat. I spoke from 2 Thess. iii, 1. We had feeling times and hearts, and a living love-feast. In heat and in haste we rode on to Colonel Burrell's, in Canaan, and there lodged.

Monday, 19. We came to Brother Church's, near the Falls of Housatonic River. Our route led us

through Salisbury and Sharon, across the line into the State of New York.

N. Y.] At Travelers' Rest—Billy Hibbard.

Tuesday, 20. We rested at Travelers' Rest, upon the solitary banks of Hudson, with my dear friends Freeborn Garrettson and his prudent, pious wife. We have heat, heat, great heat!

Wednesday, 21. I preached upon 2 Cor. iv, 7. It was an ordination sermon at the setting apart of Billy Hibbard to the office of an elder. It is exceedingly warm and the zenith of harvest, yet we had a congregation.

Three Sermons in New York City.

Sabbath, 25. In New York I preached at John-street on Rev. iii, 17-20; at three o'clock, at the Bowery church, on Isaiah lv, 6, 7; at the African church, at six o'clock in the evening, on 1 Thess. i, 5. It rained at times through the day, which prevented more from attending. It was a day of life to me.

N. J.] A Brief Stop—"A Word or Two and Prayer."

Thursday, 29. I stopped at Burlington; had a word or two with my friends, and we commended each other to God in prayer. I came on in haste and sickening heat to Mr. Manly's "Travelers' Rest," arriving about twelve o'clock. The fever has re-appeared in Philadelphia. I hear great times have been known in Dover—above one hundred and fifty souls have felt the operations of Divine grace at the annual meeting upon the day of Pentecost, and great times also at the Milford quarterly meeting.

Pa.] Asbury's First Sermon in the Academy at Philadelphia.

On *Sunday morning*, according to appointment, I preached for the first time in the college church (or Academy.) My subject was Exod. xx, 24. After sermon we had sacrament. We had seriousness and attention. In the afternoon I preached at St. George's; a gust came up and few attended. In the evening I rode out to Mr. Manly's.

Md.] Trials from Every Point of the Compass.

Wednesday, August 4. I crossed the Susquehanna, dined with Mr. Smith, and reached Perry Hall in the evening. I have one day I can call my own. I write, I read, I think, and refit for the mountains. My mind is in great peace, and has been so kept in all my labors; and my trials, which come from almost every point of the compass, shall be as various winds to waft me to the haven of rest.

A House of Worship at Last.

Sabbath, 15. At Fredericktown I once more spoke; my subject was 1 Cor. i, 23, 24. Here then, at last, after more than thirty years' labor, we have a house of worship and thirty souls or upward in fellowship.

Va.] Interview with Mr. O'Kelly.

Friday, 20. We called at John Millburn's. Next day, at Millburn's meeting-house, I spoke upon Heb. x, 35, 36. We lodged at William Tyler's. On *Sunday*, in the meeting-house at Winchester, at eleven o'clock, I preached from Titus ii, 13, 14. We had the sacrament. Many felt, and gave glory to God.

In the afternoon, under the shady trees, westward of the town, not a few attended—rulers and people. I read two letters and preached from Psalm lvi, 16. Mr. O'Kelly having been taken ill in town, I sent two of our brethren to see him, by whom I signified to him that if he wished to see me I would wait on him. He desired a visit, which I made on *Monday, August 23*. We met in peace, asked of each other's welfare, talked of persons and things indifferently, prayed, and parted in peace. Not a word was said of the troubles of former times—perhaps this is the last interview we shall have upon earth. I have heard of the flight of thousands from the city of Philadelphia; and that all the churches, save the Episcopalian, the Quaker, and the Methodist, are shut up. George Roberts still continues in the city. O my God, keep him and his family alive in the day of pestilence!

"Fourteen Times Over the Mighty Mountains."

Friday, September 10. We came to Charles Hardy's, upon Holston. I found the people praising God. A blessed revival had taken place. Fourteen or fifteen times have I toiled over the mighty mountains, and nearly twenty years have we labored upon Holston, and lo, the rage of wild and Christian savages is tamed, and God hath glorified himself!

Saturday, 11. I rode to the Salt Works, perhaps for the last time. Alas! there is little *salt* here, and when Sister Russell is gone, will there be any left? But a few miles from the works, up the middle ridge, they have built a meeting-house, and there is a revival of religion.

Nearly Five Thousand Miles!

I make my calculation upon four thousand nine hundred miles from July 30, 1801, to September 12, 1802. If a living man and a Christian might dare to complain ———

Tenn.] Presbyterian Ministers Preaching at Conference.

Saturday, October 2. We rode forward to Station Camp and found the conference seated. I was able to ordain by employing Brother M'Kendree to examine those who were presented, and to station the preachers—I hope for the glory of God, the benefit of the people, and the advantage of the preachers. The conference adjourned on *Tuesday*.

Improvised Tents.

Monday, 18. We took our departure at five o'clock, and rode to Shaw's, where we got corn in the ear at a dollar per bushel. We continued on until half past six o'clock, then stopped, struck a fire, and encamped under a heavy mountain dew, which, when the wind shook the trees, fell like rain upon us. Brother M'Kendree made me a tent of his own and John Watson's blankets, and happily saved me from taking cold while I slept about two hours under my grand *marquee*. Brother M'Kendree threw his cloak over the limb of a tree, and he and his companion took shelter underneath and slept also. I will not be rash, and brave the wilderness again without a tent.

Asbury Meets with an Accident.

On *Tuesday*, after riding fifty miles, a part of ninety-three miles in two days, we came about eight o'clock to West Point. An accident, extraordinary in the

manner and desperate in the effects happened to me. At a rocky run, in attempting to dismount, my horse gave a sudden turn and swung me against the rocks in the stream. The rude shock to my tender feet made me roar bitterly. My horse was low before, tender-footed, and tired—the hills were steep and rugged, and I was sore by riding. These circumstances combined caused so much pain that when we came on *Wednesday* to the Grassy Valley I cast anchor, with a determination to give up Georgia and to go by a straight line to Camden Conference to be held January 1, 1803.

Lifted from his Horse like a Helpless Child.

I sent word to James Douthat to explain to the elders of Georgia and South Carolina my situation. I also dispatched John Watson to meet Brother Snethen, and give him my plan to fulfill the appointments in Georgia; but behold, Brother Snethen had had a fall from his horse, and was left lame upon the road! I have been sick for twenty-three days; ah! the tale of woe I might relate. My dear M'Kendree had to lift me up and down from my horse like a helpless child. For my sickness and sufferings I conceive I am indebted to sleeping uncovered in the wilderness. I passed so quickly along that many people scarcely more than beheld me with their eyes, yet these were witness to my groans, and sometimes *dumb, I opened not my mouth*. I could not have slept but for the aid of laudanum. Meantime, my spirits and patience were wonderfully preserved in general, although I was sometimes hardly restrained from crying, "Lord, let me die!" for death had no terrors, and I could not but reflect upon my escape from the toil and suf-

ferings of another year. I had no sad forebodings of the ills which might befall the Church; it is the Lord's, not mine. I am no longer young. I cannot go out as at other times. I must take the advice of friends, who say, *spare thyself*. I have ridden about five thousand five hundred miles, and in the midst of all I am comforted with the prospects of the Western Conference. We have added three thousand members this year, have formed Cumberland into a district, and have sent a missionary to the Natchez.

Asbury Preaches to a Group of Travelers.

Tuesday, November 2. We rode through New Port, the capital of Cock county, forded French Broad at Shrine's ferry, and came, cold and without food for man or beast, to John O'Haven's; but O the kindness of our open-hearted, open-handed friends!

Wednesday, 3. We labored over the Ridge and the Paint mountain. I held on awhile, but grew afraid and dismounted, and with the help of a pine sapling worked my way down the steepest and roughest part. I could bless God for life and limbs. Eighteen miles this day contented us, and we stopped at William Nelson's, Warm Springs. About thirty travelers having dropped in, I expounded the Scriptures to them, as found in the third chapter of Romans, as equally applicable to nominal Christians, Indians, Jews, and Gentiles.

Visits from House to House.

Thursday, 4. We came off about the rising of the sun—cold enough. There were six or seven heights to pass over, at the rate of five, two, and one mile an hour, as the ascent or descent would permit. Four

hours brought us at the end of twelve miles to dinner, at Barnett's station, whence we pushed on to John Foster's, and after making twenty miles more came in about the going down of the sun. On *Friday* and *Saturday* we visited from house to house.

"Two Sticks and a Good Providence."

Tuesday, 8. I dined at Benjamin Davidson's, a house I had lodged and preached at two years ago. We labored along eighteen miles; eight ascent on the west side, and as many on the east side of the mountain. The descent of Seleuda exceeds all I know from the Province of Maine to Kentucky and Cumberland. I had dreaded it, fearing I should not be able to walk or ride such steeps; nevertheless, with time, patience, labor, two sticks, and above all a good Providence, I came in, about five o'clock, to ancient Father John Douthat's, Greenville county, South Carolina. Here I found myself at home among kind and attentive friends.

S. C.] Six Thousand Miles Nearly Completed.

I have heard of successful meetings which have been held by encampments upon the Catawba, at Morgantown, Swannano, Pendleton, and Greenville, in North and South Carolina; ministers of the different denominations had attended. More circumstantial accounts I have not yet been able to obtain. Mr. Newton, a Presbyterian minister in Buncombe county, appears to be greatly engaged in the spirit of the work. I have now nearly completed the six thousand miles since the last of July of the last year. Great and fiery trials; great succeeding consolations.

Conference at Camden—Statistics.

Thursday, December 30. Rode to Camden. On *Friday* I read in public some letters narrative of the work of God.

Thursday, January 6, 1803. I wrote three large letters to the north, and put myself in order for traveling. From *Saturday* until *Wednesday* the time was spent in conference and in public exercises. We had preaching every noon and evening; seven elders and four deacons were ordained. Of preachers, two were admitted and one had located. We had great peace and union in our labors, two days of which were directed to the explanation and recommendation of discipline as it respects the order of the Church. We have added in this conference three thousand three hundred and seventy-one to our number.

N. C.] "I Smile at the Simplicity of our Friends."

Tuesday, February 8. I sometimes smile at the simplicity of our friends. They would love us to death, in company and in labors too. They cannot do too much, it would seem, to express their kindness; and in return, we are to be such immortal men as never to be weary and never to complain.

Cake and Cheese by the Way.

Thursday, 17. We took a south-west course, through ice, snow, and frost, and the wind in our faces, and arrived at Lot Ballard's at half past three o'clock. Here our appointment at the chapel was for twelve o'clock.

Friday, 18. Finding it was but forty-two miles to Newbern we concluded to push for it. I rose early,

ordained J. Wilden to the office of deacon, and started. I had had thoughts of calling at a certain house, but being fearful we had not the time to spare, we stopped and fed on the ground. With a little cake and cheese, and some corn for our horses, we came in fine spirits to Newbern.

Vol.] An Objection as Old as Methodism.

Friday, March 11. As we had two appointments I preached at Deacon Haslet's, to many people, on 1 Pet. v, 10. We had a consoling, gracious season. Brother Snethen preached at Suffolk. I was surprised to hear that some who had separated from us should have reported that the new meeting-houses would belong to the Bishops, and that they might sell them. These reports were offered by some, not of the connection, as reasons which prevented their subscribing, and our brethren have therefore determined to build without the aid of others. What our enemies accuse us of intending to do they have already done in some cases and attempted in others.

Bad Roads and Hungry Travelers.

Monday, 21. We traveled, very unwell, to Mr. Wall's, near Chesterfield court-house. Rested in part, and then divided our ride to Richmond into a journey of two days. We arrived on *Tuesday*, and I preached at twelve o'clock to many serious people on Titus ii, 10-13. N. Snethen preached at seven o'clock. Next day we came along to Caroline, thirty-five miles. In the morning it rained, and the day was wintry and dreary; we saw the wagons sinking and set fast, for in many places the route was dreadful; but we wor-

ried through, feeding our horses once and ourselves not at all. Next day I preached once more at Dickenson's chapel ; my subject was Heb. iii, 12-14.

I feel my infirmities and the labor of my journeys, but my soul is cast upon the Lord in unceasing prayer that God may guide the Church, and give the spirit of wisdom and love and zeal to our conferences. We only, as we think, want more useful laborers in the vineyard, and thousands will be brought home to God in the cities, circuits, and towns this year. I lodged at the Widow Collins's.

Friday, 25. We rode to Fredericksburg and dined, and then pushed on to Stafford court-house, making forty miles this day. Next day we gained Alexandria, eating nothing between seven o'clock in the morning and seven at night. "

Md.] Baltimore the Banner Conference in Finances.

Tuesday, 29. We reached Baltimore, forty-five miles, stopping an hour on our way at the Widow Turner's. We have traveled about three hundred miles toward eight thousand miles.

Tuesday, April 12. It is sufficiently proved that, upon our present plan, unless the preachers exert themselves, every conference in the Union, except that of Baltimore, will be insolvent in its finances. In the late and last year's conferences they have had a surplus here ; they have supported wives, widows, and children, and in the present instance have supplied the contingencies of those preachers who have gone to distant parts, besides giving one hundred dollars to the Philadelphia, and as much, each, to the conferences of New York and Boston. I can say,

hitherto the Lord hath helped us through deeps, deserts, dangers, and distresses. I have told but a small part of our labors and sufferings—let the great day of eternity reveal the rest!

Yesterday I preached at Gatch's chapel on 1 Peter v, 10. We then came on to Perry Hall. To-day we have had a meeting here. Brother Whatcoat preached upon Col. ii, 6. My mind is solemnly stayed upon God.

Asbury's Estimate of the Superintendency.

On *Wednesday* we parted with the elders at Perry Hall. I had preached on 2 Cor. xii, 9, 10. We rode on to Deer Creek, and halted for the night with Harry Watters.

My mind is in a great calm after the tumult of a Baltimore conference, and the continual concourse of visitors and people to which my duty subjected me. I have felt deeply engaged and much self-possession; indeed, age, grace, and the weight and responsibility of one of the greatest charges upon earth ought to make me serious.

Caprice and Display Unacceptable to the Bishop.

Tuesday, 19. I spoke at the Manor chapel on 1 Cor. xiv, 15. After meeting, we crossed Bohemia and Sassafras Rivers and housed with Robert Moody. My mind is kept in peace; I only seek to please and to serve my fellow-men as faithfully and impartially as I can.

Wednesday, 20. My subject at the new chapel, George Town Cross Roads, was 1 Tim. iv, 2. We had a living season. Our brethren from Chester Town came to meet us, to convey us forward with

more ease. Save me from *parade* ! the greatest good-will and the kindest intentions, will never make it acceptable in my eyes ; I choose rather to go on in my own way, though I suffer for it.

A Conference of One Hundred Preachers.

Thursday, 28. I preached at Foster's chapel on 1 Pet. i, 4, and came along to Major Mitchell's, in Caroline ; the wind was east, the evening cold, and I unwell. At Denton I took to bed awhile ; we continued on, however, and reached Choptank. On *Saturday* I rode, under great bodily affliction, to Duck Creek Town. I sat in our conference, held in the Friends' meeting-house, four days. We had nearly one hundred preachers, traveling and local, present for the transaction of business. Twelve elders and twelve deacons were ordained.

Pa.]

A Searching Sermon at St. George's.

Tuesday, *May* 10. We came into the city of Philadelphia ; the rain brought on my intermitting fever ; yet, unwell as I was, conditional appointments had been made by my friends ; but instead of the pulpit I took to my room. My journey from Baltimore to this city has brought me over about three hundred and fifty miles. *Wednesday*, *Thursday*, *Friday*, and *Saturday*, I remained in Philadelphia, most of the time confined to my room. I crept out upon the *Sabbath day*, and preached at St. George's on 2 Pet. i, 5-9 ; my voice was weak, and some could not hear ; but it was a searching sermon and in season. We set out on *Monday*, and reached Burlington by twelve

o'clock. I crossed over and preached in our new house in the solitary town of Bristol. James Sterling and Thomas Ware accompanied me.

N. Y.]

No Improvement Discernible.

Tuesday, 17. We rode to Joseph Hutchinson's, and next day came to Elizabethtown and lodged at Mr. Crowell's. On *Thursday* we reached New York.

On *Friday* and *Saturday* I did a little in writing, talking, planning, and thinking. I can hear, see, or feel no more of religion here than there was last year. I signed a memorial for the obtaining in the court a legal claim to £300 left by Miss De Peyster for the bishops and clergy of the Methodist Church, to be appropriated in the best manner for the good of the society.

Conn.]

The Bishops neither Popes nor Politicians.

Friday, 27. Finding the road, by information, to be rocky and hilly, we were persuaded to come back to the post-road. We therefore directed our course down through Greenfield and Bridgeport to Stratford, and arriving at Elkanah Wheeler's, we were willing to rest; thirty miles of our journey we made without feeding man or beast. My health is better. The Baptists of Connecticut have sent their petition from the Assembly to the Legislature of Connecticut to the bishops of the Methodist Church, that they may have their aid in obtaining toleration. What can we do, and how is it our business? We are neither popes nor politicians. Let our brethren assert their own liberties.

Mass.] Boston Conference—Ordination of Joshua Soule.

Wednesday, June 8. We came through dust to Boston, and as eighteen members were present we opened the conference in our solitary little chapel. We sat six hours a day for the dispatch of business, and there was preaching at eleven and five o'clock and in the evening. It was all new, but nothing special appeared.

Saturday, 11. We ordained Joshua Soule and Nathan Emory elders, and Edward Whittle deacon. As our work was done, and we were feeble, we came away to Waltham. We have an increase of five hundred members. The great wants of Boston are good religion and good water.

N. H.] What Industry and Economy will Do.

Thursday, 16. We came to Ebenezer Colburn's, New Hampshire, and I preached upon Titus ii, 11, 12. Next day we labored through extreme heat, and over high hills, to Marlborough, and were glad to rest ourselves at Ebenezer Herrick's, opposite the west side of the great mountain called Monadnick. This portion of the State of New Hampshire is full of hemlock swamps, and I question if any part of the Alleghany, south, is more broken ; the roads, however, are greatly improved, and there is a turnpike extending from Boston to Keene. The soil, though barren, exhibits, in its abundant productions of grass, oats, barley, rye, and potatoes, what the arm of labor and habits of economy and industry will do ; out-doors there is a well-kept stock of cattle, sheep, and hogs, and in-doors you see plenty of cheese, butter, and milk, and fish from the mill-ponds, which are wonderfully fre-

quent, producing the finest trout and pike ; the people are pictures of health, and appear to be of the old English stamina.

Quarterly Meeting—Elder Ostrander.

Saturday, 18. We journeyed through the vale and pleasant town of Keene, and climbed along, height after height, toward Walpole ; seven miles off, upon the south-west, we turned and came to Westmoreland, and held our quarterly meeting for Chesterfield circuit at Jonathan Winchester's, brother to the famous Universalist of that name. I opened the meeting in a new barn upon Titus ii, 13, 14. On the *Sabbath* we were crowded from seven o'clock in the morning until three in the afternoon ; the wind from the south-east blew in at the door, and it rained withal. Brother Whatcoat and Elder Ostrander preached before, and the young men exhorted after love-feast and the sacrament.

Vt.]

Quite in the Old Style.

Wednesday, 22. We had a meeting at a school-house near to Joseph Jacob's, in Guilford ; Brother Whatcoat preached upon the *perfect law of liberty*, and we had a gracious season.

N. Y.]

Seventy Preachers in Conference.

Friday, *July* 1. We opened our conference at John Baker's, in the Holloway, prettily environed with hills, a carpet of green spread beneath, and here and there around us fields clothed with the promise of an abundant harvest. We finished our business on *Tuesday*, public and private ; there were nearly seventy

preachers and fifty members. On the *Sabbath day* perhaps we had two thousand hearers ; the house was filled with women, and the men stood without. I stood in the door, and spoke to them from 1 Tim. iv, 11, 12 ; but I had been overcome by twelve hours' a day constant attention to business in the conference, and spoke with pain.

Statistics—Asbury's Ambition.

Monday, 11. We rose at four o'clock, and came off at six, and at twelve stopped at Mr. Ostrander's ; in this happy family we found the Son of peace. We came on to New Windsor, (through Newburg,) to John Ellis's, making forty miles. I have traveled about two hundred miles through the State of New York. By a fair computation I judge that we have added, exclusive of the dead, the removed, and the expelled and withdrawn, 17,300. Our total for the year 1803 is 104,070 members. In 1771 there were about 300 Methodists in New York, 250 in Philadelphia, and a few in Jersey. I then longed for 100,000 ; now I want 200,000—nay, thousands upon thousands.

N. J.]

Preaches at Trenton.

Saturday, 16. We were driven into Jonathan Bunn's by a blessed rain. On the *Sabbath day*, at Trenton, my subject was 2 Cor. xi, 17.

Pa.]

"Heat, Dust, and Turnpike Gates."

Monday, 18. I must here, in Philadelphia, labor with the pen, answer letters, and refit for the Western Conference.

Friday, 22. We left the city. During my three

days' stay I preached once at the Academy. On the Great Valley Road we stopped at Brother Geiger's, and housed for the night with an exceeding kind German family by the name of Kenagee. On *Saturday* we found heat, and dust, and turnpike-gates (twelve in seventy-five miles) as usual.

Sabbath, 24, we spent at Soudersburg. I spoke on Psalm li, 9-12. Here Bishop Whatcoat concluded he must stop, or go on with me and die by inches.

Asbury at Carlisle.

Friday, 29. We had a sultry ride to Carlisle. Henry Boehm preached in the evening. Next day, at eleven o'clock, I gave them a sermon from Col. iii, 12-14; in the evening Wilson Lee spoke.

On the *Sabbath* we had a prayer-meeting at five o'clock; James Smith preached at eight o'clock; I spoke on 2 Cor. vi, 2, and Wilson Lee in the afternoon; we had excessive heat, but the people were very attentive. I have read the half of the "Portrait of St. Paul!" O inimitable Fletcher—in preaching, writing, in living, and in dying!

Religious Condition of Pennsylvania.

August 2. On *Tuesday morning* at four o'clock we set out to scale the mountains. We passed a little town called Strasburg, and another called Emmetsburg; here we stopped, and I laid myself down upon the floor to rest. Intense heat, rugged mountains, and a wasting dysentery almost overcame me. I feel, and have felt thirty-two years, for Pennsylvania—the most wealthy, and the most careless about God and the things of God; but I hope God will shake the

State and the Churches. There are now upward of twenty German preachers somehow connected with Mr. Otterbein and Martin Boehm ; but they want authority, and the Church wants discipline.

Asbury's Legacy—Who Wants It?

Tuesday, 9. At Murphy's barn I spoke on 1 Cor. vii, 29-31. Although much afflicted I felt wholly given up to do or suffer the will of God : to be sick or well, and to live or die at any time and in any place—the fields, the woods, the house, or the wilderness. Glory be to God for such resignation ! I have little to leave, except a journey of five thousand miles a year, the care of more than a hundred thousand souls, and the arrangement of about four hundred preachers yearly, to which I may add the murmurs and discontent of the ministers and people. Who wants this legacy ? Those who do are welcome to it for me !

Camp-Meeting on the Monongahela.

Friday, 9. Our camp-meeting began to-day. The ground chosen was William Jackman's, near the old fort upon the Monongahela ; it was upon a beautiful eminence the great stand was erected, and a second one to the left, concealed by the trees. On *Saturday* I preached to about one thousand hearers. My text was Isa. lv, 12. The Sabbath was wet in the morning, but, clearing away, both stands were occupied, and there might be in the two congregations nearly four thousand people. There was a visible impression made upon many, and we hope fifty souls were converted to God. On *Tuesday* we came away, while others were coming to the ground. Thornton Flem-

ing and James Quinn went back and preached. We came to Samuel Hammond's.

Pittsburg—"It is Time we had a House of our Own."

Saturday, 27. We had a dry, sultry ride to Pittsburg. In the evening William Page preached. In the court-house I spoke on the *Sabbath day* to about four hundred people. My subject was 1 Chron. vii, 14. I would have preached again, but the Episcopalians occupied the house. I come but once in twelve years, but they could not consent to give way for me. It is time we had a house of our own. I think I have seen a lot which will answer to build upon.

An Aged Presbyterian.

Monday, 29. I came down and crossed at the old fort, the point of confluence of the rivers Monongahela and Alleghany, whence these united waters flow under the appropriate name of Ohio, *beautiful*. I crossed Sawmill and the Shirtee, and passed the lands of General Nevill. At John Wrenshall's I found an agreeable hostess and lovely children. Riding up the road I met an aged Presbyterian, who told me that religion was at a great height in Mr. Wood's congregation, that yesterday under preaching several fell down. He asked my opinion of the work. I replied, that in my judgment any person who could not give an account of the convincing and converting power of God might be mistaken. Falling down would not do. We agreed in sentiment.

Va.]

In Brook and Ohio Counties.

Monday, September 5. We rode ten miles to John Beck's, near West Liberty. I preached on Acts

iii, 26. One soul who had been convicted at our quarterly meeting professed to find peace with God, and shouted *glory!* with a loud voice. On *Tuesday* I preached near this place to a crowd at John Spaugh's. I came with Rezin Pomfrey down the great hill to the Ohio. *Wednesday* brought us to Charlestown, the capital of Brook county, situated at the mouth of Buffalo, eighty miles from Pittsburg. We found the Ohio so low that the boat of Colonel Lewis, who is going to explore the Mississippi, would not float over the flats.

Ohio.] Asbury Preaches in a "Presbyterian Tent."

Thursday, 8. I reached Steubenville, and preached on Luke xix, 10. As the court-house could not contain the people we went to a Presbyterian tent, for which, as the "Jews and Samaritans have no dealings" in this country, we must ask pardon. I was invited to dine with Mr. Bezaleel Wells, one of the proprietors of this town, and the rich occupant of a large mansion which if rough-cast would be grand. The rivers and streams were never lower than now. My mind is greatly engaged with God in public and private, but I feel the power of Satan in these little wicked western trading towns.

Introduction of Slaves Prohibited.

Tuesday, 20. Was a day of settled rain. We sought shelter at Edward Teal's. Next day, having two appointments, we set out and got bewildered in the woods, and lost our way upon Mount Pleasant. We judged it best to take the path to New Lancaster, and to try to secure our second appointment at Broad Cole's. After riding about twenty miles, and again

missing our way, we came in at three o'clock, and I preached upon Luke xi, 13. I took lodging at Mr. Daniel Van Meeter's. Mr. Van Meeter told me that a boy had cultivated about twelve acres, which would yield him about seven hundred bushels of Indian corn. Now what do these people want with slaves? They have wisely prohibited their introduction into the State.

American Enterprise in the State of Ohio.

Wednesday, 28. We crossed the Ohio into the State of Kentucky, Fleming county, stopping at Salathiel Fitch's. It is wonderful to contemplate the effects of American enterprise exhibited in the State of Ohio. It is but four years since Zane opened the road for the general government through the *wilderness* so lately called, and now there are the towns of Marietta, at the mouth of the Muskingum, of about one thousand houses; Cincinnati, containing as many; Hamilton, of five hundred houses; and many others whose names are scarcely fixed.

Ky.]

Conference and Conversions.

Thursday, 30. We came through Bourbon county. I crossed Licking River by the Salt Works, and rode thirty-three miles to B. Coleman's, at Mount Gerizim, to attend the Kentucky Conference. This was a heavy ride, without food for man or beast until we reached *home*.

Monday, October 3. We entered fully upon our conference work, but I had to preach nevertheless. We had preaching every day, and the people continued singing and prayer, night and day, with little intermission. On *Wednesday* the meeting closed. We

hope there were twenty souls converted to God, besides five who are reported to have been converted at a family meeting. Our conference ended on *Thursday*, the 6th.

Missionaries Appointed to Natchez and Illinois.

Saturday, 8. I felt my mind devoutly fixed on God. I accomplished two things in conference, namely: 1. Forming the Ohio circuits into a district; 2. Sending two missionaries to Natchez and one to the Illinois, as the *minutes* of the present year will show.

Tenn.] A Description of Western Emigration.

Friday, 14. We came to Hunt's, at Claiborne's court-house, and next day reached Martin Stubblefield's. What a road have we passed! certainly the worst on the whole continent, even in the best weather; yet, bad as it was, there were four or five hundred crossing the rude hills while we were. I was powerfully struck with the consideration that there were at least as many thousand emigrants annually from east to west. We must take care to send preachers after these people.

N. C.] Asbury's Return from the Western World.

Friday, 28. We came up Little River, a sister stream of French Broad. It offered some beautiful flats of land. We found a new road, lately cut, which brought us in at the head of Little River, at the old fording-place, and within hearing of the falls, a few miles off the head of Matthews Creek, a branch of the Seleuda. The waters, foaming down the rocks with a descent of half a mile, make themselves heard at a great distance. I walked down the mountain,

after riding sixteen or eighteen miles before breakfast, and came in about twelve o'clock to Father John Douthat's. Once more I have escaped from filth, fleas, rattlesnakes, hills, mountains, rocks, and rivers. Farewell, Western World, for awhile! We are twelve hundred and seventy miles from Philadelphia.

S. O.1 A House of Worship Built by one Man.

Friday, November 4. We recrossed the branches of Tiger and Enoree Rivers, and came along a crippling path to Thomas Terry's, near the Fork Shoals of Reedy River. We have a new frame house, thirty by twenty-four feet, built for worship, on Mount Terry. This has been erected in pursuance of my last year's advice, and by one man. To-morrow we shall open our new house.

The Preachers' House in Charleston a Paradise.

Friday, 18. We came to Mr. M'Quinn's, and next day reached Charleston, after riding thirty miles without rest or food for man or beast. I took possession of the new house built for the preachers near the new chapel.

Sunday, 20. I went once more to Cumberland-street house, and had gracious feelings while expounding 1 Pet. v, 10. My stay being short, I attended in the afternoon and spoke upon David's repentance, as recorded in Psalm li, 9-11. This also was a seasonable time, and all were attentive. Brother Kendrick spoke in the new church in the afternoon, and Brother Dougharty in the old church at night, while the new church was occupied by Brother Darley. All this labor was, we hope, not in vain; some ap-

peared to be in distress. Who knows what God will yet do for wicked Charleston? I continued a week in Charleston, lodging in our own house at Bethel, receiving my visitors, ministers and people, white, black, and yellow; it was a paradise to me and to some others.

Ga.] News of the Progress of the Work of God.

Friday, December 2. We reached our place of destination. My mind is calm, and hath been kept in a praying frame. By letter from Philip Bruce I learn that the work of God has promising appearances in the eastern and western districts of North Carolina, but abundantly more so in the south district of Virginia. At a kind of camp-meeting, held at Woolsey Barn, (but now Ellis's chapel more properly,) there have been, report says, one hundred whites and a number of blacks converted to God. At Guilford quarterly meeting thirty, and as many within a short space at Norfolk, brought to Christ. But still larger accounts are received of the work of the Lord in this State; this, however, may be more fully known by reference to Stith Mead's narrative letters on the subject. My lodging in Augusta is with Peter Cantalou, a friend from France.

Difference Between a Pope and a Methodist Bishop.

Thursday, 15. I will make a few observations upon the ignorance of foolish men, who will rail against our Church government. The Methodists acknowledge no superiority but what is founded on seniority, election, and long and faithful services. For myself, I pity those who cannot distinguish between a Pope of Rome and an old worn man of about sixty years,

who has the *power given him* of riding five thousand miles a year, at a salary of eighty dollars, through summer's heat and winter's cold, traveling in all weather, preaching in all places; his best covering from rain often but a blanket; the surest sharpener of his wit, hunger—from fasts voluntary and involuntary; his best fare, for six months of the twelve, coarse kindness; and his reward, from too many, suspicion, envy, and murmurings all the year round.

Bishop Coke at the Augusta Conference.

January 4, 1804. We met for conference. Bishop Coke preached in the morning and in the afternoon at John's, (the old house,) Augusta.

On *Monday* we opened our conference in Mr. Cantalou's house. We conducted our business in great harmony, and did it hastily. There was preaching every evening, and the bishops bore their share of ministerial labors. Elders and deacons were ordained. I found little difficulty in stationing the preachers. The conference rose at eleven o'clock on *Thursday*, and I took the road to Swearingham's, eighteen miles. On *Friday* I reached Williams's, and on *Saturday*, Columbia. *Sabbath day* found me in bed, confined by a deep cold and an affection of my breast. A cold, hungry ride brought us to Camden on *Monday*. I gave Bishop Coke a plan for a journey as far as Boston, before the General Conference.

Asbury's Reasons for a Life of Celibacy.

Friday, 27. We reached Georgetown. I have suffered in my flesh, and have had "deep waters" of a temporal and spiritual nature to wade through.

If I should die in celibacy, which I think quite probable, I give the following reasons for what can scarcely be called my choice: I was called in my fourteenth year; I began my public exercises between sixteen and seventeen; at twenty-one I traveled; at twenty-six I came to America—thus far I had reasons enough for a single life. It had been my intention of returning to Europe at thirty years of age; but the war continued, and it was ten years before we had a settled, lasting peace—this was no time to marry or be given in marriage. At forty-nine I was ordained superintendent bishop in America. Among the duties imposed upon me by my office was that of traveling extensively, and I could hardly expect to find a woman with grace enough to enable her to live but one week out of the fifty-two with her husband; besides, what right has any man to take advantage of the affections of a woman, make her his wife, and by a voluntary absence subvert the whole order and economy of the marriage state, by separating those whom neither God, nature, nor the requirements of civil society permit long to be *put asunder*?—it is neither just nor generous. I may add to this that I had little money, and with this little administered to the necessities of a beloved mother until I was fifty-seven. If I have done wrong, I hope God and the sex will forgive me. It is my duty now to bestow the pittance I may have to spare upon the widows and fatherless girls, and poor married men.

N. C.1

Asbury's Work Oppresses Him.

Monday, February 27. At Gardener's bridge I spoke to many hearers on Luke iv, 18, 19. It was very

chilly. In the evening we came to John Watt's. Thirty miles to-day, without fire or food, from seven to five o'clock in the evening. On *Tuesday*, being unwell, Brother M'Caine officiated for me. "I groan, being burdened"—seven conferences to appoint the stations in; to officiate in the General Conference of this year; seventeen States to visit, requiring a ride of five thousand miles, at the rate of twenty, thirty, and forty miles a day. O Lord, give me support! for every day, every hour, and every moment is a time of need with me. We rode up to Colonel Samuel Williams's, twenty miles. At Williams's chapel, Taylor's ferry, truly the *great ones* were present to hear, and I preached to them upon the *great salvation*; to little purpose I fear. We have small fruit of twenty-five years of faithful labors upon the rich lands of Roanoke.

Va.]

Lot in Sodom.

Friday, March 16. At the court-house in Elizabeth City, Pasquotank county, I preached upon Matt, vii, 7-11. Many heard, but few felt. I dined with Mr. Mitchell, a lone Methodist from Cornwall, Great Britain: Lot in Sodom. The site of this place is beautiful for its land and water prospects, and the situation is good for trade. We rode on to Camden, and had to beg a lodging of Mr. Joseph Sandlin, who belongs to the Baptists. These people carry the day here in respectability and numbers.

A Female Charitable Society.

Monday, 19, I preached at James Wilson's; *Tuesday* at Cutherell's; *Wednesday* at Portsmouth; *Thursday* at Norfolk; and on *Friday* and *Saturday* I was

housed. At a meeting of the women we laid the foundation of a female charitable society of Norfolk, similar in plan to those of New York and Baltimore, but more liberal. May this live, grow, and flourish when I am cold and forgotten!

A New Chapel—"I Named it Ebenezer."

Sabbath Day, 25. I preached at Norfolk upon Matt. xxviii, 19, 20; and at Portsmouth, in the afternoon, my subject was 1 Peter ii, 9-12.

Monday, 26. I preached at a new meeting-house fourteen miles up the road toward Suffolk. Here, after thirty years' labor, first and last, we have a chapel; I named it Ebenezer. At Suffolk, on *Tuesday*, unwell as I was, labor went hard with me. I had an almost total obstruction of perspiration, but a pulpit sweat relieved me in a good degree. My soul is calm.

A Retrospect.

Sunday, April 8. I spoke on 2 Peter iii, 7-11, at the Olive Branch chapel. I am taking leave of the people every visit. I have made up one thousand miles, from Augusta, Georgia, to Brunswick county, Virginia. In old Virginia I have administered the word thirty years. There is a great mortality among the aged. Our old members drop off surprisingly; but they all, by account, die in the Lord, and in general triumphantly. Now I have finished my tour of duty for the past month. To ride twenty and thirty miles a day; to preach, baptize, and administer the Lord's Supper; to write and answer letters, and plan for myself and four hundred preachers—O Lord, I have not desired this day, thou knowest! I refused

to travel as long as I could, and I lived long before I took upon me the superintendency of the Methodist Church in America, and now I bear it as a heavy load. I hardly bear it, and yet dare not cast it down, for fear God and my brethren should cast me down, for such an abandonment of duty. True it is, my wages are great—precious souls here, and glory hereafter.

Tuesday, 10. Our Virginia Conference began in Mecklenburg county, Salem. We sat six hours a day and wrought with great application. We had an addition of fifteen preachers, besides two dead, seven located, one expelled; so there was a gain of eight. I liked what was done; only, the preachers' experiences, the state of the work, and the circuits were not given; so we concluded to recommend a session of six days for the next yearly conference, appointed to be held at Edmund Taylor's, North Carolina, March 1, 1805. What I have felt was only known to the Lord; what I have done was for God and his Church. We have added, after a great mortality, one thousand members to the Virginia Conference bounds.

Md.] General Conference in Baltimore.

Monday, May 7. Our General Conference began. What was done the revised form of Discipline will show. There were attempts made upon the ruling eldership. We had a great talk. I talked little upon any subject, and was kept in peace. I preached but twice.

Thursday, 24. I came off to Perry Hall, on my way to Soudersberg, to meet the Philadelphia Conference. The Lord did not own the ministerial labors of the

General Conference. It was a doubt if any souls were converted. This made us mourn. I prayed for hundreds, but God did not answer my prayer.

Pa.]

Conference at Soudersburg.

Friday, 25. We came to Jarrett's and dined, and continued on to Benjamin Mannifold's. On the *Sabbath* we crossed the Susquehanna at M'Call's ferry, and came to Martin Boehm's. I preached at Boehm's chapel, and then came away to Soudersburg. The conference opened on

Monday morning, 28. We had great order. We sat five days and a half. There were one hundred and twenty-five preachers present, whose characters and experiences were brought before us. I preached twice.

N. J.]

From Philadelphia to New York.

Tuesday, June 5. I dined at Burlington, and lodged at H. Hamilton's. *Wednesday evening* brought us to Joseph Hutchinson's; at Brunswick we dined next day, stopping for the night with Mr. Flatt, Rahway, and on *Friday* passed through Elizabethtown and Newark and reached New York.

N. Y.] Thomas Lyell Proposes to Leave the Methodists.

Saturday, 9. Busy answering letters. On the *Sabbath* I preached in our house in John-street on Heb. x, 23-25. It was an open season.

Monday, 11. We spent some time in social conference with the preachers. To-day Mr. Thomas Lyell *spoke out* in a letter to me, saying that he wished to be located. I thought that I had discovered his de-

signs, and those of Mr. Dashiell, during the sitting of the General Conference in Baltimore. I am willing that he should belong to the Church people; I believe they have more need of him than the Methodists have. I answered Mr. Lyell by telling him that I would do what I could to procure him a location at the conference held in Boston.

It may suffice to say that our present conference was a happy one, and a conference of great business. We had sermons every day at noon. Fourteen deacons and eight elders were ordained, the last at the Bowery church, where I preached upon 2 Tim. iv, 1-4.

Conn.]

A False Friend.

Saturday, 23. We rode to Brother Wheeler's, dined, and rode on to New Haven. We have a good turnpike to travel on, and a good bridge to cross the Housatonic.

Sabbath Day, 24. I preached to a few souls in our small house on Heb. iii, 12-14. I have little leisure to journalize. My soul has constant peace and joy notwithstanding my labors, and trials, and reproach, which I heed not, though it come, as it sometimes does, from the good, when they are not gratified in all their wishes. People unacquainted with the causes and motives of my conduct will always, more or less, judge of me improperly. Six months ago a man could write to me in the most adulatory terms, to tell me of the unshaken confidence reposed in me by preachers and people: behold, his station is changed, and certain measures are pursued which do not comport with his views and feelings: O, then I am menaced with the downfall of Methodism, and my influ-

ence, character, and reputation are all to find a grave in the ruins !

Asbury Watchful of the Preachers.

Friday, 29. We came through Plainfield, Stirling, Scituate, and Coventry to Cranston, and stopped at General Lippett's.

Sabbath, July 1. I preached to a few people at Lippett's chapel ; my subject was 1 John i, 3-7. It was a gracious season to the speaker and the hearers. Sylvester Hutchinson, my traveling companion, gave them a sermon in the afternoon. I came this way only to hear how the preachers had conducted their work.

R. I.]

Through Rhode Island.

Monday, 2. We rode through Providence, dined five miles beyond Attleborough, and housed with a Mr. Guilds.

Mass.] Once More in the "Pleasant Town of Lynn."

Saturday, 7. A very sultry ride of twenty miles brought us to the pleasant town of Lynn. On the *Sabbath day* I preached upon 1 John iii, 1-3. The state of the society in this town is more pleasing than formerly. Peter Jayne, brought up among them, is an acceptable preacher. A house is begun for the preachers to live in. Sylvester Hutchinson preached in the afternoon. I spoke also, and read letters giving an account of the work in the South. O when shall we see such things in New England !

Sweeping Through the Towns.

Monday, 9. We rode to Salem, Beverly, Windham, Hamilton, Ipswich, Rowley, and Newburyport, and

so on to Salisbury. We had flies, mosquitoes, heat, dust, and weariness. We lodged at the sisters Eaton's.

N. H.] "Robed in His Gown"—The Contrast.

Passing through Saybrook on *Tuesday*, we saw one, once of our despised order, robed in his gown and sitting in his house like a gentleman, while we were beating along like Jonah. Well, the *end* is all.

Conference at Buxton—Fifty Conversions.

Friday, 13. We passed Doughty's Falls, on the way to Standish, and landed at Buxton.

Saturday, 14. Opened our conference. We admitted and elected nine deacons and two elders. We had preaching yesterday and to-day.

Sabbath, 15. We opened by prayer and exhortation at eight o'clock. At half after ten o'clock I took my stand in the woods, but in about forty minutes the rain fell. There were powerful exercises in the meeting-house until near six o'clock. The Lord appeared; several souls were brought under distress. I trust the fruits of this day's labor will be seen in eternity.

Monday, 16. We had preaching and the ordination in the woods; my subject was 2 Tim. iii, 1-7. It was an open time, and the work of God broke forth upon the right hand and upon the left. On *Tuesday* we hastened the work of the conference, and concluded after appointing our next session at Lynn, July 12, 1805.

Wednesday, 18. It is reported there were fifty souls converted to God. The work continued last night.

Vt.] Asbury Passes through Towns and States Comet-like.

Tuesday, 24. We came in haste to Westminster to breakfast. This is another pleasant little town; it may have fifty houses. At Putney we found a stream, mills, a store, and a tavern. Passing over a slate ridge, and through Dammerston, we came to Brattleborough, which we found a pleasant place, with the advantage of a stream, well employed as a mill-power. At Guilford we rested with Mr. Jacobs from three o'clock in the evening until *Wednesday morning* at five o'clock, when we took our departure from our host and from the State of Vermont. At Greenfield, in Massachusetts, we breakfasted, having passed Barnardston, the first village we entered in the State. We started away again to Deerfield, Conway, Ashfield, Plainfield, Commington, Windsor, Dalton, Pittsfield, and Richmond, and so on out of the State, but I was glad to stop fifteen miles short of Pittsfield, after riding over dreadful hills and rocks forty-five miles. We lodged at a tavern, weary, weary enough! We took our breakfast with Robert Green, in Pittsfield. Here we crossed the head branch of the Housatonic River, that winds its way by Stratford down through Connecticut into the sea.

N. Y.] Suffers from Hunger—Sympathy for the Preachers.

Thursday, 26. We lodged at Dr. Wager's, in the State of New York. Next day we directed our course through Claverack, and came in to Robert Sands's, Rhinebeck, about five o'clock. My mind hath been cheerfully happy and mostly in prayer. I was sometimes ready to wish I had no company, and no observations to make, to hinder my constant communion

with God. Since I left New York I have spent fifteen dollars feeding man and beast by the way, and my companions were also obliged to do so. I have seen the sufferings of our preachers and they have awakened all my sympathies. Seventeen times we dined, fed, or supped at taverns ; and well it was we had these to go to, else we had been starved. We have crossed the east and west ends of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, and have ridden about three hundred miles in the State of New York.

One Thousand and Fifty Miles.

Wednesday, August 1. We rose at five o'clock, and rode, fasting, over the rugged hills of Peekskill and Fishkill ; but we were willing to walk at times. We breakfasted with William Likley, from Aberdeen, Scotland ; he has been about forty years in the New World. We came on to Esquire Kirby's, and, having dined in haste, pushed on, and came, an hour in the night, to my *home* at the Widow Sherwood's. We have ridden fifty miles to-day, over a path so rough and uneven we could not get along fast. This hasty work interrupts that close communion with God my soul longeth after. I have made, I judge, one thousand and fifty miles since I left Baltimore, and there still remain one thousand miles between me and Mount Gerizim, the seat of our conference for the 1st of October next. *Thursday* and *Friday* I devoted to rest, reading, writing, meditation, and prayer. On *Saturday* I came alone to New York.

N. J.]

"Farewell to Tommy Lyell."

Monday, 6. We crossed the river in a calm, but we were dripping by the time we came to Newark. Here

we rested two hours, then hastened on to Elizabethtown, dined, and kept on to Rahway. The night brought us up at Amboy, with Benjamin Drake.

Tuesday, 7. We had a rainy morning. We have our ancient seasons—plentiful rains and cold weather. This will prevent the fevers. Mr. Lyell has engaged with Mr. Pilmoor's old congregation at £450 a year: so farewell to Tommy Lyell! I hope it may end well. We got as far as Joseph Hutchinson's.

Pa.]

Elder M'Clasky.

Wednesday, 8. I had a sweet, solitary ride to H. Hancock's. The next day found me breakfasting at Burlington, and by two o'clock I had reached Henry Manly's retreat. My mind is devoted to God. I had a pensive letter from Elder M'Clasky lamenting the death of his son—but *one*, but only *one*, alas! I wrote to Smith, Chandler, and Colbert, presiding elders. I preached once at St. George's upon Luke xvii, 5, and at the Academy, in the afternoon, on 1 Cor. xv, 58.

Del.]

"Forty-five Miles To-day."

Monday, 13. I came away from the city to breakfast with Sister Withy. I dined with Allen M'Lane and lodged with J. Hersey. Forty-five miles to-day.

Tuesday, 14. I took breakfast at North East, ordained James Cook a deacon, and came on to Perry Hall. Forty-five miles to-day. I found the family of P. H. absent; they are gone to Bath.

Wednesday, 15. I rested, being stiff and sore. My poor beast should have had three days to perform

that which she has done in two ; she shall rest three days in Baltimore. Thence to Mount Gerizim she will have only twenty miles a day, or less, to travel. Next day I came alone to Baltimore, where I remained.

Md.] Street Preaching and Female Prayer-Meetings.

Sabbath, 19. I preached in Light-street church ; my subject was Luke xiv, 25-27. At three o'clock I preached at Mr. Otterbein's on 1 Tim. vi, 6-10. This has been an open day with me. I am inclined to think preaching must be in the lanes and streets of the cities. I advised the preachers to go out to the church-yards ; to the sisters I recommended more frequent prayer-meetings. I revised the *Revised Form* of the spiritual part of our Discipline. I had long wished to separate the most excellent from the excellent.

Va.] Melancholy End of Joseph Cromwell.

Saturday, 25. Starting at six o'clock I made fourteen miles to Clarke's tavern, to breakfast, through mountain rain and over mountain roads. After a long absence I came once more to John Jacobs's. From him I had the account of the awful end of Joseph Cromwell. He had walked backward, according to his own account : three days he lost in drunkenness ; three days he lay sick in darkness—no manifestations of God to his soul ; and thus he died ! We can only hope that God had mercy on him. Compare this with what I have recorded of his labors and his faithfulness in another part of my journal. O, my soul, be warned ! Brother Jacobs preached his funeral sermon, and gave a brief sketch of his

life, his fall, and his death. His text was "Tell it not in Gath, publish it not in the streets of Askelon." How appropriate the choice! I have traveled through great heat; the people are generally sickly; but I have got along one hundred and sixty miles since I left Baltimore; thank the Lord and kind friends!

A High Compliment to the Local Preachers.

Monday, 27. After the rain J. Jacobs rode with me to Joseph Cresap's, upon the north branch of the Potomac. We crossed this water three times, and climbed over the mountain, but not without rain. Now I have left the traveling preachers to mind their own work, and I only make my appointments when I come to the places. The local preachers are my guides, and good guides and good aids and good companions they are.

Pa.]

Thirty-four Days' Illness.

Tuesday, October 9. After thirty-four days of afflictive illness I recommence my journal. I have been during my sickness at Harry Stevens's. Kinder souls than this family I could not wish, but there were many of them and others continually coming and going. I had two doctors, but at last was happily left to myself and Charles Conway. The fever subsided and left a cough.

Asbury More Tender of Others than of Himself.

Sabbath, 14. I preached. Riding brought on a daily fever and an inveterate cough. Brother Whatcoat being unable to ride at a greater speed than a

walk, I exchanged my mare for his horse. We made more speed by this arrangement, but his great beast jolted me in such a manner as I could not have borne in health. We have lost the Kentucky Conference, and have about eleven weeks for our trip of fifteen hundred miles to Charleston. We were compelled to spend a week at John Beck's.

Death of Wilson Lee.

Monday, 29. A summer's day. We rode twelve miles, near to Washington. On *Tuesday* we gained Joseph Taylor's, near the Old Fort. *Wednesday* we came to Union Town, seventeen miles. *Thursday* to the Crossings, twenty-four miles. *Friday* to Musselman's, thirty miles, and on *Saturday* to Joseph Cresap's to breakfast, making one hundred and twenty-five miles this week. Here we rested for the *Sabbath*. It is wonderful to see how Braddock's road is crowded with wagons and pack-horses carrying families and their house stuff westward—to the new State of Ohio, no doubt. Here is a State without slaves, and the better calculated for poor, industrious families. O highly-favored land! I saw the death of Wilson Lee confirmed in the *Frederick Gazette*. He died at Walter Worthington's, in Ann Arundel county, Maryland. Wilson Lee was born near Lewistown, State of Delaware. He was of a slender habit of body, but active, diligent, and upright in his walk, a pattern of neatness in his habits and attire, and full of gentleness, meekness, and love. His presence commanded respect; his zeal for God was great, and his labors successful and continually so. Few excelled him in the duties of a presiding

elder—it is not impossible that the toils of this important office have been too great for his feeble frame. He had been twenty years and ten months in the Methodist connection.

Va.]

An Empty Purse.

Tuesday, November 6. We breakfasted at *Quaker Brown's*, and then came on to Winchester. In the evening I preached in George Reed's house, and next day in the house of Elijah Phelps. On *Thursday* I rested and refitted. My body is in health, my soul established in grace.

Saturday, 10. The weather has been unpleasant, and our clothing needed improvement and increase; above all, I wished to see Daniel Hitt. My friends were solicitous for my presence at the quarterly meeting at Newtown. On the *Sabbath day* I preached feebly upon John i, 50. The Superintendent Bishop of the Methodist Church in America being reduced to two dollars, he was obliged to make his wants known.

"Wandering Without Friends or Food."

Tuesday, 20. We came to Robert Smith's—a very damp day. My mind was greatly engaged with God. On *Wednesday*, through deep damps, we came to David Thompson's, at the upper or west end of Powhatan county. On *Thursday* we crossed Appomattox at Clement's bridge, near a mill and small town of the same name. Our route led through Amelia—solitary Amelia, with its worn-out fields of hundreds of acres, and old houses falling into ruins. We lost our way, wandering without friends or food, from seven in

the morning until seven at night. We made about forty miles, and came, fatigued and hungry, to John Ryall's. Here we had entertainment good enough for a president.

N. C.] Friend Tomkins Expelled for Selling a Slave.

Monday, December 3. I baptized three children of Squire Hinton's. I breakfasted with them. We rode on to the Redfield ferry, upon Haw River. On *Tuesday morning* we breakfasted fourteen miles ahead with Brother Reeves at the Hickory Mountain. I ordained William Masters a deacon. I dined and lodged with him. God has blessed him; his twin sons, converted at the same time, are both called to preach the Gospel. On *Wednesday* we came away twenty miles to Bell's house and mills to see Alexander M'Caine. We had a night meeting, at which I saw extravagances frequently seen among our people. I believe, nevertheless, that the young people were sincere. On our way to Wiley Harris's we stopped at Mr. Fuller's to dine. On *Friday* I rode eight miles to breakfast with Ethelred Harris, and came on eighteen miles to John Randel's. On *Saturday* I thought it well to rest. I have ridden since leaving Baltimore nine hundred and eighty-eight miles. At Randel's I preached upon Gal. v, 9. In the evening I visited our former brother, my friend Tomkins. He was expelled for selling a slave. The Lord is among the colored people in this family.

S. C.] Four Hundred Conversions in Four Days.

Friday, 28. We came thirteen miles to Monk's Corner to breakfast; thence to the Ten-Mile House, fed our horses, and put off again and reached the

city. I think it may go for one hundred and twenty miles from Rembert's to Charleston.

Saturday, 29. I had to rest indeed. I was sadly sore. Many letters came from various parts which I answered. Daniel Hall made me glad by his account of the Suffolk camp-meeting. In four days they calculate there having been as many hundreds converted to God. On the *Sabbath day* I preached at Cumberland-street on John i, 50. I feel comforted in spirit. The sitting of this conference will not be in vain in Charleston. Two letters from Philadelphia announce to me that nearly one hundred souls have been converted in the different congregations since October. O, fire of the Lord, come down and consume the fire of contention in that unhappy place! I have a pleasing account also of the success of a camp-meeting in the State of New York.

Asbury Happy in the Solitary Woods.

Monday, January 14, 1805. We came to Mr. Lee's, dined, and came on, lodging at Lumberton, a town of about twenty families. On *Tuesday* we had another cold ride to Fayetteville. At the African meeting-house I preached upon Heb. x, 38, 39. It was a time of feeling, but eleven o'clock was no hour for some folks. I was invited to preach in the State House, but it did not suit my mind at all. The object of our visit was a Methodist congregation and society. Home is home. Ours is plain, to be sure, but it is our duty to condescend to men of low estate, and therefore I felt justified in declining the polite invitation of the Rev. Mr. Finn to officiate in his meeting-house.

N. C.] Nearly Three Thousand Miles since the General Conference.

Friday, 25. We reached Newbern, twenty-six miles. On *Saturday* it rained. We have happily escaped it. We have made two thousand nine hundred and eighty miles since General Conference. We lodged at the Widow Jones's. Her dear James is gone. He appeared to be as healthy as any man in Newbern, but went off, after a few days' illness, of a pleurisy in the breast. Lord, and am I yet alive!

Crossing Tar River.

Monday, 28. We came away through a cold wind to Neuse Ferry. Swift Creek swam us, and the waters of the greater stream floated us across in a tottering canoe, the horses alongside swimming. A twenty-eight miles' ride brought us to the Widow Richard's to lodge. Arrived at the Tar River, we found it was blowing a storm. I was unwilling to cross. The flat was nearly filled with water shortly after we put off. A boat came out to take us up. Brother Whatcoat stood midleg in water. I had gained a plank and kept my feet dry, and it was well, as I had a touch of pleurisy, and had discharged blood yesterday evening. We came safe, and praised that God who in deaths oft hath delivered us. Brother Whatcoat preached at Washington in the evening.

Va.] O'Kelly on Government, Monarchy, and Episcopacy.

Wednesday, February 13. This day Brother Whatcoat preached at Joseph Moody's. God has wrought powerfully at Blunt's and Benn's. They are preparing a large house for public worship at the former place. General Wells and family have returned to

us. Willis Wells is coming back from following O'Kelly, besides twenty other members who had been drawn away. They profess to have had enough of him. Mr. O'Kelly has come down with great zeal, and preaches three hours at a time upon government, monarchy, and episcopacy, occasionally varying the subject by abuse of the Methodists, calling them aristocrats and Tories—a people who, if they had the power, would force the government at the sword's point. Poor man! The Methodists have but two of their very numerous society members of Congress, and until these democratic times we never had one. I question if, in all the public legislative bodies in the seventeen United States, there are more than twenty members Methodists. No; our people are a very independent people, who think for themselves, and are as apt to differ in politics, (so do the preachers,) and divide at the hustings, as those of any other denomination; and surely they are not seekers of the offices of this world's profit or honor. If they were, what might they not gain in many parts of the United States? While one rails at us, others, who are always fond of fishing in troubled waters, take those who are already in our net, or, hunting on forbidden ground, pick up our crippled game. See what believers their Church is composed of!

N. C.]

Conference Statistics.

Friday, March 1. We opened our yearly conference for Virginia at Edmund Taylor's, Granville county, North Carolina. We closed our sitting on *Friday evening* following. I have so frequently noticed the affairs of conferences, and they are so common, that I will only observe of this that we added fourteen

preachers, and located four. Our business was conducted in great peace, and we had preaching as usual. Our increase is one thousand nine hundred members.

Va.]

"I Hear, I See, I Feel"

Wednesday, 20. We came to Tandy Kee's. Here we found more children coming to Christ. I was pleased and cheered to hear from the local preachers the great things God hath done in this circuit. Brother Mead is coming to preside, and I hope he will have a glorious camp-meeting in every circuit in the district. Amherst should, by all means, have another preacher. I hear, I see, I feel.

Md.]

City Congregations "Preached to Death."

Wednesday, April 10. Came to Baltimore. I have been greatly supported, but afflicted in my breast and heart; it will not last long. I have made, I calculate, three thousand eight hundred and fifty miles from the 1st of *June*, 1804, to the 10th of *April*, 1805. *Thursday* was occupied in writing letters, etc. On *Friday* I preached at Old Town.

Sabbath Day, I preached in Light-street; I had a very heavy congregation. I fear the people are preached to death. In the afternoon I visited the Africans; my subject was Eph. iv, 1-6. Lord, look upon our city congregations, for they are a valley of dry bones!

Tuesday, 16. I preached at Fell's Point; it was a time to be remembered. I made my escape from Baltimore; low in religion. At Perry Hall I spent a night. The house, spacious and splendid, was newly painted, and the little grandchildren were gay and

playful ; but I and the elders of the house felt that it was evening with us.

Del.] Bishops Preaching before Judges and Counselors.

Monday, 22. I rode to Milford ; on *Tuesday* to Z. Hazzard's ; rested, and came to Lewistown, where we called a meeting, and preached upon Rom. xiii, 11-14. I was assisted greatly, and the people were engaged. We lodged at Caleb Rodney's. There may be in Lewistown one hundred and twenty houses and about eight hundred souls. We came thence to Georgetown, the seat of the courts of justice for Sussex county, containing about forty houses. As the court was in session we were offered the house and desired to hold our meeting there ; the judges and counselors attended ; Brother Whatcoat spoke, and I followed upon Psalm xli, 10 ; we had a moving season.

Pa.] Difficult to Walk Officially Straight.

Friday, May 10. We reached Philadelphia. Eighty miles in two days. Sarah Williams has left £200 to the disposal of Bishop Whatcoat and myself. We ordered its application to the Chartered Fund. Thank the Lord ! I am happy in the midst of the murmurs of many who are disappointed because I do not meet their strange expectations. O ! what a wonder if I walk officially straight when so many would wish me to incline a little to the right or left, as their whims and fancies would lead !

N. J.] Mr. Leecraft Entertains Asbury.

Thursday, 16. The roads heavy and damp. We came on to Brunswick, dined, and reached Drake's

for the night. Next day we dined with Thomas Morrell, at Elizabethtown, and lodged with Mr. Lee-craft at Newark.

N. Y.]

Mr. Wesley's Journal.

Friday, 31. I read the latter part of Wesley's Journal. How great and unceasing were his labors ; how various, comprehensive, and just are his observations on men, women, modes, manners, doctrines, opinions, authors, and things ! I have felt myself strongly urged to pray after every meal, where the families are in the habit of prayer ; but I believe there are Methodist households that sometimes fall in my way who never pray in this way ; and is this our poor success, after eighteen years of faithful labor ? God be gracious to us, and to such families and unfaithful souls !

Conference at Ashgrove.

Tuesday, June 11. We came twenty-five miles to Ashgrove, and next day opened conference. On *Tuesday*, the 18th, the conference rose at noon. We had blessed harmony and order, and I never heard less murmuring about the stations, of which there were sixty-two upon the list, and two having no appointments because of debility. The committee of business and the committee of addresses were very attentive to the affairs brought before them, and their labors were highly approved. By allowing the usual provision for the married preachers and their wives, (no supplies given for the children,) the conference was insolvent seventeen hundred dollars. There were about eight hundred dollars in money, and other

things, given to, and given away by, the conference. We had a sacrament and a love-feast on the *Sabbath*, and I preached; the duty was performed by others at other times as usual; but there were no special marks of good done.

Vt.]

A Ride in Vermont.

Thursday, 20. We came through Pownal, in Vermont, to Williamstown, the seat of the college—containing two houses, one probably sixty by forty feet, the other one hundred by fifty feet, four stories, of brick. We dined at Brother Kinney's, near New Ashford. Thence we came away to Lanesborough and on to Pittsfield. We have passed through a well-cultivated land of wavy, well-watered surface, roughened with rocks, and broken often enough by hills. We have had two days and nights of heat equal to that of Georgia. Some thunder-showers cooled the air, and our ride yesterday was pleasant, though laborious, through Washington, Becket, and Chester, and along upon the head-springs of Agawam River, whose meanders we followed upon a turnpike road winding among the hills of the Green Mountain, equal to any in the West. Forty miles brought us to Westfield, and we rested at Joel Farnam's. Mr. Knapp invited me to preach in the Congregational temple; but I refused, for sundry reasons valid to myself.

Mass.]

A Sad Disproportion.

Sabbath, 23. I attended at a Baptist church. My first subject was Isa. lv, 6, 7. My second, Acts xxiv, 18, 19. It was hard labor indeed. I rode home with Nathaniel Phelps, in Tatnam. I asked an aged man

at the meeting how many souls were computed to be in the town. Four thousand, was the reply. Not one fourth of these were at meeting. Here is room! It is a day of feeble things; and I am afraid that some of our friends instead of boldly facing them turn their backs upon their enemies, while others join them. Here Ralph Willston was well-known—once so full of fire, and what is he now?

Conn.]

Some of the First Fruits.

Saturday, 29. At Tolland quarterly meeting my subject was Jude 20, 21. It was a gracious time. On the *Sabbath* we had love-feast and sacrament. I ordained Nathan Fox, John Norris, and James Hyde, deacons. These are some of the first fruits. Tolland revives. We had some living testimonies, and several souls are brought into the Church. At ten o'clock we went into an orchard adjoining the chapel. I spoke on Heb. viii, 10, 11. Brother Washburn's text was: "Blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." Many exhortations followed, and prayers, with power. There was a great cry, and the meeting held without intermission until night.

Mass.]

The Times Changed in Boston.

Thursday, July 4. I preached at N. Bogle's meeting-house on John viii, 30, 31. We stopped *Friday night* at Waltham. On *Saturday* we reached Boston. O heat and dust! I felt like Jonah without his gourd.

Sabbath, 7. I preached in our complete little meeting-house, well-filled with hearers, from 1 Cor. v, 7, 8. It was an open time and gracious season. In the

afternoon Joseph Crawford spoke upon 1 Tim i, 15. The word of the Lord appeared to strike like sharp arrows. I feel as if Epaphras Kibby had been faithful in Boston.

Dr. Coke's Marriage.

Tuesday, 9. I received a letter from Doctor Coke announcing to me his marriage, and advising me that he did not intend to visit America again as a visitor, but rather as a sojourner (if at all) could work be appointed him to do. Marriage is honorable in all, but to me it is a ceremony awful as death. Well may it be so, when I calculate we have lost the traveling labors of two hundred of the best men in America, or the world, by marriage and consequent location.

Conn.] On the Wing Through Connecticut.

Monday, 22. We came in heat to East Hartford, and lodged with Squire Pitkins. *Tuesday*, to New Haven; *Wednesday*, to Stamford; *Friday*, to Peter Bonnett's, New Rochelle.

N. Y.] Asbury "Bent on Great Designs for God."

We have ridden two hundred and thirty miles in six days, some of them awfully warm. The earlier fruits and productions of the year have been very abundant; but without a rain, the latter fruits and grain must fail. I took a day to refit clothes and to write letters. At four o'clock I preached at Rochelle meeting-house; the subject suited the state of the town; the men were few, the women were many. The Lord was present with us. I lodged under the hos-

pitiable roof of the Widow Sherwood. On my road hither I thought I saw what would make a good camp-ground ; I wrote to the presiding elder advising him of this circumstance. I am still bent on great designs for God, for Christ, for souls. *Saturday* brought us through excessive heat and dust to New York, I would say ; but we were barred its entrance by proclamation, having passed through New Haven, afflicted with the yellow fever. I stopped at George Suckley's. Being a little unwell, I made the best use of the day I could by writing letters.

N. J.]

Through New Jersey.

Monday, 29. I preached in our very neat chapel at Second River. We came to Elizabethtown, and on *Tuesday* to Joseph Hutchinson's ; and *Wednesday* brought us up to Burlington.

Pa.]

"Then Away to the West."

Thursday, August 1. We found ourselves proclaimed at Philadelphia as at New York. We directed our course to Mr. Manly's seat, in the neighborhood of the city. I received several letters, from which I learn that there was great order preserved at Duck Creek Camp-meeting ; and that great good was done—three hundred souls were blessed ! On *Saturday* I wrote letters. I redeem a day by hard riding for this service. I have bought, for one hundred dollars, a neat little Jersey wagon. On the *Sabbath day* I preached at Germantown on Isaiah xlix, 1, 2. I returned to Mr. Manly's, and preached at five o'clock, at Mr. Manly's ; this day appears to have been poorly spent. I am waiting for the minutes of

conference and my little wagon—then away to the West.

A Cordial Reception and Christian Parting.

Monday, 12. We came off with courage, passing through Lancaster, still unpropitious to Methodism. Seven miles beyond Father Musselman received us with a smiling countenance, a willing hand, and ready mind. We fed, and talked, and sang, and prayed, and parted in the Lord. We crossed Anderson's ferry, the best I know on the river, and came into Little York. I stopped a day. O how kind our friends are at their beautiful retreat! may Friend Pentz, and wife, and mother, be blessed of the Lord!

Five Thousand at Camp-Meeting.

Monday, 19. The camp-meeting begins to-morrow at Short Creek, near the Great River. On *Friday* and *Saturday* we labored onward to Short Creek. I foundered my mare, and had many trials.

Sunday, 25. I preached at the camp-ground; it was a moving time. On *Monday* I preached again. It was judged there were five thousand souls present to hear, and that one hundred souls were converted to God.

I purchased a horse, and bent my course through Wheeling, on the banks of the Ohio; we crossed, and in the evening came to Morristown. *Friday* brought us to Muskingum; *Saturday*, we reached John Murphy's, and on the *Sabbath* I rested with Edward Teel. Joseph Crawford is sick. I have had little rest for six nights past. I have ridden, by computation, sixteen hundred and eighty miles since I left Baltimore.

Ohio.] "O Thou Pattern of Celibacy, Art Thou Caught!"

Monday, September 2. I preached at Richland chapel on 1 Peter v, 10. The subject was gracious, and so was the season. I find here the children of Methodists, according to the flesh, known elsewhere and long ago. Jonathan Jackson is married. O thou pattern of celibacy, art thou caught! Who can resist? Our married man was forty years of age. He has taken to wife a Mrs. Roberts—a poor, pious widow. Joseph Crawford is very ill. I cannot go on. I have sent sixteen miles for a bottle of wine for him. We started away on *Tuesday*, and came to Judge Vanmeeter's, at the Muddy Prairie, and dined and prayed. Brother Crawford still ill of a flux and fever. We stopped at Crouse's Mill for the evening. Edward Tiffin's brought us up on *Wednesday*. *Thursday* and *Friday*, Brother Crawford could not move on. Dr. Tiffin, the present governor of the State, administered some relief. I was happily employed in reading the Portrait of St. Paul, by the divine Fletcher. I preached at Chillicothe. We have excessive heat. My mind is in great peace.

A Four Hours' Meeting at Philip Gatch's.

Monday, 9. We missed our path, and went out of our way. We intended for the Falls of Paint, and went to Bullskin, twenty miles. We lodged with Michael Hains, who rode with us eleven miles. We passed Franklin, on the way to the town of Newmarket, containing eight cabins. We lodged at Ross's, and were kindly and freely entertained. The roads were heavy; but the wagon was a covering in

the heavy rain. The roads were dreadful to Williamsburg, Clermont county. We had a beach-swamp, mud up to the hubs, stumps as high as the wagon-body, logs, trees. After all, we came safe. *Wednesday* we lodged with Levi Rogers, once a traveling preacher, now a physician. We were greatly outdone, but we called a meeting at Williamsburg. Brother Whatcoat preached, and I exhorted. I saw several Jersey friends. On *Thursday* we rode on to Mr. Dimmitt's, on the route to Little Miami. We have made one hundred miles in four days. I was made glad to hear of the revival of the work of God in the new settlements. The local ministry have shared in this labor with the traveling preachers. On *Friday* we came down the east branch of the Little Miami to Judge Gatch's. On *Saturday* we rested, and I read and wrote. On the *Sabbath day* we held a meeting of four hours at Philip Gatch's. Brother Whatcoat's subject was, "Repent and be converted;" Joseph Crawford's, "I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ;" and F. Asbury's, "I have no greater joy than this, that my children walk in the truth." We felt quickened and comforted in God. Our route on *Monday* led through Columbia and the rich lands of the Miami. William Lives sent one to meet and invite us to his house in Cincinnati; I gave them a discourse upon, "Seek ye the Lord while he may be found," etc.

Ky.] Conference Sabbath—Three Thousand Hearers.

Thursday, 26. I visited Luke Hanson. Next day it rained, and I rested. On *Saturday* I stopped at Madox Fisher's, in Lexington. I was of necessity

in our old house on the *Sabbath day*; we could not preach abroad, the weather was damp. My sermon was the echo of my text: "Cry aloud and spare not." Joseph Crawford preached twice. On *Monday* I was unwell, but I rode to Jesse Griffith's, Scott county. On *Tuesday* we rested.

Wednesday, October 2. We opened our conference in great peace; there were about twenty-five members present. Six hours a day were steadily occupied with business. The committees of claims and of addresses did much work, and it was done well. I completed my plan for the coming year, and submitted it to the presiding elders, who suggested but two alterations; may they be for the best! On the *Sabbath day* I preached to about three thousand souls: On *Tuesday*, after the rise of conference, I rode to Lexington; and on *Wednesday* to J. S. Hoard's, Jessamine county. I was under affliction of body; but perfect love, peace within, and harmony without, healed every malady.

Tenn.]

Crossing the Mountains.

Sunday, 20. I felt very unwell from cold taken. We passed Quorton's Ferry, upon Great Nolachucky. In crossing the Paint Mountain, on *Monday*, we rode up and walked down, and I sprained my ankle.

N. C.] Asbury in Fellowship with a Presbyterian Minister.

We came into North Carolina, and lodged with William Nelson, at the Hot Springs. Next day we stopped with Wilson, in Buncombe. On *Wednesday* I breakfasted with Mr. Newton, Presbyterian minister, a man after my own mind. We took sweet

counsel together. We lodged, this evening, at Mr. Fletcher's, Mud Creek. At Colonel Thomas's, on *Thursday*, we were kindly received, and comfortably entertained.

S. C.] Preaches at Salem on Hosea x, 12.

We came into South Carolina on *Friday*, and lodged with Captain Edwards; and on *Saturday*, at Staunton's, Staunton's Ferry, Seleuda River, Greenville district, we were at home.

Sabbath, 27. At Salem I preached upon Hosea x, 12: "Sow to yourselves in righteousness," etc.

Ga.] A Marvelous Contrast.

Saturday, November 9. We reached Sparta. The heat was great. From Kentucky to Sparta, five hundred and sixteen miles.

Sunday, 10. I preached; my subject was 1 Peter iv, 17. Joseph Crawford gave two sermons.

Monday, 11. We came to Matthew Harris's, and next day I preached upon 1 Cor. xi, 30, 31. We drove back to Sparta that evening. I have ridden about fifty miles to preach to about twice as many souls. I would have gone down to the State, but appointments had not been made, and Brother Crawford grew very unwell. I judged it proper for him to go through a course of physic, and the weather was cold, and I wanted a coat. I only lamented that I could not see my poor black sheep at Buffalo Creek; but was glad to hear that *Ethiopia still stretched forth the hand* of faith and prayer. I feel very serious about the supplies of preachers for the South Carolina Conference: some are sick, some are settling in life—men of feeble minds. But let the

Head of the Church see to his own work—it is not mine. Why should I despond? What was the work thirty-seven years ago, when there were but two local preachers—one in New York, and one in Maryland? Now there are two thousand local, and four hundred traveling preachers.

S. O.]

The Highest Steeple.

Sunday, December 8. I was in great heaviness through manifold temptations; yet I preached in Cumberland-street in the morning, and at Bethel in the afternoon. I was happy and had great openings. I fear sometimes that my commission will wear out among one description of people here. Religion of a certain kind must be very valuable, since we spend so much to support it. There must be a prodigious revival in the Independent society—a building of theirs will cost fifty, or, perhaps, one hundred thousand dollars. There is a holy strife between its members and the Episcopalians who shall have the highest steeple; but I believe there is no contention about who shall have the most souls converted to God.

Northern Letters—Dr. Chandler's Wonderful Report.

Thursday, 12. We pursued a blind road to the ferry. We came on to Murray's, and continued along to Mr. Coleman's, a German. Next day we reached Rembert Hall. We had hot weather—man and beast felt the burden.

Some of my northern letters have come in. They bring good news: camp-meetings at Albany, New York; at Lebanon, Vermont; in the New Hampshire districts; all successful. But O, the wonders

of Doctor Chandler's report ! He says his authority bids him say that at Duck Creek camp-meeting five hundred souls ; at Accomac camp-meeting four hundred ; at Annamessex chapel, in the woods, two hundred ; at Somerset, Line chapel, one hundred and twenty ; at Todd's chapel, Dorset, two hundred ; at Caroline quarterly meeting, seventy-five ; all, all these profess to have received converting grace !

Asbury's Observations on Haweis's Church History.

Monday, 16. I wrote to Elders Broadhead and Chandler. This week writing letters and reading Haweis's Church History. By this work I learn it is the author's opinion that the evangelists were chief, superintending, episcopal men ; aye, so say I, and that they prescribed forms of discipline, and systematized codes of doctrine. After the death of the apostles it would appear that the elders elected the most excellent men to superintend. This course was doubtless the most expedient and excellent. Every candid inquirer after truth will acknowledge, upon reading Church history, that it was a great and serious evil introduced when philosophy and human learning were taught as a preparation for a Gospel ministry. "Hitherto," says our author, in his observations on the close of the second century, "not a man of eminence for science or letters had appeared in the Church. All of this time, whose works have come down to us, give thereby no evidence of human attainments—they bear the stamp of simplicity." Yet by these the Gospel had been supported in its purity, spreading it by their labors to the ends of the earth ; and these were they who helped to fill the bloody ranks of the noble army of martyrs.

Asbury in the Fortieth Year of his Ministry.

On the *Sabbath Day* I preached a funeral sermon for Abijah Rembert. There is a revival in the society here; so much for camp-meetings. I am now in the fortieth year of my labors in the ministry. Thirty-four years of this time have been spent in America, counting from October 28, 1771, to October 28, 1805.

Twenty-six Sermons during Conference.

Thursday, 26. I rested and read, and on *Friday* rode into Camden. I was favored with a number of letters giving accounts of revivals of religion. *Saturday* employed my pen. *Sabbath day* I preached.

Monday, 30. We opened our conference.

January 4, 1806. We closed our conference in great peace and order. No murmurs about the stations from preachers or people. Since we came here we have had twenty-six sermons, one of which I preached upon 1 Tim. iv, 12: "Let no man despise thy youth." Brother Whatcoat ordained the deacons. We see no immediate fruit of our labors, but doubtless we shall hear of it following our many prayers night and day.

N. O.]

A Somber View of Matrimony.

Wednesday, 8. We crossed Well's ferry after waiting an hour. A snow-storm kept with us from Pedee to Rockingham. Here the people would have assembled, but there was a wedding afoot. This is a matter of moment, as some men have but one during life, and some find that one to have been one too many.

Rapid Traveling.

Sabbath Day, 12. Unwell. Nevertheless, I took the pulpit.

Monday morning we made a start for Wilmington, and came to the Widow Anderson's, forty-six miles. Next day we took the round-about way by the bridges, and made forty-five miles. To ride ninety-one miles within day-light, in two days, kept us busy, but we are safe in Wilmington. My affliction upon my breast was great.

Frightened Horses—God Preserves.

Thursday, 23. We came into Newbern, twenty-three miles. The prospects here are good. The providence of God was manifested in our preservation to-day. Our horses took fright while in the wagon, and were off like fire. They happily struck, and locked a wheel on a poplar. The swingle-tree snapped. No more. Less damage, if any, could scarcely have been done.

Va.] A Healthful Increase in Virginia Conference.

Friday, February 14. Virginia Conference began in Norfolk, progressed peaceably, and ended on *Thursday*.

We had preaching morn, noon, and night. Large congregations and many souls engaged. We have reason to hope that nearly one hundred souls were under the operations of grace. I ordained two elders and Brother Whatcoat twelve deacons. We have a rich supply of preachers for every circuit, and an addition of two thousand three hundred and ninety-eight in numbers, exclusive of the dead, expelled, withdrawn, and removed.

Md.] Preliminary Measures for a Delegated General
Conference.

March, 14. Our conference began in great peace.

Friday, 21. The stations were read off, and all concluded in great peace. Never had we a better conference in Baltimore. An answer was given to Dr. Coke's letter, I fear in a manner that will not please him. An order was passed that the *answer* should be presented to all the annual conferences. It was also recommended to the annual conferences to consider on the propriety of having a select delegated Conference. The Eastern, Western, and Southern conferences were counseled to take such measures as they, in their wisdom, might see best to produce a more equal representation from their several bodies to the General Conference.

Va.] Asbury at Accomac.

Friday, April 4. We came to William Downing's, Virginia. At Downing's chapel I spoke on Rev. ii, 10. After sermon we rode to Accomac, and lodged at Mr. Seymour's. Here Joseph Crawford preached in the evening.

Sunday, 6. That no time might be lost we started away at eight o'clock in the morning to Brother Watt's, twenty-seven miles. My subject was Isaiah xxxiii, 14-16: "The sinners in Zion are afraid," etc. I preached in the court-house, Accomac. It was an alarming season. The cold was great, and the winds are high. No rain—it is judgment-weather—O Lord, arise!

Del.] From Milford to Wilmington.

Wednesday, 9. I preached at Milford, and then rode on to Dover and took up Father Whatcoat. On the

way he was taken with a fit of the gravel, and I was afraid would die. I preached in Dover next day. We afterward rode to Duck Creek Cross Roads in a snow-storm. Here the people are all very fervent, and the children praise the Lord. Joseph Crawford preached.

Friday, 11. We came in, on as cold a day as one would wish who was fond of extremes, to Wilmington, forty miles. Ah, but I must preach! Well, I gave them a sermon at seven o'clock. The Africans here have a house to themselves, of stone, and equal in size to that of the whites.

Pa.] From Baltimore to Philadelphia—Conference.

Saturday, 12, brought us to Philadelphia. From Baltimore, round by the Eastern Shore, hither, has cost us, by computation, five hundred and fifty miles. I have been greatly supported in body and mind; glory be to God!

Sabbath, 13. I preached at St. George's upon 2 Pet. i, 12-14. At the Academy I spoke on James v, 7, 8. Many of the preachers were already in the city for conference. In the sitting of conference we had so much irregular, desultory work that we went on slowly. We had sixty-three members present for traveling, besides those to be received in locations, and as supernumerary and worn out. Dr. Coke's letter was answered by a committee of ten preachers.

Monday, 21. Conference rose. Of seventy-six preachers stationed, all appeared to be pleased but two or three; but neither they nor any one else can know the difficulties I had to encounter in the arrangement of the stations. Brother Whatcoat was

left very ill at Dover ; perhaps he is dead. Eight deacons and six elders were ordained. I preached three times. I hope many souls will be converted in consequence of the coming together of this conference—having had great peace in the societies, and sound, sure preaching three times a day.

N. J.] Asbury at Sharptown and Salem.

Tuesday, 22. We came to Gloucester Point, and on to Carpenter's bridge. Here we have a Quaker-Methodist meeting-house. I preached upon 2 Peter i, 4. Heavy as I was, I had some openings. I visited my old friends Thomas and Margaret Taper. At Sharptown on *Wednesday*; no appointment. I walked to the meeting-house. In the burying-ground I saw the graves of some of the faithful. Among these that of John Venneman, once a traveling preacher. We rode to John Frith's, Salem. No appointment.

N. Y.] Great Camp-meeting at Philips's Manor.

Wednesday, May 7. I viewed the ground at Philips's Manor, selected for our camp-meeting. In the evening we came to Sherwood's Vale, and at night I went to the camp-ground and looked on at the people busy clearing the ground, fixing the seats, and building the stand.

Thursday, 8. I rested and wrote.

Friday, 9. Began with a storm, but the people came through it, bringing their tents and baggage, weary with walking.

Sunday, 11. I preached. It was an open season. Companies, here and there dispersed, kept up the exercise of singing and prayer through the day and

far into the night. The Brooklyn tent was all prayer the greater part of the time.

There were between eighty and one hundred official members present, about one thousand Methodists, and some presumed about six thousand souls were on the ground at different times. The people were so dispersed, and there was such a continual coming and going, I had no means of judging. I judge two hundred souls were made the subjects of grace in its various operations of conviction, conversion, sanctification, and reclamation. We had great order and great power throughout. Glory! glory!

An Important Paper.

Wednesday, 14. We came to New York.

Friday, 16. The conference commenced its sitting, and rose on *Thursday*. We sat seven hours in each day in great love, order, and peace. A paper was read setting forth the uncertain state of the superintendency, and proposing the election of seven elders from each of the seven conferences, to meet at Baltimore July 4, 1807, for the sole purpose of establishing the American superintendency on a surer foundation. This subject will be submitted to the consideration of all the conferences. The answer to Dr. Coke's letter by the conference of New York was read, to be submitted to all the conferences. I preached three times and ordained three African deacons. We had preaching in the Park as well as regularly in the meeting-houses, and a day of fasting and prayer for the health of the city, the success of our conference labors, and the prosperity of Zion.

Conn.]

"Sister Thatcher."

Sunday, 25. I preached at New Haven. After meeting I visited Sister Thatcher, rejoicing in perfect love. Perhaps she is near her end. Since the 16th of April, 1805, I have, according to my reckoning, traveled five thousand miles. Everlasting glory be to my all-sufficient God!

Monday, 26. I dined at Meriden, and lodged at Mr. Pitkins's, East Hartford. *Tuesday, 27.* I reached Thompson, forty-five miles, *faint, yet pursuing.*

Thursday, 29. We dined at Mr. Boyle's, Needham, and rode on to Waltham. A few young people are under the operations of grace here, among whom are two children of George Pickering. We rested here on *Friday*, and I preached on Phil. i, 8-11.

Mass.]

A New Chapel in West Boston.

Sunday, June 1. I preached in Boston. As usual with me in this place, it was an open season. Some souls were powerfully moved, myself for one.

Monday, 2. I took a walk to West Boston to see the new chapel, eighty-four by sixty-four feet. The upper window frames were put in.

Me.]

Camp-meeting in Maine.

Friday, 6. We went toward Buxton, to attend the camp-meeting. At two o'clock we came on the ground. There were twenty preachers, traveling and local.

Saturday, 7. I preached, and on *Sunday*, also. Some judged there were about five thousand people on the ground. There were displays of Divine power and some conversions.

N. H.]

New England Conference.

Thursday, 12. We opened the New England Conference, and went through our business with haste and peace, sitting seven hours a day. The York Conference address respecting the superintendency was concurred in, and seven elders for this conference elected accordingly.

Vt.] "Why Did I Not Visit this Country Sooner?"

Saturday, 21. Brought us over the heights of Onion River to Russel's bridge, thence to Bolton and Williston, dining at Brother Bradley's. After dinner we rattled along to Burlington on Lake Champlain. Here I saw a grand college—equal in exterior to that of New Haven—a state-house, meeting-house, and other elegant buildings. We passed Shelbourne into Charlotte, on the lake, and put up with Mr. Fuller. We have made forty miles to-day. I am resolved to be in every part of the work while I live to preside. It will be the best plan to bring on the sessions of all the conferences as early as possible, that there may be time given to all the preachers to go to work in the dawn of spring. The New England Conference ready for General Conference.

should meet about the middle of April, and thus be

On the *Sabbath* I preached in an upper room at Fuller's to about four hundred people. My subject was Luke iv, 18, 19, and God bore witness to his own word. Why did I not visit this country sooner? By moving the conferences to an earlier period in the year it might have been done, and may yet be done. What appeared to me to be impossible, I see now is very practicable.

N. Y.]

"Not Made for Such Scenes."

Wednesday, July 2. We came to New York. I had left my little traveling wagon to be sold at the Plains. On *Thursday* I came on to Aaron Hunt's. Joseph Crawford came over the ferry with me; when about to part, he turned away his face and wept. Ah! I am not made for such scenes; I felt exquisite pain.

N. J.]

Fourth of July.

At Newark I lodged with Brother Leecraft. I felt for, prayed with, and spoke to all the members of this family.

Friday, July 4. Noise, parade, seventeen rounds, and then to breakfast. I stole away quietly from this bustle toward Rockaway.

Pa.]

Death of Bishop Whatcoat.

Tuesday, 8. I was on the road at five o'clock. After writing some letters, I preached at Kingston at five o'clock on Acts xx, 24. On my return I found a letter from Doctor Chandler declaring the death of Bishop Whatcoat, that father in Israel, and my faithful friend for forty years—a man of solid parts; a self-denying man of God. Who ever heard him speak an idle word? when was guile found in his mouth? He had been thirty-eight years in the ministry—sixteen years in England, Wales, and Ireland, and twenty-two years in America; twelve years as presiding elder, four of this time he was stationed in the cities, or traveling with me, and six years in the superintendency. A man so uniformly good I have not known in Europe or America. He had long been afflicted with gravel and stone, in which afflic-

tions, nevertheless, he traveled a great deal—three thousand miles the last year. He bore in the last three months excessively painful illness with most exemplary patience. He died in Dover on the 5th of *July*, and his mortal remains were interred under the altar of the Wesley Dover church. At his taking leave of the South Carolina Conference I thought his time was short. I changed my route to visit him, but only reached within a hundred and thirty miles ; death was too quick for me.

Del.]

Preaches at North East.

Friday, 11, I came to Wilmington ; and on *Saturday* to North East. On the *Sabbath* I preached. *Monday* brought me to Perry Hall, and on *Tuesday* I reached Baltimore.

Md.]

A Thankful Sickness.

Sunday, *August* 3. I am here at John Davenport's. I have been sick, and laid up since *Thursday* last. Copious bleeding, emetics, cathartics, and bark have had their turns. The fever, since the day before yesterday, has left me. I have been providentially favored with a good physician, kind friends, and temperate heat ; the Lord hath done this well. I might have been taken among strangers and have had more pain. Recollecting I had never preached in the neighborhood, and feeling a little unwilling to pass another dumb *Sabbath*, we called a solemn assembly, as much as if we had come to the funeral of one of the family ; my subject was 1 Kings viii, 35-39. I was rapid for about an hour. They are faithfully warned ; let them look to it.

Va.]

Diversity, Charity, Unity.

Tuesday, 19. Friendship and good fellowship seem to be done away between the Methodists and Presbyterians ; few of the latter will attend our meetings now. Well, let them feed their flocks apart ; and let not Judah vex Ephraim, or Ephraim, Judah ; and may it thus remain, until the two sticks become one in the Lord's hands !

Tenn.]

Asbury's Generous Nature Illustrated.

Saturday, September 20, the Western Conference commenced its sitting, and ended on *Monday*. The Mississippi missionary preachers could not be spared, they thought, from their work, and therefore did not come. We had great peace. There are fourteen hundred added within the bounds of this conference. Of the fifty-five preachers stationed all were pleased. In unison with the preceding conferences, an answer was given to Dr. Coke's letter. We had preaching at noon and night, and good was done. The brethren were in want, and could not suit themselves, so I parted with my watch, my coat, and my shirt. By order of the conference I preached a funeral discourse on the death of our dear friend Whatcoat from John i, 47-50 ; there were not far from two thousand people present.

N. C.]

Over the Mountains.

Wednesday, October 1. I preached at Samuel Edney's. Next day we had to cope with Little and Great Hunger Mountain. Now I know what Mills Gap is, between Buncombe and Rutherford. One of the descents is like the roof of a house for nearly

a mile. I rode, I walked, I sweat, I trembled, and my old knees failed.

S. C.] Wesley's Sermons Wake the Powers of Asbury's Soul.

Monday, 20. I rode to Rembert Hall, eleven hundred and twenty miles from Philadelphia, in health, and, I trust, in holiness. Glory to God!

Tuesday, 21. Reading closely. *Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, and Saturday,* reading the eighth and ninth volumes of Wesley's Sermons; they wake the powers of my soul. Abstinence and prayer. I feel my mind in great peace, and a stayed trust that the Lord will provide for the South Carolina Conference. Let the preachers go, as they have done, to their farms and their merchandise, yet I am greatly confident of the success of the cause of God in these parts.

Bound for Charleston.

Monday, 27. I am bound for the city of Charleston. We sought lodging at two houses at Bruton's Lake. We found it at Mr. Martin's. On *Tuesday* we made twenty-five miles to Murray's Ferry. At Long Ferry, to which we were obliged to steer, we were detained five hours through the swamp; heat and mosquitoes plenty. We rode twenty miles after sundown to get to Mr. Hatchett's, at Monk's Corner; the family being sick, we went to Mr. Jones's, who kindly entertained us; we made fifty miles to-day, and came to lodgings about ten o'clock at night. On *Wednesday* we came through heat and heavy roads to Charleston, where we found all things well and in good order. Lewis Myers is an economist.

How Employed in Charleston.

Sunday, November 2. At Cumberland-street church I preached in the morning, and at Bethel in the afternoon.

Monday, 3. Neither unemployed, nor triflingly. If we call for social prayer seven times a day there are none to complain ; the house is our own, and profane people board not with us. My time is spent in reading, writing, and receiving all who come, whites and Africans ; I am sometimes called away in the midst of a letter. God the Lord is here. I am happy that we have finished our new church, and bought an acre of ground ; should I live long, I shall see a house in the Northern Liberties of Cooper River. On *Tuesday* I wrote a letter to Dr. Coke, giving a general statement of the late work of God upon our continent.

Sunday, 9. I preached again in Cumberland church, on 2 Cor. iv, 17, 18. I spoke under serious depression of body and mind ; in the afternoon I gave them a discourse at the Bethel church upon Phil. i, 27-30. I have read many pages of Church History, written twelve long letters, preached four sermons, and received all visitors, and spoken to them on the concerns of their souls.

Ga.] "I Shall Take Care of These Youngsters."

Sabbath, 16. The morning was cold, and few hearers ; my subject was Rom. xiii, 2. *High time* indeed. In the afternoon I spoke again on Heb. xi, 25, 26. I wrote to Daniel Hitt on things sacred. I am grieved to have to do with boys. Hugh Porter had written to this town about a station, and added to

the mischief he had formerly done. I shall take care of these youngsters. And behold, here is a bell over the gallery! and cracked too; may it break! It is the first I ever saw in a house of ours in America; I hope it will be the last.

Asbury's Independence.

Sabbath, December 7. At Tait's meeting-house I preached upon Luke xii, 40. It was a very cold day, and the house was so open we had little satisfaction. I visited Charles Tait, a judge; I did not present myself in the character of a gentleman, but as a Christian and a Christian minister; I would visit the President of the United States in no other character. True, I would be innocently polite and respectful, no more.

"A Rumpus—Lawyers and Doctors in Arms."

Thursday, 25. Our new chapel at Liberty is thirty by fifty feet. I gave them a sermon in it on 1 Peter iv, 3–5. Lodged at Joshua Moore's. On *Friday* I found Myles Green preaching; I ordained him immediately, and then gave a discourse on Heb. xii, 1, 2. After meeting I came on to Sparta. I received a dozen letters from the north. More good news from Doctor Chandler. The work of God is wonderful in Delaware. But what a rumpus is raised! We are subverters of government, disturbers of society, movers of insurrection. Grand juries in Delaware and Virginia have presented the noisy preachers; lawyers and doctors are in arms; the lives, blood, and livers of the poor Methodists are threatened. Poor, crazy sinners, see ye not that the Lord is with us?

Conference at Sparta.

Monday, 29. We began our conference. The subject of the delegated conference was adopted, with only two dissenting voices ; these members, however, cheerfully submitted, and one of the dissentients was elected a member. All was peace respecting the stations. I was called upon to deliver a funeral discourse for Bishop Whatcoat. We have fifty traveling preachers in this conference this year, and an increase of one thousand members.

S. C.]

"Redeeming the Time."

On *Thursday, January 1, 1807*, we set out for Columbia, dining in the woods on our route ; it was excessively cold. I preached in Mr. Harrison's house in the evening. Next day we came to Camden. *Saturday* brought us to Rembert Hall. We have been redeeming time by riding two hundred and twenty miles in five days. I must now answer thirteen letters in two days. My body is afflicted, but I am kept in perfect love.

N. C.]

"Cold, Sick, and Faint."

Friday, 16, brought us through Lumberton, in North Carolina, lodging with Peter Gautier. We found ourselves obliged to ride on the Lord's day through the cold to Wilmington, crossing two rivers in a snow and hail storm. I have ridden four hundred and twenty miles in ten days and a half—cold, sick, and faint ; it was as much as I could well bear up under.

At Newbern Conference—Statistics.

Saturday, 31, brought us to Newbern ; we had an awful storm of rain.

February 1. I preached on *Sunday* at eleven o'clock.

Wednesday, 4. We have used great diligence in our conference labors, and have been faithful to the pulpit. I preached to-day on 1 Cor. ii, 5. On the *Sabbath* I preached to the whites on John iii, 16, and to the Africans on Eph. vi, 5-8. Much might be said ; I will only observe that we have sixty-seven preachers, and have added three thousand one hundred and fifty-nine to this conference bounds. We have since our sitting here known that there are twenty whites converted and as many blacks. These blessings on our labors pay all expenses, reward all toils in the midst of suffering and excessively cold weather.

Va.] "A Cut of Dry Bread on the Cold Ground."

Friday, 13. We came to Suffolk. I had sent on a messenger and found a congregation, to whom I spoke a few words on 1 Pet. iii, 10-12. We felt a present God. At Norfolk I preached for them, and at Portsmouth. On *Monday* we came away to General Wells's, Isle of Wight county, and next day called upon Willy Blunt on our way to Birdsong's. *Wednesday* brought us through a proper storm to Petersburg ; the streets were not easily passable. We lodged on *Thursday night* in Richmond at the house of Widow Tucker ; the road hither nearly mired us. On *Friday* we lodged at William Smith's ; these are friends to camp-meetings and gracious souls. A long ride of forty-two miles brought us to Fredericksburg on

Saturday; we got a little fodder for our horses, and took a cut of dry bread on the cold ground ourselves. My mind enjoys great peace, and yet there are subjects that might disturb it, but I pass them over. I am not fond of hurting the feelings of people.

Md.] Baltimore Conference—One Hundred Members.

Saturday, March 7. Our conference commenced in sitting on *Monday*, and rose this evening. There were a hundred and one members upon the list; eighteen of these were additions made. We had a great deal of faithful preaching. On the *Sabbath* I preached at the Point, and at Light-street I gave them my last discourse. I was in affliction and unwell, but always in peace. God is all and in all.

Va.] Asbury Sick, but Traveling.

Monday, 23. We came to dear William Downing's, in Accomack. I came in late and unwell.

Tuesday, 24. When I should have gone to preach, I went to bed ill with a bilious colic and fever. We came to Snow Hill on *Wednesday*; my chill and sickness continued, and Daniel Hitt preached. We kept on to Poplartown, and stopped at C. Hazzard's. Still unwell.

Del.] Milford the Place of Bishop Whatcoat's Last Sermon.

Friday, 27. At Milford Bishop Whatcoat preached his last sermon; and as I preached here upon 2 Tim. iv, 7, 8, it came as a matter of course to make some observations on his character, labors, piety, and death.

Pa.]

Philadelphia Conference.

Wednesday, April 1. We arrived in Philadelphia.

Friday, 10. Our conference commenced in session on *Thursday* the 2d, and finished to-day. We progressed and finished in great peace. The preachers took their stations very willingly for aught I know. Seven deacons and four elders were ordained. On the *Sabbath*, at St. George's, I preached on Rev. ii, 10. The subject of Bishop Whatcoat was incorporated into my discourse at the Tabernacle; my text was Rev. xiv, 13. There was preaching in our houses as usual on conference occasions.

N. J.]

Great Prosperity at Bethel.

Saturday, 11. I came into New Jersey, and lodged with Daniel Bates.

Sabbath, 12. I stood up once more at Bethel, and spoke on Rev. xxii, 14, 15. God hath been in this society; in the last year forty converts were added at one quarterly meeting; the people cease to oppose. We hope there have been three hundred souls converted in one year in this neighborhood.

Grandfather Budd.

Saturday, 18. At New Mills I gave a kind of funeral for Bishop Whatcoat. I found old Grandfather Budd worshipping, leaning upon the top of his staff—halting, yet wrestling like Jacob. Ah! we remember when Israel was a child; but now, how goodly are thy tents, O Jacob! and thy tabernacles, (camp-meetings,) O Israel! Since October, 1771, I have visited New Jersey, but never have I seen such prospects. To God the Lord be all the glory!

N. Y.]

Conference at Coeyman's Patent.

On *Friday* 29, we made forty miles over desperate roads, and lodged at a tavern seven miles short of Coeyman's Patent, where the conference was to sit.

Saturday, May 2. We met with such of the members of the conference as were present.

Saturday, 9. We concluded our labors.

Vt.] Crossing the Green Mountain—Imminent Danger.

Thursday, 14. We boldly engaged the Green Mountain, of which we had heard awful accounts. I match it with rude Clinch or rough Alleghany. We found snow in the gap. A tree was lying across the path. In leading the carriage over it upset, but sustained little damage. Having dined at Pittsfield, we took fresh courage and proceeded on. When we came to White's River we were obliged to lead the horses as they dragged the carriage up the heights, over rocks, logs, and cavings-in of the earth. Arrived at the Narrows, we found that the bank had given way and slidden down. I proposed to work the carriage along over by hand, while Daniel Hitt led the horses. He preferred my leading them, so on we went, but I was weak and not enough attentive, perhaps, and the mare ran me upon a rock. Up went the wheel, hanging balanced over a precipice of fifty feet—rocks, trees, and the river between us. I felt lame by the mare's treading on my foot. We unhitched the beast and righted the carriage, after unloading the baggage, and so got over the danger and difficulty. But never in my life have I been in such apparent danger. O Lord, thou hast saved man and beast!

N. H.] Difficulty of Finding Entertainment.

Thursday, 28. We dined at Epping, New Hampshire, and came on within six miles of Haverhill. To travel forty miles a day, and be under the necessity of going into *dram* and sin-infected taverns: it is such a journey that teaches us the value of hospitality in the South, and the excellency of Methodism everywhere.

Mass.] Fifty-nine Ordinations.

Monday, *June* 1. Came to Boston. On *Tuesday* we opened our conference, ninety-two preachers being on the list.

Saturday, 6. Our conference rose. There were eight hundred dollars paid, and we were nearly three thousand insolvent. It kept us busy to preach five times a day, ordain fifty-nine to office, and inquire and examine into the characters, graces, and gifts, and appoint the numerous stations.

N. Y.] One Hundred Miles up the Mohawk.

Monday, 15. Faint, sick, and lame. I made twenty miles to Schenectady, and was entertained at Isaac Johnson's. He is a disciple of W. Hickson's, gained by preaching in the streets of Brooklyn, Long Island. I rejoiced to hear that Robert Dillon preached in the market-house at Troy. *Wednesday* brought us over Yankee Hill to Frank's. We came to Elwood's on *Thursday*, crossing Schoharie Creek. On *Friday* we rode ten miles out of our way, and made a long journey of forty-five miles. We came in at nine o'clock at night to Elijah Davis's. We have traveled one hundred miles up the Mohawk.

Asbury on his First Visit through Genesee and Tioga
Counties.

Friday, July 10. We directed our route through Newtown, upon the East Branch of the Susquehanna, to Showmang. Rested awhile at Jacob Cresse's and then passed the narrows of the river, continuing on by Shepherd's mill to Taylor's tavern.

Saturday, 11, brought us to the camp-meeting on Squire Light's ground. We found it had been in operation two days. God is in the camp and with us. I preached on the camp-ground from Matt. xviii, 2. The heights of the Susquehanna are stupendous, the bottom lands very fertile; but this river runs through a country of unpleasing aspect, morally and physically: rude, irregular, uncultivated is the ground, wild, ignorant, and wicked are the people. I am now on my first journey through Genesee and Tioga counties.

An Uproar Among the People.

Sunday, 12. My subject was 2 Cor. v, 20. My congregation may have doubled in numbers to-day, and there were no troublesome drunkards. I feel as if God would own this meeting now, and continue to own it many days, in various families and places. I ordained five worthy men local preachers, namely, Daniel Wilcox, John B. Hudson, Samuel Emmit, John M'Caine, and Nathaniel Lewis, to the office of deacon. Had I not made this visit these men might have waited a long time, or taken a long ride to find me. In the afternoon (*Sabbath*) there was an uproar among the people. Some intoxicated young men seated themselves by the women and refused to move until compelled. They fought those men who came

to take them away, and when the presiding elder interfered they struck at him, and one of the guards also, who was helping by order of the constables. One Kemp, chief bully, arrested A. Owen on *Monday morning* for the *Sabbath breaking*, drunkenness, and fighting of this Kemp and his crew. The presiding elder was charged with having struck Kemp and then running away. Nor was the poor bishop spared. He too had been fighting. It was well for him that he was not on the ground at the time. I was quiet in my room.

Entertained Like Kings.

Friday, 17. To Sutton's, ten miles. The house neat as a palace, and we were entertained like kings by a king and queen. It was no small consolation to lie down on a clean floor after all we had suffered from dirt and all its consequences. Once more I am at Wyoming.

Reading in 1807—Formality.

Wednesday, 22. We crossed the Lehigh to Allentown, beautifully situated ; superior in this respect, perhaps, to Bethlehem. We breakfasted at the end of twelve miles, and came on to Kuteztown. On *Thursday* morning we bent our course through Reading. The views of meadows and fields were grand—beautiful. Reading may have two hundred houses, one street in a style of grandeur approaching to that of Philadelphia, as it respects the houses ; the rest have much of the German feature. Through Adamstown, where we breakfasted, we came on over rocks and hills to New Holland. Here, as at Reading, there are fine new churches for the German

Lutherans and German Calvinists. These are the citadels of formality—fortifications erected against the apostolic itinerancy of a more evangelical ministry.

“What Hath God Wrought in America?”

Saturday, 25. We came through Lancaster to Columbia. On the *Sabbath day* I preached in a lot near the river. We may have had seven hundred people. My subject was 2 Cor. v, 14. The missionaries, Boehm and Hunter, were present. On *Monday* I came to Little York. Here I met with Nelson Reed. It is but too manifest that the success of our labors, more especially at camp-meetings, has roused a spirit of persecution against us. We shall never abandon them, but shall subdue our enemies by *overcoming evil with good*. What hath God wrought in America? In thirty-six years we find one hundred and forty-four thousand five hundred and ninety in number. In England, after seventy-seven years, they count one hundred and fifty thousand nine hundred and seventy-four. They may have thirty millions of souls in the three kingdoms to labor among, and we not more, perhaps, than five millions. Our traveling preachers, five hundred and thirty-six, at present; the rest, local and official, about fourteen hundred.

Va.]

On Virginia Soil.

August 23. I preached in an excellent stone meeting-house, at Short Creek, to about one thousand souls, from 2 Cor. iii, 7, 8. We crossed over into the State of Ohio on *Monday*, and I gave them a sermon in the court-house at St. Clairsville.

Ohio.] "Every Family Shall Know Me by Prayer."

By hard labor we reached Frankfort on *Tuesday*; thence we made Spears's on *Wednesday*; on *Thursday* came to Densenbury's; on *Friday* to Teal's. In four days and a half we have traveled one hundred and thirty miles—mud, gullies, stumps, and hills. Every family shall know me by prayer. *Saturday* I devoted to rest. I have hastily marked above two hundred hymns, taken from the Congregational hymn book, to add to a new American edition, which, I hope, will be as good as any extant.

Chillicothe Conference Statistics.

On *Monday, September 14*, we opened our conference in great peace and love, and continued sitting, day by day, until *Friday noon*. A delegation of seven members was chosen to the General Conference. There were thirteen preachers added, and we found an addition of two thousand two hundred members to the society in these bounds; seven deacons were elected and ordained, and ten elders; two preachers only located; sixty-six preachers were stationed.

Finding my work done, and my carriage sold, I ventured once more to take horse, with a determination to visit the frontier settlements on the Great Miami River.

Asbury Young Again.

On *Friday, 23*, we stopped in Cincinnati, and dined with Mr. Farris. Solomon and Oliver Langdon had come on, and were of the company.

Saturday, 26. Rested, read, and wrote. I am young again, and boast of being able to ride six thousand

miles on horseback in ten months. My round will embrace the United States, the Territory, and Canada. My companions and myself are busy compiling the new hymn book.

Ky.]

Camp-Meeting at Mount Gerizim.

Friday, October 2. Attended the camp-meeting at Mount Gerizim. On *Saturday* I spoke on 2 Tim. ii, 19. On *Sunday* my text was Isaiah xlv, 23. Possibly we had two thousand souls to hear us. We had a *Sabbath* love-feast and sacrament; and doubtless there were precious souls converted (report says about thirty) and sanctified. I conversed with Valentine Cook on the subject of a mission; he held back. Ah! how hardly shall they who have families growing up enter into and keep in the traveling connection.

Tenn.] Weary and Faint, but Disposed to Sing and Shout.

Monday, 12. We had a heavy ride to Holston, forty miles. We stopped with Martin Stubblefield.

On *Tuesday* we rested; and it may be allowed, considering our six days' ride through heat, great heat and drought. At night I preached from 1 Thess. iv, 3; and weary and faint as I was, I felt strongly disposed to sing and shout away as loud as the youngest.

N. C.]

Through Five States.

Sabbath, 25. Our journey hither from Chillicothe has brought us through five States. Report says there is an awful affliction in Charleston—the mortal fever. I preached to-day at Salem on 2 Chron. vi, 29-31; we had a serious time.

Ga.]

"A Sick, Weak Old Man."

Thursday, November 12. I was taken ill with an influenza.

Monday, 23. I have been one week sick at Sparta. This evening I arrived, a sick, weak old man, at Mr. Bush's.

S. C.]

Conference at Charleston.

Friday, January 1, 1808. Our conference began. We sat six hours a day, had great harmony, and little or no trouble in stationing the preachers. Preaching every noon to the conference and others. In my sermon on *Sabbath day*, at the old church, I took some notice of the life and labors of Bennett Kendrick and George Dougharty. The increase of members in the bounds of this and the Western Conference, for this year, is three thousand seven hundred members ; preachers twenty-three.

N. C.]

The Balance in Asbury's Favor.

Wednesday, 13. We reached Mecklenburg, and stayed with our friend Mechem Wilson, a Presbyterian minister, where we were comfortably and kindly accommodated. On *Thursday* we found the main branch of Rocky River unfordable. We stopped at Squire M'Curdy's. *Friday* brought us through Concord to Savage's. On *Saturday* we set out over the frozen roads, and stopped at the end of ten miles to breakfast with the Rev. John Brown, a Presbyterian minister in Salisbury ; thence we came away to John Hitt's. In this journey, on the one side I may put down cold, hunger, rain, floods, frost, bad roads, and

a lame horse ; on the other, prayer, patience, peace. love. The balance is greatly in my favor.

Va.]

A Methodist Patriarch.

Tuesday, February 23. For some days we have rested under the roof of Herman Hitt. He is now eighty-six. He has now lived to see four generations. He is the head of eighteen families. Three of his sons are preachers, Martin, Daniel, and Samuel, and his grandson William also.

Conference at Alexandria.

Wednesday, 24. I preached at Leesburg. On *Thursday* we came to Doctor Wright's, and thence went on to William Watters's. Here I rested, and read and wrote on *Friday*. We arrived in Alexandria on *Saturday*.

Wednesday, March 2. Our conference began. We labored diligently, and in great peace. On the *Sabbath* I preached and ordained deacons. Souls have been converted since we are here.

Md.]

Five Thousand Miles a Year.

Wednesday, 9. Our conference ended, and I came away to Annapolis. We came into the city about six in the evening. Have traveled all day without fire, food, or water. Since the twentieth of this month (1807) we have traveled five thousand miles according to my computation. I rested on *Thursday*, and preached ; and next day went to Baltimore. It was excessively cold, but we did not stop on the road. At seven o'clock I preached at Old Town. *Saturday* was a day of rest.

“Will Bonaparte Conquer the World?”

Monday, 14. I took a view of our new house ; large, and well constructed. I preached to the African congregation. On *Tuesday* we moved off to Bennett's. *Wednesday noon* found us at Howell's ; at night we were in Delaware, at Keagy's. O my soul, rest in God ! I am sometimes led to think the whole world will rise up against the pretensions of England to the dominion of the seas. Will Bonaparte conquer the world ? He may ; but will he govern it, and reign universal emperor over sea and land ? No, no, no. Here I rest.

Pa.] Asbury did not Please Every Body.

I preached in passing through Wilmington on *Friday*, and on *Saturday* we got into Philadelphia. I preached at St. George's twice ; at the Academy, at Ebenezer, and at Bethel, African. We sat from *Sabbath* to *Sabbath* in conference ; our business was conducted in great peace, but I did not please every body by the appointments of the stations.

N. J.] Swiftly Through New Jersey.

Monday, 28. We set out for the Jerseys, through which we passed swiftly to New York. We arrived on *Wednesday*. Jersey and York are blessed with revivals of religion.

N. Y.] Conference in Amenia.

Wednesday, April 6. Our conference for New York began in Amenia. On the *Sabbath* I preached in the town meeting-house, and ordained seven elders. It was a time of solemnity, and we had nearly fifteen

hundred people to hear. This conference is pleasant to me: I am near my work, I am not disturbed by company, and we make good progress with our business. I stationed eighty-eight preachers.

Conn.]

Conference at New London.

Sunday, 17. Easter Sunday. I preached in the Baptist meeting-house, the Baptists occupied ours. Theirs was the larger building, and we had it crowded. Conference sat until *Friday*; we wrought in haste, in great order, and in peace, through a great deal of business. There were seventeen deacons, traveling and local, ordained; and nine elders ordained in the Congregational church, before fifteen hundred or two thousand witnesses. I know not where large congregations are so orderly as in the Eastern States. There were deficiencies in money matters, but no complaints.

Methodism Advancing.

Monday, 25. We came in haste to Milford, Stratford, Bridgeport, and Fairfield to Stamford, forty-two miles. On *Tuesday*, a thirty-eight miles' ride brought us into New York. I feel my shoulders eased a little now that I have met the seven conferences. The increase this short year is seven thousand five hundred in round numbers.

N. J.]

From New York Southward.

Wednesday, 27. I preached at the African church, and ordained D. Coker and W. Miller.

Thursday, 28. We set out and reached a place ten miles beyond Brunswick in New Jersey. On

Friday we reached Hancock's. *Saturday* brought us through Burlington to Philadelphia, where we dined and stopped. At Kensington I preached a *Sabbath* sermon. At the African Zoar I also preached.

Md.1

Death of Mr. Gough—His Character.

Monday, May 2. We set out and reached Keagy's forty-two miles. On *Tuesday* we arrived at Perry Hall ; truly we came to the house of mourning ; the master is possibly dying. Mr. Gough is dead ; I saw and touched his dying body. Harry Dorsey Gough professed more than thirty years ago to be convicted and sanctified ; that he did depart from God is well known, but it is equally certain that he was visibly restored. As I was the means of his first turning to God, so was I also of his return and restoration. In his last hours, which were painfully afflictive, he was much given up to God. Mr. Gough had inherited a large estate from a relation in England, and having the means, he indulged his taste for gardening, and the expensive embellishment of his country seat, Perry Hall, which was always hospitably open to visitors, particularly those who feared God. Although a man of plain understanding, Mr. Gough was much respected and beloved ; as a husband, a father, and a master, he was well worthy of imitation ; his charities were as numerous as proper objects to a Christian were likely to make them ; and the souls and bodies of the poor were administered to in the manner of a Christian who remembered the precepts and followed the example of his Divine Master.

General Conference.

Friday, 6. Our General Conference opened in peace. On *Saturday* one hundred and twenty-nine members took their seats. The new church in Eutaw-street was opened on the *Sabbath day*, and I gave a discourse on the occasion from 2 Cor. iii, 12. On the *26th* the conference rose. We have done very little except making the rule for representation hereafter one member to the General Conference for every six members to the Annual Conference, and the electing dear Brother M'Kendree assistant bishop. The burden is now borne by two pair of shoulders instead of one ; the care is cast upon two hearts and heads.

Henry Boehm—Asbury's Traveling Companion.

Thursday, June 16, my companion, Boehm, went to Middletown ; I stayed at home and read. *Friday*, rain. I preached on Rev. iii, 20 ; Brother Boehm also spoke in German. *Saturday* we rode to Hagerstown. Our German brethren of Otterbeine's have shouldered us out, but have failed to establish themselves.

Va.]

Asbury Disabled.

Sabbath, July 17. With the aid of two crutches I hobbled into meeting at Brownsville, and preached on John iii, 17. I am sorely lame. I dined with Mr. Hogg ; a kind, polite English family. On *Monday* I had a severe ride to Chalfant's, and then on to John Brightwell's. I am fairly arrested in my course ; my knees and feet are so disabled that I am lifted to bed. I can neither ride, stand, nor walk.

Ohio.] A Decree, but Not of the Medes and Persians.

August 17. We dined at Brother Cutler's on *Wednesday*, and came on through Xenia to Frederick Bonner's, Little Miami, thirty-two miles. I have more than once put the wrong foot foremost in my journeys to the west: the spring will not do because of wet, and deep, and dismal roads; the summer's extreme heat, and the small and the green flies, make disagreeable traveling. I make a decree, but not of the Medes and Persians, never in future to cross the mountains before the first of September, nor leave Carlisle before the first of October.

Ky.] Disadvantages of a Local Episcopacy.

Friday, September 9. I feel for the people of the territory; but we must suffer with them if we expect to feel for them as we ought, and here are the disadvantages of a local episcopacy—that it cannot be interested for its charge as it should be because it sees not, suffers not with, and therefore feels not for, the people.

Tenn.] Conference at Green Hills—Slavery.

Saturday, October 1. I began conference. I preached twice on the *Sabbath day*, and again on *Tuesday*. Our conference was a camp-meeting. We sat six hours a day, stationed eighty-three preachers, and all was peace. We made a regulation respecting slavery: it was, that no member of society, or preacher, should sell or buy a slave unjustly, inhumanly, or covetously; the case, on complaint, to be examined, for a member, by the quarterly meeting; and for a preacher, on appeal to an annual conference. Where the guilt

was proved the offender to be expelled. The families of the Hills, Sewalls, and Cannon were greatly and affectionately attentive to us.

N. C.]

Jesse Richardson, the Veteran.

Saturday, 29. We have rested for three days past. We fell in with Jesse Richardson ; he is a veteran who has learned to "endure hardness like a good soldier of the Lord Jesus Christ." On *Sunday* I preached in Buncombe court-house upon 1 Thess. i, 7-10. I lodged with a chiefman, a Mr. Irwin. Henry Boehm went to Pigeon Creek to preach to the Dutch.

Henry Boehm and a Shout.

Tuesday, *Wednesday*, and *Thursday*, November 1, 2, 3, I rested, read, and preached but once. On *Friday* we descended the heights of Cooper's Gap, to our friend David Dickey's. Fasting, and the labor of lowering ourselves down from the mountain top, have made us feeble. Bishop M'Kendree preached upon "Cast not away your confidence." On the *Sabbath* Brother Boehm spoke in the morning at eight o'clock, I preached from Matt. xvii, 5 ; exhortations followed, and Brother Boehm ended our Sabbath labors by preaching at night, when there was a considerable move. We came away on *Monday* by Rutherford court-house to G. Moore's. At Moore's chapel on *Tuesday* I preached from Colossians ii, 6. Henry Boehm spoke at night ; verily we had a shout ! A noble ride of forty miles brought us next day to Williams's, in Lincoln. I preached on *Friday*. My mind hath great peace, but my body is weak. The prospects are reviving and cheering in the South

Carolina Conference, and they will grow better every year.

S. C.]

Asbury, Boehm, and M'Kendree.

Sabbath, 20. I preached in the tabernacle in Camden in the morning, and Brother Boehm in the afternoon, and Bishop M'Kendree at night. Letters from the presiding elders announce great times in camp-meetings.

"Great News—Baltimore Taken Fire."

Sabbath, 27. At Rembert chapel my subject was Rev. vii, 14-17. Brothers Smith and Boehm followed with energetic exhortations. I felt dejected in mind, and my soul was humbled. I suffer much from ill health, too close application to business, and from having preached in the open air. I filled an appointment made for Bishop M'Kendree at Rembert's. On *Monday* I rode forty-five miles to Mr. Keel's; we crossed Murray's next day, and stopped in the evening at the Widow Kennedy's. *Wednesday* we had a heavy ride, and I felt it from top to bottom. Great news! Baltimore taken fire—Bohemia has a great work. Camp-meetings have done this. Glory to the great I AM!

Glorious Prospects in Charleston.

Sunday, December 4. At Cumberland church we had a sacramental day. I preached at Bethel in the afternoon. We have a great change and a glorious prospect here in Charleston and in the neighborhood among both descriptions of people. By our colored missionaries the Lord is doing wonders among the Africans.

Wesley Mr. Asbury's Model.

Monday, 5. I am closely employed in reading and writing letters, and receiving company. Our house is a house of prayer ten or twelve times a day. I read Mr. Wesley's Journal. Ah! how little it makes me feel—the faithfulness, the diligence of this great man of God! I cannot meet the classes like him, but I have a daily throng of white and black who apply for spiritual instruction.

Ga.]

Two Bishops in Partnership.

Sabbath, 18. I preached in Augusta chapel. My flesh sinks under labor. We are riding in a poor thirty-dollar chaise, in partnership, two bishops of us, but it must be confessed it tallies well with the weight of our purses: what bishops! well: but we hear great news, and we have great times, and each western, southern, and the Virginia Conference will have one thousand souls truly converted to God; and is not this an equivalent for a light purse? and are we not well paid for starving and toil? yes; glory be to God!

Three Hundred Preachers at a Camp-Meeting.

Sabbath, 25. Christmas Day. I preached on John iii, 17. We opened our conference on *Monday*. We had great labor, which we went through in great peace. Between sixty and seventy men were present, all of one spirit. We appointed three missionaries—one for Tombigbee, one to Ashley and Savannah and the country between, and one to labor between Santee and Cooper Rivers. Increase within the bounds of this conference, three thousand and eighty-

eight. The number of traveling and local preachers present are about three hundred. There are people here with their tents who have come one hundred and fifty miles. The prospects of doing good are glorious. We have already added two new circuits and gained six preachers. There may have been from two to three thousand persons assembled. I preached once.

S. C.]

A Sabbath at Camden.

Sabbath, January 8, 1809. I preached in our enlarged meeting-house in Camden; it was a feeling season. We came away on *Monday morning* through clouds and a cold rain, twenty-six miles, to Brother Woodham's, on Lynch's Creek. I ordained Stephen Thompson a deacon. In crossing Cashaway ferry on *Tuesday*, it was a mercy we were not thrown into the water, like poor Hilliard Judge. We were kindly and comfortably lodged by Esquire Nevil. My mind most deeply felt for the salvation of this most amiable family.

N. C.] But Three Married Men in the Virginia Conference.

Wednesday, February 1. Opened the Virginia Conference. We had eighty-four preachers present, sixty of them the most pleasing, promising young men; seventeen preachers were admitted. In all the conference there are but three married men. The high taste of these southern folks will not permit their families to be degraded by an alliance with a Methodist traveling preacher, and thus involuntary celibacy is imposed upon us. All the better; care and anxiety about worldly possessions do not stop us in our course, and we are saved from the pollution of negro slavery and oppression.

Va.]

Conversion of John Ryall Bradley.

Friday, 17. I preached in Petersburg. After meeting I rode home with John Ryall Bradley, now warm in his first love. He was strangely brought to God. He was alone on a *Sabbath day* and was reading, what he indeed seldom read, his *prayer-book*; suddenly he was powerfully struck with keen conviction; he began to pray without book, and with all his might: what followed came of course. At his conversion he had a stud of race-horses to part with.

Asbury Glad to See the Preachers, But —

Tuesday, 21. A forty-five miles' ride, without food for man or beast, brought us in, after being twice lost in the woods, to Brother M'Gruder's. We reached Frederick Gilliam's, beyond the Green Mountain, on *Thursday*. We seldom lodge at a house without the company of preachers. We are pleased to see them, but would be better pleased to know they were on their circuits faithfully at work. On *Friday* we passed Charlottesville, within sight of fair Monticello, the seat of Thomas Jefferson.

Md.]

The Graves of Departed Friends.

March 9. We reached Baltimore on *Thursday*. *Friday* and *Saturday* received letters and visitors. My soul is greatly humbled in this city. I tremble for the ark, and fear my own soul will suffer loss.

Sabbath, 19. At Light-street my subject was 2 Chron. xv, 2. In the evening I preached again upon Hosea vi, 1. On *Monday* we went to the camp-meeting near Perry Hall, and I preached in the chapel

upon Philippians ii, 12-15. As I rode by the graves of the elders of the Gough family the image of my dear departed Harry Gough was very present to me.

Del.]

Names Sacred to Methodism.

Sunday, 26. At Milford my subject was Ezek. ix, 4. Very open and alarming time to saints and sinners. On *Monday*, at Barratt's chapel, I preached and baptized some children. I had powerful feelings of sympathy for the children and grandchildren of that holy man in life and death, Philip Barratt. We felt the wind, on our way to Dover, like the piercing of a sword. My dear friends, Governor Basset and his lady, came nearly forty miles to meet me. I preached in Dover, and baptized James Molison, advanced in life. I have suffered incredibly by the cold in the last hundred and thirty miles. Souls and their Saviour can reward me, and nothing else.

Pa.] Philadelphia Conference—Eighty-four Appointments.

Saturday, *April* 1. We came safe into the city of Philadelphia. I found letters from Savannah, Tombigbee, Mississippi, Ohio, and also from the eastward.

Sabbath 2. At St. George's my subject was Haggai i, 7. I was fervent. On *Monday* we opened our conference in great peace and good order. I preached on *Wednesday*, and it was recollected that I had preached on the same subject, in the same place, in 1771. *Friday* we observed as a day of fasting and prayer. Both elders and deacons were ordained. There was some little difficulty with respect to our money concerns, and some of the members had been rather warm partisans as politicians. This is always wrong for them, let them take which side they please.

There was general satisfaction given as to the stations—about eighty-four in the whole. The Philadelphia Conference has subjected itself to a demand for twelve preachers who have no stations. Six of these are married, and there is a widows' maintenance to be added, making an expense of two thousand dollars.

N. J.] New Jersey Methodism in 1809.

Sunday, 30. At Long Branch my subject was Acts iii, 26. It was given me to speak strong words—words of God, and from God. At three o'clock I preached in the Episcopal church at Shrewsbury.

Monday, May 1. No appointment at Mount Pleasant. We came on to James Throckmorton's, and thence through Brunswick to Staten Island. We dined at Drake's, and supped at Elder Totten's. I have had great peace of mind, and have been greatly in the spirit of preaching, of faith, and of prayer. God has visited, and will yet powerfully visit Jersey. Probably in the last five years five hundred souls have been converted. Glory to the great I AM! He will bare the arm of his power, and save millions in the world.

N. Y.] One Hundred and Twenty Preachers in Conference.

Monday, 8. I came to York, where I found letters bringing good news from the south and west.

On the 10th our conference began, and continued until the 15th. About one hundred and twenty preachers present. We had great peace and good order. We had an ordination of elders at John-street church on the *Sabbath day*. We had a great deal of faithful preaching. There were one hundred and fifteen preachers stationed, and there were few complaints.

The Quakers are Offended.

On *Saturday* I rode, through excessively warm weather, twenty miles to J. Sherwood's. On the *Sabbath* I preached at Sherwood's chapel; afterward at New Rochelle chapel. We had an open season in both congregations. The Quakers are offended because their errors in sentiment and practice are spoken against. But they have a *higher dispensation*. And will this authorize the violation of a positive law of the land which forbids unnecessary labor on the *Sabbath day*? Will it justify the putting asunder what God has so solemnly joined together, *to wit*, the ordinances of God and the influences of his Holy Spirit? So thought not the eunuch, when Philip, sent by the Holy Ghost, *preached unto him Jesus*. A *higher dispensation*! And had not God already revealed his will before the appearance of George Fox? But hush! the *respectable society of people called Quakers*; *respectable*! Ah! there is death in that word: "Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you." I fear what is properly *the reproach of Christ* has long been wiped away from this *respectable people*. O Lord, save thy now despised Methodist children from the praises of the people of the world!

Conn.] Want of Enterprise in New London.

On *Tuesday* I came to Peck's, Stratford, a faithful friend, and thence on to Father Jocelin's, New Haven, weary and sleepy, and glad to rest. In the afternoon I preached at Jeremiah Miner's, in Killingworth; thence crossing the Connecticut River, came into New London. I must needs preach in New London. I gave them a discourse on 1 John ii, 6. The house

was soon filled, and many went away who could not get in. Surely the society, and preachers too, have been blind to their own interests, or they would have occupied every foot of ground ; but we have never taken advantage of circumstances as they offered in this place, and have lost by our negligence.

R. I.]

Visit to Fort Wolcott.

Monday, 29, I visited Captain Beall, at Fort Wolcott. I preached to the soldiers on Isaiah lvii, 6, 7. Baptized some children ; visited the schools ; prayed with the sick in the hospital ; exhorted the poor sinners to turn to God. But, ah, I might have said and done more ! Here I saw discipline, order, correctness. It was grand and pleasing.

“Not Half Enough to Do.”

On *Tuesday* we came to the pleasant town of Bristol. The Methodists here have a house with pews, and a preacher who has not half enough to do ; poor work ! I gave them a discourse on 1 Cor. xv, 58. I have as much as I can bear in body and mind. I see what has been doing for nine years past to make Presbyterian Methodists.

Mass.]

Asbury in Boston Again.

June 4. We reached Boston on *Saturday*. I preached at the old chapel and administered the sacrament. In the afternoon I gave them a discourse in the new chapel ; it was an open time of much feeling, and deep attention was paid to the speaker.

Me.]

Conference at New Gloucester.

On *Thursday* we opened our conference, and sat closely to work.

Sunday, 18. I preached to about three thousand deeply-attentive people from Isa. xlv, 23 ; it was an open season. We have eighty-two men to do the work, forty of whom compose the conference. I have to lament my want of information respecting both the preachers and the circuits. We have ordained twenty-one deacons and seven elders. We have located eleven elders, re-admitted one, and added seventeen preachers upon trial. There is a small increase here, and fair prospects for the future.

N.H.] "O! the Rocks, Roots, Pole-Bridges, and Mosquitoes!"

On *Tuesday* we came away through New Gloucester to Bradley's. We rested a few minutes at Dennett's, Standish Corner, and rode onward to Samuel Bachelor's, upon Saco, making forty miles for our day's journey. The rain overtook us at Brownfield on *Thursday*, but we continued on, and were most kindly entertained at Samuel Foss's in Conway. On *Friday* I forded Saco ; the rest of the company were in a boat. We hasted on to Rosebrook's, supped and went other six miles. O! the rocks, roots, pole-bridges, and mosquitoes! We fell asleep about ten o'clock, and sprung up at four o'clock, and were away without breakfast toward Bethel: we stopped here awhile. Winding down along a river bank, we came to the bridge and crossed the Connecticut into Vermont, stopping at the Widow Sias's in Johnsbury. On *Saturday morning* we came away over awful roads, and made about forty weary miles to Danville.

Vt.] Asbury Obligated to Sit while Preaching.

Sunday, 25. In the court-house I preached from John vii, 17. I could only speak sitting. From New York to Danville we compute our ride to have been seven hundred miles ; we passed many a fertile hill, and saw many fruitful vales, through which flowed noble rivers. At Danville meeting-house, on *Tuesday*, We attended with two of our preachers ; I took a pew near the pulpit, and taught from thence on Heb. iii, 12-14. The court was in session—the congregations were large nevertheless. I received a polite invitation to preach to the court, but I had no strength and no time for this. On *Wednesday* our route brought us through Marshfield, Plainfield, (exploring to the head of Onion River as we went,) to David Parson's near Montpelier. I preached in the evening. In passing through Montpelier on *Thursday* we remarked their fine State House, worthy of the seat of government of Vermont ; to this the hotel is an appropriate appendage. Our way lay through Middlesex, Waterbury, Richmond, on to Williston, where, about midday, a storm overtook us. On *Friday* I preached at Fuller's ; on Lake Champlain, from Titus iii, 7, 8. Here I ordained Joseph Sampson, a native of Canada, and sent him a missionary to his countrymen.

N. Y.]

A New Route.

Tuesday, *July* 5. We kept along down Burgoyne's road to Fort Edward. At four o'clock I preached in Doctor Lawrence's store to about five hundred attentive hearers. It has been serious times for some days past ; I feel the effect of riding thirty or forty miles a

day, fasting long, and expected to preach every evening. *Thursday* brought us to Father Hart's, on Saratoga Lake, to dinner. After refreshing we went out under a plentiful rain, and mounting our beasts directed our course away to General Clark's. Here I preached in the bar-room, and had life and liberty. We have made nine hundred miles since we left New York, as we compute. There will be an increase of eleven thousand this year. On *Saturday* I visited Ballston Springs buildings—approximating in elegance to those of Bath in England. The water has a taste of beer, of lemon juice, and of salt of tartar. A ride of about forty miles brought us to Kingsbury in the evening.

"A Despised People Will Possess the Land."

I rode to Doctor Holland's, Onondaga, on *Saturday*, and preached in the court-house.

Sunday, 16. Spoke in the court-house at eleven o'clock; we had a full house. The New York and New England Presbyterians are laboring to monopolize this country by building meeting-houses and other establishments. They will flourish awhile, but a despised and dispersed people will possess the land.

Pa.] Asbury Depressed, but Rejoices in God.

Friday, 21. We were comfortable while resting at Dr. Hopkins's. Arrived at the ferry bank, no boat appeared, so I came back and called a meeting. God is with me, and souls are my reward. I may yet rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

A Bishop Unable to Stand or Kneel.

Wednesday, August 2. At Shippensburg. I have been simple enough to put plasters too powerful to my knees—they are in blisters ; so here is a bishop who can neither stand to preach nor kneel to pray.

Va.] Church Building in Virginia.

Sabbath, 27. At Short Creek chapel my subject was 1 Thess. iv, 3. I contemplate two chapels, one of forty feet square and the other of fifty feet ; the first in Charleston, Alexander Wells to give the lot, and the other in Wheeling, the ground to be bestowed for its erection by Colonel Zane.

Ohio.] Colonel Zane an Extraordinary Man.

Wednesday, 30. While tugging forward crack went the breast-band, and crack went the shaft ; we were two hours in the night, and at last reached Spears's tavern. Next day (*Thursday*) we made eighteen miles to Springfield, where I preached by appointment ; we had about four hundred people. Brother Boehm preached at Zanesville, named after Colonel Zane, who so kindly entertained us at Wheeling ; he is a very extraordinary man, and the history of his life a strange one.

Multiplicity of Camp-Meetings.

Thursday, September 28. I stood up at Columbia, and gave them a talk on Matt. vii, 7-12 ; the heat was extreme. Fair Cincinnati brought us up. The house here is enlarged and the society has increased. Our Brother West is sick and cannot come to the

conference ; many of our brethren will be absent. Muskingum district will have four camp-meetings. In Miami district seventeen camp-meetings in the year ; in Scioto circuit, four ; Hockhocking, two ; Deer Creek, two ; Mad River, three ; White Water two ; Cincinnati, two ; White, two.

Sabbath, October 1. Brother Blackman preached at nine o'clock, Brother M'Kendree at twelve o'clock, and Brother Burke at three o'clock. There were, it is judged, three thousand souls on the ground. I may add, that the list may be complete, seventeen camp-meetings for Indiana district.

Ky.]

Western Conference—Statistics.

My party came away to Carroll's. Next day we stopped with Captain John Sterne, from Stafford, old Virginia. At midnight I called up my fellow-travelers and set out, having an appointment at Mount Gerizim chapel. We arrived in time, and had an ordination, after which I gave an exhortation. Came in haste next day to Martin's meeting-house, where I discoursed on Psalm lxxxv, 1-9. We held a conciliatory conference with several of the local preachers on the subject of the ordination of local elders. On *Friday* Bishop M'Kendree preached and I also spoke, embracing various subjects in my exhortation. We moved early on *Saturday morning*, breakfasting at Hoskett's, and crossed the Kentucky by fording. Kind John Bennett's brought us up for the evening. We have stationed about eighty traveling preachers, rejected fourteen, located nine. There is an increase of two thousand three hundred and sixty-six members in this Western Conference.

We have in Mississippi fifteen traveling and eight local preachers, and three hundred and sixty members. If spared, and so directed, I shall see that country and Canada before I die.

Tenn.] Five Hundred Miles from Cincinnati.

November 1. We reached Staunton Ferry. We suppose we have ridden five hundred and ten miles since we left Cincinnati; what heights, what hills, what rocks! Lord, thou preservest man and beast! The disagreeable part of this western wandering is the necessity of stopping at night. Ah, how different are the taverns here from the houses of entertainment in the Atlantic States!

S. C.] The Baptists Indebted to Methodist Camp-Meetings.

We rode into Aberville and stopped at George Connor's. Great news! Great times in Georgia—rich and poor coming to Christ. At Connor's chapel I spoke, *Thursday*, on Rom. xii, 1, 2. After sermon I ordained John Stone a local deacon. In Edgefield the Baptists are carrying all before them; they are indebted to Methodist camp-meetings for this. I preached on opening the new chapel on Luke xix, 9; we had an open time. The Methodists have great success in Camden district. Surely there must be some good done; all are on fire, and I feel the flame. God is with preachers and people.

N. C.] Asbury Cares for the Various Interests of Methodism.

Sabbath, January 7, 1810. I preached in our enlarged house in the morning, and Bishop M'Kendree in the evening. We came rapidly next day forty-five

miles to the Widow Anderson's. At Wilmington I spoke in the new chapel on *Wednesday*. I find the work of God is going on here. We are well in temporals, and a most correct account has been furnished us of all expenditures. I met the African elders, and gave command concerning the parsonage, the painting of the new fences, and the alteration and increase of the benches in the chapel. I recommended the purchase of a grave-yard, and gave a special charge concerning the poor. O let me ever remember these! A general fast day for the African Churches was appointed. *Thursday* we rode forty-two miles to George Shepperd's. On *Friday* we stopped at Lot Ballard's for refreshment and prayer, and fled away to Adonijah Penn's. We were an hour in the night. We reached Newbern on *Saturday evening*. Erasmus Hill may possibly sell the Gospel for a rich wife, as three or four others have done. Should I say here, And thou, Francis, take heed? Not of this sin.

Va.] Brother Boehm—Conference at Petersburg.

Sabbath, February 4. The day is serene, and so is my soul. I preached at my host's and at Wright Ellis's. Here were great times thirty years ago; many are fallen asleep, and the children forget God. I called twice at Blackwater church; shivering, eating a morsel, and praying. Our people preach there with success, and an encouraging society is formed. On *Monday* we wrought our solitary way through the woods to Allen's bridge. The Widow Pennington received us: her husband is dead; she is sick; her children irreligious. O misery! O mercy! We

went on to James Roger's, where I gave them a discourse and spoke as if a thousand had been present. We have passed like a mail through South and North Carolina. I solemnly sympathize with my dear Brother Boehm; he has suffered greatly in his journey—an awful cough and fevers. Lord, what is life! Here is William Greaves almost gone at fifty-five; Robert Jones, a helpless man at seventy-two, sunk to second childhood: God is with him. A fasting, weary ride, brought us to Petersburg. Our conference began on *Thursday*, and rose on the following *Thursday*. We had, *Friday*, ordination, and preaching in abundance. I gave an answer to an important question; it was, Whether the Bishops had a right to form the eighth, or Genesee Conference? as also gave an answer to the Virginia Conference. At mid-day we started for Richmond, and arrived after a six hours' ride, without stopping. We stopped on our route next day at Caroline court-house. A rapid ride through cold and snow brought us to Fredericksburg, forty miles.

Md.]

Statistics of West Maryland.

Thursday, March 1. In West Maryland we have nine circuits, five stations, twenty-five preachers, one hundred chapels, eleven thousand six hundred and twenty-two members, and perhaps one hundred local preachers.

At Baltimore Conference.

On *Monday* we rode fourteen miles through damps and thick woods to Samuel M'Cubbin's. *Tuesday morning*, sick and suffering, I rode sixteen miles and filled an appointment at Bicknell's chapel. I hasted

on to Baltimore on *Wednesday*. I was scarcely able to sit in conference on *Friday*. *Saturday*, busy.

Sunday, 11. Bishop M'Kendree preached. We had an ordination. I spoke by way of exhortation. *Saturday*, the conference went forward with order and dispatch, and rose at ten o'clock this morning. I rode to Perry Hall.

Del.]

Statistics—The Peninsula in 1810.

Sunday, 25. At Smyrna my subject was 2 Chron. xxxii, 25, 26. It was an open time. G. Pickering spoke after me. We collected liberally for Boston chapel. The Africans were serious and attentive in the afternoon while I was speaking to them. On *Monday* I preached at Dover chapel, and next day at Green's chapel. Most of my old friends in this quarter have fallen asleep, but their children are generally with me, and the three generations baptized. We hold in the peninsula, comprising the eastern shore of Virginia and Maryland, and the State of Delaware, about one hundred houses of God ; twenty-two thousand nine hundred and thirty-five members ; preachers, traveling and local, two hundred and thirty-eight.

Va.]

Asbury Must Preach.

Wednesday, *April* 11. I preached at Newtown. We were crowded. This is a flourishing little place, and we have a beautiful little chapel. We came on, and once more visited Samuel Smith. I found him calm and happy in God after strong temptations. I preached at Curtis's chapel to a crowded and attentive house. There is a great change for the better in the morals and manners of all ranks of people in this end

of the peninsula, and none pretend to deny that the Methodists have wrought it. I rode down to Francis Watters's, in Potato Neck. They keep me busy. I must preach; I am senior; have been long absent; some never expected to hear me again; possibly, I may never come again. I am reminded that such and such I dandled on my lap. The rich, too, thirty years ago, would not let me approach them; now I must visit them and preach to them.

Md.]

Philadelphia Conference at Easton.

Sabbath, 15. At Salisbury I preached at Quantico chapel. We held an ordination after sacrament. I met the society, and afterward gave a long exhortation to the Africans. *Tuesday* I gave them a discourse in Cambridge. On *Thursday* we opened the Philadelphia Conference at Easton, and went with dispatch and great harmony through our usual work. We had preaching as usual, and a camp-meeting in the neighborhood. The stations were read off with much solemnity, and we parted in peace. What a grand and gracious time we have had! How kind and affectionate the people! There have been some serious changes of my making. May I please the Lord and all men to edification! We have added nine preachers, located nine, and stationed seventy-four.

Pa.]

Some Displeased with Their Stations.

Saturday, May 5. We came into Philadelphia late. *Sabbath*, preached, and we had an open time. There are difficulties here. Some displeased with their stations.

N. J.] "Twelve per Cent. Interest on Loans."

I came on to Burlington on *Monday* and preached for them. *Tuesday*, gave a discourse at Brunswick in the court-house. *Wednesday*, spoke in the chapel, Rahway. Lord, what am I? Save me from fainting under my burden! As we came out on *Thursday* a man overtook us, halted G. P., to tell him he ought to have preached against the iniquity of taking twelve per cent. interest on loans.

N. Y.] Old John-street Must Come Down.

We are in New York. *Friday*, great times here; two new houses within the year. I preached at old John-street. This is the thirty-ninth year I have officiated within the walls. This house must come down, and something larger and better occupy its place. *Saturday*, at the Widow Sherwood's, I saw William Blagburne, a member of the British Conference twenty-five years, and well recommended by Doctor Coke and others.

Through Dover and Amenia to Egremont.

Sabbath, 13. At the White Plains we had a cold, cloudy day, but I had divine help while I commented on Heb. vi, 9, 10; I added a word of special exhortation to the Africans. At N. Purdy's I was greatly comforted in feeling the life in the members of the little society. The preachers have preserved order and discipline, but the fire has been kept up principally by others of less official importance. *Tuesday*, a long, cold, hilly, rough ride brought us by the Widow Sandford's to Prince Howe's. We had a crowded congregation. I dined with Brother Neice,

Dover, and preached at Amenia. A heavy ride on *Thursday* brought us to E. King's, Egremont.

Mass.]

Missionaries Sent to Michigan.

Sabbath, 20. I opened our solemn assembly at half past ten o'clock on Phil. iii, 17-21. There was great heaviness in the congregation. We sat in conference until *Saturday*. Among the ordinations was that of Stephen Bamford, recommended from Nova Scotia, for elder's orders. We have stationed eighty-four preachers, sent two missionaries—one to Michigan and one to Detroit. There was a considerable deficiency in our funds, which left the unmarried preachers a very small pittance.

N. H.]

Conference and Camp-Meeting United.

Sunday, June 3. I officiated in the morning, and Henry Boehm in the evening. I think my words pierced the hearts of some like a sword. I neither spared myself nor my hearers. On *Wednesday* we opened our conference in the Presbyterian church. We had appointed a camp-meeting within three miles, where there was preaching three times a day. Although among strangers, we were kindly entertained. And shall not our prayers be heard on behalf of these people? yea, verily; and Methodism shall raise Zion from the dust.

Mass.] Asbury Appeals to Southern Methodism in Aid of Boston.

We came away over bleak rocks and hills, through Fitzwilliam to Winchester. I preached in a new, neat Methodist chapel of our own building. Next day to Waltham, and the day after to Boston.

Sunday, 17. I spoke in the old chapel in the morning with freedom ; in the evening at the new chapel with less liberty, but there was manifest power in the word. On *Monday* I wrote five letters of supplication to our brethren in Baltimore, Georgetown, Alexandria, Norfolk, and Charleston for a congregational collection for the use of the new chapel here. Our preachers get wives and a home, and run to their *dears* almost every night. How can they by personal observation know the state of the families it is part of their duty to watch over for good ?

Jesse Lee's History—A Correction.

Tuesday Evening, 26. I have seen Jesse Lee's history for the first time ; it is better than I expected. He has not always presented me under the most favorable aspect. We are all liable to mistakes, and I am unmoved by his. I correct him in one fact. My compelled seclusion in the beginning of the war, in the State of Delaware, was in nowise a season of inactivity ; on the contrary, except about two months of retirement from the direst necessity, it was the most active, the most useful, and most afflictive part of my life. If I spent a few dumb Sabbaths—if I did not, for a short time, steal after dark, or through the gloom of the woods, as was my wont, from house to house to enforce that truth, I (an only child) had left father and mother and crossed the ocean to proclaim—I shall not be blamed, I hope, when it is known that my patron, good and respectable Thomas White, who promised me security and secrecy, was himself taken into custody by the light-horse patrol. If such things happened to him what might I expect ?

Conn.] "Who Shall Reform the Reformers?"

I gave them a sermon at New London, and many attended at a short notice. I preached at Burlington. It was what is called *close cutting*. There is some life here. Lodged with Brother West, once a great Seventh-day Baptist. I gave them a sermon at Goshen on *Tuesday*. Preached next evening at *Amenia*. They want a house; I gave them a plan. *Friday*, preached at Row's chapel. A ride of twelve miles further brought us to Brother Garrettson's. The ride since we left New York I presume to be six hundred miles. Our *case in Zion* makes me feel awful. Who shall reform the reformers? Ah, poor dead Methodists! I have seen preachers' children wearing gold—brought up in pride. Ah, mercy, mercy!

N. Y.]

Conference Invalids Curable.

Sabbath, July 15. I preached in Silas Blass's barn. *Wednesday*, I arrived at Daniel Dorsey's. *Friday*, our conference began.

Sabbath, 22. Preached at the encampment. *Wednesday*, conference ended—great order and dispatch in business—stationed sixty-three preachers. *Saturday*, we must needs come the Northumberland road. It is through an awful wilderness. If the cry of *want of order* came from God, the appointment of the Genesee Conference was one of the most judicious acts of our episcopacy. We stationed sixty-three preachers, and cured some till then incurable cases. In the last three days and a half we have ridden one hundred and forty miles. What mountains, hills,

rocks, roots, and ruts! Brother Boehm was thrown from the sulky, but providentially not a bone broken.

Pa.]

A Heavy Week's Work.

Sabbath, August 5. Preached in Lancaster morning and evening. After forty years' labor we have a neat little chapel of our own. *Monday*, away for Columbia, and preached there at twelve o'clock. Came on to Little York, and arrived at seven o'clock in the evening. *Tuesday morning*, rose at four o'clock, and after writing four letters started away, calling on friends Naylor and Wall, stopping for the night at friend Weaver's. Reached Carlisle on *Wednesday*; preached in the evening. I drew a plan for a new chapel, seventy by forty-five, of one story; the cost about two thousand dollars. Shall I be able to answer the twenty letters that have met me here? A letter which I saw, written by one of our preachers, says he has twenty-eight appointments to fill in twenty-five days, besides meeting one thousand seven hundred in classes; it was from Allen Green. *Thursday*. A very warm ride brought us to Shippensburg. Lodged with Brother Reid. Preached in our improved chapel. *Friday*. Came to Chambersburg. I preached in the court-house, though we have a neat little chapel. *Saturday*, we had a heavy ride over three mountains.

Ohio.]

An Interview with Revolutionary Officers.

Sunday, September 9. I preached at the camp twice. Souls were converted, and we hope much good was done. We ordained John Holmes an elder. *Monday*, came away. At B. Wolf's we gave them Dutch and English sermons. *Tuesday*, preached at the Point Woods court-house, to a large congregation. On

Wednesday I preached in a school-house on a bluff opposite Blennerhassett's Island. Colonel Putnam, son of the renowned general of that name, invited me to the house of Waldo, grandson of the old chief; I had a very interesting interview with several revolutionary officers, immigrants to this country, from good old Massachusetts. *Thursday*, we took our departure from the banks of *the beautiful river*, (the Ohio,) beautiful indeed! How rich the hanging scenery of its wood-crowned hills!

Ky.] Faithful Ministers—Good News—Statistics.

Sunday, October 28. I spoke at Ferguson's chapel for an hour. We have an open door set wide to us in Mississippi; the preachers there sent but one messenger to conference—they could not spare more; they keep their ground like soldiers of Christ, and men of God who care for the cause and work of the Lord. Good news from the South—great prospects within the bounds of the South Carolina Conference.

Thursday, November 1. Began conference in great peace and good order. Conference progressed well; there were twenty-six admitted.

Sabbath, 4. There were elders and deacons ordained. We have minuted ninety-five as stationed. There is an increase of four thousand members within the bounds of this conference. I have sold my sulky and purchased a horse, that I may more easily wind my way through the wilderness to Georgia.

A Sight of the Slaves Prevents Complaining.

Sabbath, 25. I preached at Winton's in the evening. We have hard labor and suffering; but I dare not complain when I see the wretched fate of the

poor Africans in slavery. We pass along so rapidly that we have only time to pray in the houses we visit ; this we have done, *except in one case.*

N. C.]

Old Friends are Departing.

Sabbath, December 9. At Winnsborough I preached to a few people. We have a pretty chapel here ; John Buchanan and Jesse Harris are chiefs in this work. On *Monday* we came to J. Jenkin's ; after six years' rest and local usefulness he means to travel again. I have received news from the North which makes me solemn—my old friends, Jesse Hollingsworth and Peter Hoffman, are no more in time. And John Bloodgood has also gone to his reward. Sinclair Capers, one of our first disciples at Whappitau, died in great triumph ; the impression occasioned by witnessing this was the cause of conversion to some persons present. I hope his son James will be a great and holy preacher.

S. C.]

Conference Held in a Senator's House.

Sabbath, 16. I knew not if I could get to the new house ; I went and was helped of the Lord. The house was filled, and I spoke plainly. *Tuesday*, though ill able to ride, I set out for Camden. *Wednesday*, reading, writing, and praying with those who visit me. *Thursday*, came to Columbia. Taylor, of the Senate of the United States, lent his house for the session of our conference. We have pleasing letters from York, Genesee, Jersey, Maryland, Virginia, old North and South Carolinas—rich and poor coming to God. *Saturday*, our conference began in great order peace, and love.

Sabbath, 23. I preached, and the truth exhibited its own divine authority. Bishop M'Kendree spoke in the afternoon. *Friday*, I was called upon to preach at the ordination of elders. Conference adjourned this evening. We have stationed about eighty preachers. *Saturday*, came away to General Rumph's. God has repaid this family for its kindness to the poor followers of the Lord Jesus. There are four sons and three daughters; gracious souls. Two of the sons, Jacob and Christian, are preachers of the Gospel.

N. C.]

Conference at Raleigh.

Tuesday, February 5, 1811. We came into Raleigh. *Wednesday*, I enjoyed some very agreeable interviews with my brethren. *Thursday*. Conference begins this morning.

Sabbath, 10. I preached in the State-house to two thousand souls, I presume. We have had, and mean to have, while conference is in session, preaching three times a day. Meeting sometimes holds till midnight.

Md.]

"O the Clover of Baltimore Circuit."

Friday, March 15. Came through heavy dews to Aquila Garrettson's; halted awhile, and proceeded forward to Providence chapel, where I preached. We dined with friendly Mr. Stockdale, and came on to our Brother M'Elfresh's, Reistertown. O the *clover* of Baltimore circuit! *Ease, ease!* not for me. We called at Ellis Jones's, ancient Methodists; from thence we bent our course over to Charles Carnan's. Here I heard the mournful news of the death of Polly Yellott—gone after her father to paradise.

Eight Young Preachers Recently Married.

Sabbath, 17. At the chapel I found preachers in abundance, and a larger congregation than I had expected. As it was an appointment for me, I had the labor to perform. How hardly shall preachers who are well provided for maintain the spirit of religion! But here are eight young men lately married: these will call for four hundred dollars per annum additional—so we go.

Pa.] Doctors Rush and Physic Visit Asbury.

Sabbath, 21. I preached at Ebenezer and in St. George's chapel.

Monday, 29. Our conference adjourned. There were no complaints, nor grounds for any. There was preaching, as usual, to large congregations, and there were manifestations of the power of God, especially at St. George's.

Wednesday, May 1. I preached at Germantown. Doctors Rush and Physic paid me a visit. How consoling it is to know that these great characters are men fearing God! I was much gratified, aye, I ever am by their attentions, kindness, and charming conversation; indeed they have been of eminent use to me, and I acknowledge their services with gratitude.

N.J.] Limited Success in New Jersey.

Thursday, 9. We came to Asbury, and I preached and added a special exhortation. Were it not for the brewing and drinking miserable whisky, Asburytown would be a pleasant place. *Friday*, to James Egbert's. Bethel chapel has been bought and refitted for the

Methodists. I preached in it. I am unknown in New Jersey, and ever shall be I presume. After forty years' labor we have not yet ten thousand in membership.

N. Y.] Conference in New York—George Suckley.

Tuesday, 28. Conference ceased their labors. There was little trouble in the business of appointments : stationed eighty-seven, superannuated two, and supernumeraries five ; increase about three hundred. There were three preachers sent to other conferences. The society in New York has increased ; our chapels are neat, and their debt is not heavy. They wish to rebuild John-street church, and to build a small house at the *Two-Mile Stone*. I preached at the *Two-Mile Stone*, and retired to George Suckley's.

Opposite Views of Adam Clarke and Asbury.

Monday, 10. I read Adam Clarke, and am amused as well as instructed. He indirectly unchristianizes all old bachelors. Woe is me ! It was not good that Adam should be alone for better reasons than any that Adam Clarke has given. How will our commentator comment on 1 Corinthians vii, 7, 8, 17, 27, 32, 34 ? and will he not need great skill to manage well for his purpose Matthew xix, 12 ? It may be the indispensable duty of some men and women to marry ; the necessity, or the peculiarity of circumstances which would impose this as a duty, or only allow it as an indulgence, who is to judge of ? the parties themselves ? Could they be *out of the body* awhile, we might allow them to be umpires in their own cases. *Thursday, Pittsfield.* We have ridden two hundred

miles since we left New York, and have preached every day, and the preachers there are hardly starting to their stations ; *but they have wives.*

Vt.] How the Preachers Accepted their Appointments.

Wednesday, June 19. A heavy ride of twenty miles brought us to Barnard's. Here have been many locations and serious failures of duty. We began our conference on *Thursday* ; worked with great expedition, and finished in four days and a half. There was a general fast on *Friday*, and deacons ordained. On the *Sabbath* I preached to about three thousand people—some of them were wild enough. On *Monday* I ordained the elders. George Pickering preached. We disposed of eighty-seven preachers, and each man took his station at once and without hesitancy, like a man of God. *Tuesday* we came away, as conference broke up at twelve o'clock. At one o'clock many of those hardy soldiers of the Lord Jesus were already to horse, and their faces set to the wilds, or wherever else their duty called them. On *Wednesday*, we crossed the grand mountain, and came into Middlebury. Here is college-craft and priest-craft. We have a respectable little society of about twenty members, but no chapel. I preached in the courthouse. I have moved a subscription to build a house sixty-four by forty-four feet on the lot fronting the college.

N. Y.] Asbury's Horse Sinks in Mud and Water.

Monday, July 1. Breakfasted with William Mitchell and dined with Henrick Johnson. We have made forty-two miles through open woods and over des-

perate roads. *Tuesday*, dined at French Mills. Heat, heat! At the Indian village I led my horse across the pole-bridge; careful as I was, he got his feet in an opening and sunk into mud and water; away went the bags—books and clothes wet—and the horse yet fast. We pried with a pole, and he, by making a desperate effort at the same time, plunged forward, and came out. The mosquitoes were not idle while we were busy.

Canada.]

Asbury in Canada—Old Friends.

At eight o'clock we set sail, and crossed the St. Lawrence by rowing; the river here is three miles wide. We rode through Cornwall in the night, and came to Evan Roy's, making forty-four miles for the day's journey. My strong affection for the people of the United States came with strange power upon me while I was crossing the line. *Tuesday*, I preached, and again on *Wednesday*. We rode along the banks of the river; they are neatly and pleasantly improved. We dined with Stephen Bailey, and went from thence with Brother Glassford in his calash. *Thursday*. On the opposite shore they are firing for the fourth of July. I pass the pageantry of the day unheeded on the other side. Here is a decent, loving people; my soul is much united to them. I called upon Father Dulmage, and on Brother Hicks—a branch of an old Irish stock of Methodists in New York. I lodged at David Brackenridge's, above Johnston. *Saturday*, we rode twelve miles for our breakfast. Reached Elizabethtown. Our ride has brought us through one of the finest countries I have ever seen: the timber is of a noble size, the cattle are well-shaped and

well-looking, the crops are abundant, on a most fruitful soil. Surely this is a land that God the Lord hath blessed.

“Well, I have Been in Canada.”

Monday, 15. We must away, and leave good houses, grand Roman Catholic Church, Episcopal church, and Kingston, with its garrison and great guns. We might go by land, cross three ferries, and travel desperate roads, or we might take the packet for Sackett's Harbor. We chose the latter. Well, I have been in Canada, and find it like all stations in the extremities: there are difficulties to overcome and prospects to cheer us. Some of our laborers have not been so faithful and diligent as we could wish.

Saturday, 20. We opened the Genesee Conference. We passed thirty-eight characters.

N. Y.]

A Discovery by Wise Men.

Sunday, 21. I preached in the woods at ten o'clock, and again at two o'clock. There might be two thousand people, who were very attentive. It is said the wise men in York Conference have discovered that it will be far better to elect the presiding elders in conference, and give them the power of stationing the preachers. I suppose we shall hear more of this.

Friday, 26. Conference rose. All went on at fair sitting smoothly. The elections came on, and there was some disposition manifested to reject the Canadians and presiding elders. The stations were received in great peace. We have about forty most pleasing young men. There are six hundred and sixty-three on the present minutes. If the preachers take any specific power, right, or privilege from

the bishops which the General Conference may have given them, it is clear that they dissolve the whole contract.

A Bishop's Salary.

August 3. The eight conferences have furnished us with twenty-five dollars each, making two hundred dollars. Our expenses hitherto are one hundred and thirty dollars.

Pa.] Asbury Sick, but Away to the Camp-Meeting.

Sabbath, 11. I preached in Boehm's chapel. There is a camp-meeting thirty miles distant from hence, but I cannot be there. I have the will, but I want time and strength. *Wednesday.* They will have me away to camp-meeting. John Boehm will take me and bring me back in the carriage. *Thursday,* I preached to about two thousand souls. At three o'clock I preached at Strasburg, and returned again to Father Boehm's.

Ohio.] Conference at Cincinnati.

Saturday, September 28. Came to Cincinnati.

Sunday, 29. I preached and ordained. We have been five days sitting in conference. There has been weighty and critical business before us, but we wrought with industry and good order.

Sunday, October 6. I preached; Bishop M'Kendree preached, as did others, and our labor has not been in vain. *Friday,* after a session of ten days, our Western Conference rose. I had little trouble about the stations—I heard of no complaints. There were one hundred and two preachers, one hundred of whom are stationed. We lack twenty-two.

Ky.]

"Perfect Through Sufferings."

Sunday, 20. We found the Cumberland rising. We rode twenty-five miles to White's, and rested. *Monday*, to Cheek's. *Tuesday*, to Conway's. It is hard labor, but God is with us. *Wednesday*, to Louisville. *Thursday*, we started at seven o'clock, and came in at seven o'clock in the evening, and have made no great headway. My afflictions of body are very great—the Lord is pleased to humble me: *perfect through sufferings!* the Lord's will be done! *Thursday*, I preached at Louisville; it was a liberal season: glory be to God for that! *Friday*, a heavy ride to Waynesborough; stopped at Colonel Milton's. It is as warm as July. *Saturday*, after preaching in the old church I retired to the house of the late Henry Moore. Wrote a very serious letter to Samuel Dunwoody, on his taking the charge of the Mississippi district. What a field is opened, and opening daily in this New World!

Ga.]

"Great Snethen is Chaplain to Congress."

Tuesday, November 19. I am something easier to-day. I employ my dumb *Sabbath* and my leisure time as well as I can, and as pain will allow. I have dispatched eleven official letters. Hilliard Judge is chosen chaplain to the legislature of South Carolina; and O, great Snethen is chaplain to Congress! So we begin to partake of *the honor that cometh from man*; now is our time of danger.

S. C.]

Conference at Camden.

Friday, 29, at Camden, to preside in conference.

Wednesday, December 4. I preached before the conference.

Friday, 6. Our conference rose this day. Scarcely have I seen such harmony and love. There are eighty-five preachers stationed. The increase within its bounds is three thousand three hundred and eighty. I received letters from the extremities and the center of our vast continent, all pleasing, all encouraging.

N. C.]

"This Life is Not Eternal."

Sabbath, February 2, 1812. At Tarborough I preached to a serious, attentive congregation. I preached in the afternoon also at Brother Hall's. *Monday,* I breakfasted with Mr. Austin, an English Baptist; my business with him was to charge him most solemnly to hold a perpetual prayer-meeting every Wednesday evening in his house. We have made seven hundred miles since we left Camden, through frost, floods, cold, and hunger; poor men, and poor horses! Well, this life is not eternal.

Va.]

Asbury Charged with Ordaining a Slave.

Sabbath, 16. I rode about a mile and gave a sermon. My breast is sore, and my heart is in pain for Petersburg. *Monday,* I visited my ancient friends Wood, Tucker and wife.

Our conference began on *Thursday*. The affair of James Boyd and Henry Hardy detained us two days from other business. We shall not station more than seventy-five preachers this year—a less number than last. A charge had been brought against me for ordaining a slave; but there was no further pursuit of the case when it was discovered that I was ready with my certificates to prove his freedom; the subject of contention was nearly white, and his re-

spectable father would neither own nor manumit him. Old Virginia, because of the great emigrations westward and deaths, decreases in the number she gives to the Methodists ; but new Virginia gains. Doctor Jennings was at conference, and preached often for us, and was much followed. We had little or no trouble about the stations, and conference rose on *Thursday*.

Forty Miles to Breakfast.

Sabbath, March 1. It blew a cutting wind at north-east, as we made our way toward Roper's chapel, thirty miles distant. I preached some awful truths. *Monday*, I passed a night of great suffering. We came off this morning to James City, and preached in the chapel to many people—we had an evening meeting. Lodged at John Taylor's. *Tuesday*, we came to Williamsburg, where I preached with a full mind, but failing voice. *Wednesday*, we rode near forty miles to breakfast with an English family, the Whitefields, and went forward to lodge with George Hope, a ship-builder from Whitehaven.

A Happy, Loving Conference.

Wednesday, 18. We labored along to Leesburg, stemming the cold and boisterous north-west. *Friday* and *Saturday* were spent in happy, loving conference. My task it was to ordain sixteen deacons. I preached, so also did Brother M'Kendree. I had declined ordaining elders, not wishing to preach the sermon ; but I officiated, and N. Snethen preached. We have had a solemn, loving, peaceful conference.

Md.]

Death of Martin Boehm.

Wednesday, April 1. I preached at Joshua Tipton's ; this is an ancient friend whom I had not visited for eight years. Boehm preached in German. *Thursday*, dined near Union chapel at Mr. Matthews's, and went forward to Meredith's. *Friday*, a cold, disagreeable ride brought us across the country to Samuel Benkley's ; here I received the first intelligence of the death of my dear old friend Martin Boehm.

Pa.]

Philadelphia Conference.

Wednesday, 15. Came to the city of Philadelphia. We opened our conference in great peace on *Saturday*.

Sabbath, 19. Preached in St. George's in the morning, and at St. Thomas's in the evening. We had a solemn time at the ordination of deacons on *Wednesday*. I preached at Union Chapel on *Friday*.

Sabbath, 26. I gave them a sermon at Ebenezer in the forenoon, met the society at Union, and ordained, as deacons, Joseph Ingles and John George, venerable and pious men. On *Thursday* all the honors of officiating at the ordinations fell upon me, Bishop M'Kendree being sick. I closed the conference on *Monday* morning.

N. Y.]

General Conference of 1812.

Friday, May 1. Our General Conference began. During the session I saw nothing like unkindness but once, and there were many and weighty affairs discussed.

Sabbath, 10. At the African church in the morning. I preached also at the Hudson chapel ; it was

an awful time. A subject before the conference was the question, If local deacons, after four years of probation, should be elected to the eldership by two thirds of the conference, having no slaves, and having them, to manumit them where the laws allowed it. It passed by a majority. On *Saturday*, a motion was made to strengthen the episcopacy by adding another bishop.

Sabbath, 17. I preached in Brooklyn in our elegant house. After a serious struggle of two days in General Conference to change the mode of appointing presiding elders, it remains as it was. Lee, Shinn, and Snethen, were of a side; and these are great men.

Honorable Mention of Sister Seney.

At the Two-Mile Stone my subject was 1 Peter iv, 6-9. I preached also at Greenwich, and at John-street chapel. On *Tuesday* I breakfasted with Colonel Few. Some good widows collected above two hundred dollars for the poor preachers in New England States. Sister Seney I must make honorable mention of as being very active in this labor of love.

Conference at Albany.

Monday, June 1. We halted awhile at Esopus. Dined at the Widow Scott's. On *Tuesday* we rode through the heat, thirty-four miles, to Coeyman's Landing, and preached at six o'clock. A cold ride brought us to Albany. The Dutch Synod and the Methodist Conference are about to sit here. From the fourth to the tenth we have been occupied in close conference.

Sabbath, 7. I preached in an old house, and we

had a gracious season. I gave a solemn exhortation on the spot designated for our new church. The situation is very eligible. *Wednesday*, conference ended its labors.

Conn.] Through Connecticut.

Sabbath, 14. I preached at Glastonbury, and met the society. *Monday*, at Hebron we visited three families, and were kindly received by Doctor Huntington, with whom we lodged in Windham. *Tuesday*, we dined in Abingdon, and lectured to a few people in the evening at John Nichols's. *Wednesday*, a ride of thirty miles brought us to Father Ball's, where we lodged. *Thursday*, we dined at Stone's tavern in Farmington. They had nearly been as wild as Indians when we prayed. I have felt sick enough to be in bed. We came to Lynn. I come through great tribulation.

Mass.] Conference at Lynn—Proclamation of War.

Saturday, 20. Our conference began and progressed in much peace and order. *Thursday*, I gave preachers and people a sermon.

Sabbath, 21. I preached. The chapel, saving the pews and the steeple, is beautiful. We had an ordination. The proclamation of the President of the United States is out to inform us that there is war between our people and the English people. My trust is in the living God.

N. Y.] Conference at Lyons.

Sabbath, *July* 12. We hold our conference in Lyons. Brother M'Kendree preached in the morning, and I gave a discourse in the evening at Westmoreland. We went forward to David Coe's, where

I preached at night. My host had entertained me at Middlefield, Connecticut, twenty-two years ago. My mind enters deeply into God, his providence and grace. Consequential W. B. Lacy is married; and why not? He has left us; and why not? Between Albany and Lynn and Boston we have spent thirty dollars and fifty-six cents, a few cents more than the conference furnished for our expenses.

Sweet Revenge.

Tuesday, 14. A long ride through Manlius brought us into the Widow Hocox's neat house. We dined at Hommerman's, in Auburn, on *Wednesday*, and lodged with Eddy, Scipio. On our way we were mocked by some men in a harvest-field. This is their glory of wickedness. Ours is that the offense of the cross hath not yet ceased. My revenge was prayer that God might convert and save them for Christ's sake.

Pa.] Whisky the Prime Curse of the United States.

Wednesday, August 5. We came along down the turnpike, and rough we found it. Farewell to Merwin's—I lodge no more there; whisky—hell, as most of the taverns here are. Our *Thursday's* ride brought us rapidly to Lehigh. The Germans are decent in their behavior in this neighborhood, and would be more so were it not for vile whisky. This is the prime curse of the United States, and will be, I fear much, the ruin of all that is excellent in morals and government in them.

Md.] Asbury Preaches to the "Union Volunteers."

Thursday, September 1. A rude, rough ride brought us to Clark's, twenty-eight miles. There are very

distressing rumors abroad ; my mind is fixed on "Ye are of more value than many sparrows." Two inn-keepers on our route, Besoon and Tomlinson, declare against keeping or selling liquid fire ; this is great. We moved on *Thursday* to the Widow Henthorn's, within a mile of the camp-ground. I preached on *Friday* and *Saturday*. The ministry are instructed to be careful to preach to the soldiers wherever opportunity offers. The Union Volunteers desired a sermon, so I gave a discourse on the ground ; my subject was Jer. ii, 13.

Ten Thousand at Camp-Meeting.

Tuesday, 8. May I make the best of the remains of life. I presume we had ten thousand at the Liberty camp-meeting, and five thousand at the meeting in this neighborhood of Union Town. Forty persons came forward to enroll their names in society with us.

Ohio.]

Six Thousand Miles in Eight Months.

Saturday, 12. We directed our route toward the Indian Short Creek camp-meeting.

Sunday, 13. We had a solemn meeting. I preached to about three thousand people as I judge. *Monday*, I was called on to preach ; we have had eighty-four tents on the ground, four hundred and fifty communicants, and forty persons have joined us. I shall have traveled six thousand miles in eight months, and met in nine conferences, and have been present at ten camp-meetings.

Ky.] Asbury in the Representative Chamber.

On *Friday* I preached in the representative chamber in Frankfort. I conversed with some of the respectables, and found one who had made one of my company twenty-three years ago in a journey through the wilderness.

A "Sickly, Serious Congregation" at Louisville.

Wednesday, 21. I preached in Louisville at eleven o'clock in our neat brick house, thirty-four by thirty-eight feet. I had our sickly, serious congregation. This is a growing town, and a handsome place, but the falls or ponds make it unhealthy.

N. C.] In North Carolina.

Wednesday, December 2. We went over the mountain twenty-two miles to Killion's.

Thursday, 3. Came on through Buncombe to Samuel Edney's; I preached in the evening. We have had plenty of rain lately. *Friday*, I rest. Occupied in reading and writing. I have great communion with God. I preached at Father Mills's.

S. C.] "Brandy and the Bible—One was Enough."

Tuesday, 8. Came to Broad River. We found Smith's ford deep, but Fox turned his fearless breast up the stream, and brought me swiftly and safely through the swell of waters; he is a noble beast. We dined in the woods, and stopped at Esquire Leech's; brandy and the Bible were both handed me; one was enough—I took but one.

Conference at Charleston—"What is Coming?"

Wednesday, 16. Came to Stephen Swithen's, within twenty-three miles of Charleston. It remains intensely cold. *Thursday*, my fingers gave out ; then the axle-tree gave a crack, seventeen miles from the city. We loaded another, and while I rode in J. B. Glenn's sulky, he and Boehm, with the aid of cushions and bearskins, rode horseback into the city. Ah ! we feel—we fear the locations of this conference will be sixteen in number. *Saturday*, our conference began in good order.

Sabbath, 20. Preached at Cumberland chapel in the morning ; at Bethel in the afternoon. The presiding eldership and episcopacy saw eye to eye in the business of the stations. There were no murmurings from the employed eighty-four.

Sabbath, 27. I had an opportunity of meeting the society, of both colors, and my exhortations were pointed and in season. We have with the increase about eighteen thousand. What is coming? days of vengeance, or of Gospel glory? We have lost by locations, and other causes, fourteen of the itinerancy.

"Camp-Meetings the Great Instrument."

Thursday, 31. Came to Georgetown. I am now at home here after twenty-nine years of labor. We hear of a blessed work in James River district—camp-meetings the great instrument. According to Douglass's account six hundred have joined us. We have also a pleasing account in a letter from Joel Winch, New London district, Bristol, Rhode Island, of a work of God—one hundred have joined, and other converts there were who have joined the Baptists and Episcopalians ; were these stolen from us ?

Fever and Pain.

Thursday, January 21, 1813. A bitter cold ride of thirty miles brought us to Purdee's. I have a high fever, and am in great pain. *Friday*, a heavy ride of thirty-six miles brought us to King's. I anticipate a night of fever and pain. *Saturday*, to Wilmington. There is little trade here, and fewer people ; of course there is less sin.

Sabbath, 24. I was carried into the church, preached and met the society. I preached again in the evening. A bread poultice has procured me a mitigation of pain. Lord, be merciful to me in temporals and spirituals! William Capers is married—he twenty-three, his wife eighteen.

N. C.] Asbury Preaching and Ordaining on His Knees.

Sabbath, 31. It rained heavily ; nevertheless, we held meeting at Richland chapel. I rested above an hour, on my knees, preaching, and in the ordination of Lot Ballard, a deacon, and in prayer. We retired from the meeting to G. Rowe's, a son of affliction and consolation in God. We are in a palace—peace, and rich accommodation.

Conference at Newbern—Asbury on Crutches.

Sabbath, February 7. I was two hours preaching, meeting the society, baptizing, and ordaining Rasco Lipsey. I gained a fever and a clear conscience by my labors. *Monday*, I am in Newbern on crutches. *Tuesday*, reading, receiving the visits of presiding elders, and writing letters.

Wednesday, 10. We opened our conference in Sister Tenkard's elegant school-room. We had great

order, great union, and great dispatch of business. The increase here in membership this year is seven hundred ; but ah ! deaths and locations—then the preachers !

Md.] The English Conference Invites Asbury to Visit His
Native Land.

Sabbath, March 7. I changed my subject after getting into the church, and I spoke long and plainly. We have news from the English Conference. It has given me an invitation to my native land, engaging to pay the expenses of the visit.

Otterbein—Baltimore Conference.

Monday, 22. Came to Sewall's. I preached on James i, 22-24. A heavy ride brought us to Baltimore. I gave an evening to the great Otterbein. I found him placid and happy in God. He says the commentators are mistaken—that the vials are yet to be poured. *Tuesday*, I had a serious interview with the presiding elders. *Wednesday*, we opened conference, and went forward in our business in great peace and order.

Thursday, April 1. Conference rose in great order and peace. I stationed eighty-three preachers. This conference holds, in their several relations, ninety preachers, twenty thousand two hundred and seventy-two members white, and seven hundred and ninety-nine colored.

Del.] At Governor Bassett's.

Wednesday, 21. There was a high wind, and I set out, feeble and faint, and reached Wilmington. I lodged with Governor Bassett. My peace flows like

a river. I suppose we have in sixteen circuits ten chapels in each. I preached for the folks in Wilmington.

Pa.] Small Increase in the Philadelphia Conference.

Friday, 23. A heavy ride brought us to Philadelphia.

Saturday, 24. We opened our annual conference; ninety preachers present; much order and great peace. We continued in conference until *Saturday*, the first of May. We had speakers in plenty, but peace and union. There is a falling off in numbers, occasioned by locations, the retirement of the superannuated, and other causes, so that the increase of effective preachers is but two.

N. J.] A Question Respecting Burlington and Trenton.

Wednesday and *Thursday, May 5, 6.* Still raining. Busy writing letters. The increase in six conferences is, in members, twenty-one thousand eight hundred and thirty-four, in preachers seventy-nine; but of these there are only thirty-three travelers. I preached in Burlington on *Thursday*; many attended, although it was damp. Will this place and Trenton ever be famous for vital religion?

N. Y.] A Tavern Turned Into a Church.

We toiled over the rocky road to Haverstraw, sixteen miles, and I delivered my testimony in great feebleness of body. We lodged with Peter Noyelle. Our host built his house for a tavern, but it was turned into a church. At Philipstown we have an elegant new chapel; I preached in it on *Monday*, and felt liberty in the word.

New York Conference at *Amenia*.

Wednesday, 19. A cold, uncomfortable ride brought us to *Amenia*. We dined with Brother *Ryder*, an ancient disciple and local preacher.

Thursday, 20. We opened the New York conference in great peace and good order. I ordained twelve deacons after sermon. My text was 2 Tim. iv, 5.

Bishop M'Kendree and Joshua Marsden.

Sunday, 23. Bishop M'Kendree preached. It appeared to me as if a ray of divine glory rested on him. His subject was, "Great peace have they that love thy law, and nothing shall offend them." My subject was Eph. iv, 1-3. The appearance, manner, and preaching of Brother M'Kendree produced a very powerful effect on Joshua Marsden, a British missionary, who has been present at our conference.

Conn.]

Through Connecticut.

Friday, 28. We traveled this day ten hours. I preached in the evening in a school-house, but had not much freedom. *Saturday*, we made a tedious day's ride to the Widow *Pease's*. On our way we called in to see a sick brother, and prayed with him.

Mass.]

Asbury at *Pittsfield*.

Sunday, 30. I preached in *Pittsfield*. *Monday*, preached at M'Farlan's.

Tuesday, *June* 1. We have a fine prospect of the *Hoosac River* and the *Green Mountain*, bleak as *January*. After dinner at *Tinney's* (kind souls) we descended the precipice, crossing by a slight bridge.

N. H.]

Asbury's Will.

Wednesday, 2. We reached Winchester, in New Hampshire, stopping to dine with the nice Websters, in Greenfield.

Sunday, 6. I preached in the morning and afternoon with little freedom. May we not expect increasing days of distress? Methodism in the East is as likely to be any thing else as that which it ought to be, unless we have great displays of the power of God and a strict discipline. Knowing the uncertainty of the tenure of life, I have made my will, appointing Bishop M'Kendree, Daniel Hitt, and Henry Boehm my executors. If I do not in the mean time spend it, I shall leave, when I die, an estate of two thousand dollars, I believe. I give it all to the Book Concern. This money, and somewhat more, I have inherited from dear departed Methodist friends in the State of Maryland who died childless; besides some legacies which I have never taken. Let it all return, and continue to aid the cause of piety.

R. I.]

Asbury at Bristol and Providence.

Monday, 14. We visited the Reeds, senior and junior, and Doctor Winsler and family. I preached in Warren in the evening, and lodged with kind Smith Bowen. I preached at Bristol at six o'clock. We did not trouble the people with ourselves or horses. My congregation was large.

Wednesday, 16. Storm-bound. Writing, planning, and reading. *Thursday,* we came in haste along to Providence. We were entertained splendidly. Here

are grand buildings, but no chapel for the Methodists. We rode on to Lippelt's factories. What a population here is !

Conn.] Venerable Names in Methodism.

Monday, 28. A heavy ride brought us to Benedict's, in Canaan, and thence onward to Brother King's, in Egremont. *Tuesday*, to Father Merwin's to lodge.

N. Y.] Conference at Westmoreland.

Thursday, July 8. We came to Westmoreland. In the last two hundred and seventy miles I have suffered much from hunger, heat, and sickness.

Friday, 9. We opened our conference in peace in our house of sixty by fifty feet, built by the Independents and bought by the Methodists. We progressed two days in much union and sweetness, having one day the presence and company of our Canadian brethren.

Tuesday, 13. Our conference adjourned in great peace, and all satisfied with their stations.

Asbury with an Infidel Family.

Sabbath, 18. Bishop M'Kendree stopped to preach. I rode on thirty miles to Brush's. We stopped with a poor family on our route, fed, and prayed with them, and were blessed indeed. Next day we began our trials. It had rained in the night. We set out and encountered the logs, stumps, rocks, and torrents, which came down upon us from the hills above. We put into a house at the Great Bend, and stopped to dine. Here I lectured, sung, and prayed with the poor infidels in the house. Some stared, some smiled, and some wept. The lady asked me to

call again as I passed. Yes, madam, on condition you will do two things : read your Bible, and betake yourself to prayer.

Pa.] The Tomb of Henry Willis.

Tuesday, 10. We reached Little York.

Wednesday. A tiresome ride brought us to our home at the Widow Willis's. From the door I saw the tomb of dear Henry Willis. Rest, man of God ! Thy quiet dust is not called to the labor of riding five thousand miles in eight months—to meet ten conferences in a line of sessions from the District of Maine to the completion of the round. Lord, be with us, and help us to fulfill the task thou hast given us to perform !

Md.] Father Everhard.

Friday, 20. We started for Ohio, passing through Frederick and Middletown, to Williamsport. Called on Father Everhard, and sheltered under his shade from the excessive heat. The old saint has a son and a son-in-law local laborers. We have encouraging accounts from the encampment near Winchester, Virginia.

Pa.] Conference at Brownsville.

Wednesday, 25. At Cumberland I preached in the chapel, and ordained J. I. Jacobs, Thomas Lakin, and William Shaw, holy men, to the office of elders. A day of toil over the desperate mountains brought us to Brownsville. We have had our trials and afflictions.

Wednesday, *September* 1. We opened our conference ; about thirty members present. On *Saturday* deacons and elders were ordained. We have had preaching four times in the day.

Ky.] **Blistering the Head to Draw Methodism Out of the Heart.**

Sabbath, 19. I preached in our enlarged Ebenezer church, in Clark county. Once more I see Doctor Hinds, from the other side the flood, rejoicing in Jesus. He will never again, I presume, put a blister on his wife's head to draw Methodism out of her heart. This mad prank brought deep conviction, by the operation of the Spirit of God, upon his soul.

Tenn.]

Tennessee Conference.

We came to the Tennessee Conference. I lodged under the hospitable roof of Mother Roscoe. Our progress daily was great, and made in great peace and order.

Sabbath, October 3. I preached and ordained about twenty deacons. We rose on the sixth instant, finding very few difficulties objected to the stations. The Tennessee Conference were not willing to let the bishops go to the Mississippi Conference.

S. C.]

Asbury Preaches with Great Power.

Thursday, November 4. Came forward to Conner's, Abbeville district.

Sabbath, 7. I preached in the tabernacle on 2 Cor. v, 11. If the people say it was like thunder and lightning I shall not be surprised. I spoke in power from God, and there was a general and deep feeling in the congregation. Thine, O Lord, be all the glory!

Ga.]

In Savannah.

Sabbath, 21. I preached in the new chapel at James Mark's—Elbert's—in folly called Asbury. We visited Doctor Bradley, recovering from his affliction :

a miracle of grace. A journey of six days brought us to Savannah. We were careful to leave our testimony and to pray with every family where we stopped. Kind Widow Bonnell sent her chaise after me. Our chapel cost five thousand dollars. Others would have made it cost twice as much perhaps. We are indebted to Myers and Russell for much of this saving.

S. C.]

A Present of an Old Gig.

Monday, 22. Rode to Mr. Tiebout's plantation. Sweet retreat! *Tuesday*, we rode forty-six miles to Wainer's. I am again in a chaise. James Russell insisted upon giving me an old gig worth forty-five dollars. We are safe in Charleston, visiting Black Swamp and some families as we came along.

Sunday, December 12. I preached in Trinity church. We have it now in quiet possession. I also officiated in Cumberland and Bethel churches. The society is not so lively as formerly. In visiting six families I found but two that acknowledge God in his word and worship!

N. C.]

Bishop Coke Sails for the East Indies.

Friday, January 7, 1814. I received seven letters; the contents of some of them make me feel serious. We learn that Bishop Coke, with seven young preachers, have sailed for the East Indies. The British Society is poor as well as ourselves, it would appear; this is a good sign. In less than one hundred years Methodism has spread over three quarters of the globe, and it is now about to carry the Gospel of salvation into Asia. Amen.

Va.] Conference in Norfolk—"Mighty in Talk."

Sunday, February 20. I am at Norfolk. I have had a serious attack of pleuritic fever, with little intermission of pain until the fifteenth day. Our conference in Norfolk rose on *Tuesday, March 1.* We have been mighty in talk this session. I dare not speak my mind on the state of this place—its Church or its ministry. We had a great many sermons preached as usual, and we have reason to hope souls were converted. I ordained deacons, and assisted my brethren in the ministration of the word.

A Retrospect.

Sunday, 6. I preached in the old chapel, (Richmond ;) our labor shall not be all in vain. Doctor Jennings has removed to Richmond, to be useful, we hope, to society and to himself. A journey of suffering by bad roads, and exposure to excessive cold, brought us to Georgetown, Maryland. In the year 1774 I first visited Virginia and North Carolina ; in the year 1780 I repeated my visit, and since that time yearly. In the year 1785 I first visited South Carolina and Georgia, and to these States have since paid (except one year) an annual visit until now, (1814.) I suppose I have crossed the Alleghany Mountains sixty times.

Md.] Funeral Discourse on the Death of the Great Otterbein.

Thursday, 24. Baltimore Conference hath been sitting in great order seven days. My strength and labor was to sit still. We have stationed eighty-six ministers. By request, I discoursed on the character

of the angel of the Church of Philadelphia, in allusion to P. W. Otterbein—the holy, the great Otterbein—whose funeral discourse it was intended to be. Solemnity marked the silent meeting in the German church, where were assembled the members of our conference and many of the clergy of the city. Forty years have I known the retiring modesty of this man of God, towering majestic above his fellows in learning, wisdom, and grace, yet seeking to be known only of God and the people of God. He had been sixty years a minister, fifty years a converted one.

Del.]

Joseph Pilmoor.

Sunday, April 3. I preached in Wilmington. *Monday*, we had great consolation in visiting Mary Withy's children and grandchildren; she, though dead, is yet spoken of. One of these last is in society. Joseph Pilmoor is yet alive, and preaches three times every Sabbath.

Pa.] Philadelphia Conference in the Spirit and Peace of God.

Tuesday, 5. This is the eve of conference.

Sunday, 10. I preached in the Academy chapel and at St. George's. Our conference opened and progressed four days in great peace and Gospel order. The bishops wrote a serious letter to New England, remonstrating on the neglect of family worship.

Thursday, 14. The Philadelphia Conference rose in the spirit, power, and peace of God, in which they had been sitting seven days. *Friday*, crossed in a steamboat to the Jersey shore.

N. J.] Great Kindness and Attentions in New Jersey.

Sunday, 25. I preached at Penn's Neck, at Salem, and at Cohanzy Bridge. I preached also at Pitt's Grove. I preached at Union chapel, and the Lord gave power to his own truth. I preached at Bethel. I rested at Bates's, greatly spent with labor. We should have failed in our march through Jersey, but we have received great kindness and attentions, and have had great accommodations. I have been ill indeed, but medicine, nursing, and kindness, under God, have been so far effectual that I have recovered strength enough to sit in my little covered wagon, into which they lift me.

Pa.] John Wesley Bond—A Rich Present.

I have clambered over the rude mountains, passing through York and Chambersburg to Greensburg.

Tuesday, July 19. I would not be loved to death, and so came down from my sick-room and took to the road, weak enough. My friends in Philadelphia gave me a light little four-wheeled carriage; but God and the Baltimore Conference made me a richer present—they gave me John Wesley Bond for a traveling companion. Has he his equal on the earth for excellences of every kind as an aid? I groan one minute with pain, and shout glory the next!

A Series of Mishaps.

Monday, 25. We bent our way down the west side of the Ohio to Sewickly; here we were detained two days. John Wesley Bond preached to the people, and I added a few feeble words of exhortation. We

having foundered one of our horses, bought a clever little mare for sixty dollars.

Friday, 29. We came to Thomas Fawcett's, fasting. "Surely you may stay a night," it was observed. But no—time presses. Though sick and feeble, we started away at three o'clock. It might not be: about a hundred yards from the house crack went the pole. "It is all for the best," said pious Gilpen when his leg was broken, and he lived to prophesy in after times and better days, while the execrated Mary, who would have burned him at the stake, was moldering in the dust.

Sabbath, 31. Brother Bond preached upon a mount crowned with sugar-trees. I spoke a few words in exhortation. Had we not chained the wheel we should have gone souse into Yellow Creek. *Tuesday,* we had crooked work—we splintered the axle-tree, and stopped at the Widow Pritchard's. We held two meetings—one at noon and again at night.

Ohio.] A High State of Christian Experience.

Wednesday, August 3. Came to Steubenville. At Bezaleel Wells's we have every accommodation that a president might wish for, with great kindness and polite attentions from all the members of the house. I keep my room, and listen to the storms of wind and rain abroad. My occupations are, reading Saurin, the oracles of God, and prayer. My health is better, although I still cough. I live in patience, in purity, and the perfect love of God. Being disappointed on the Sabbath, I must of necessity meet the people of Steubenville on *Monday*. I preached, and there were those who felt besides the speaker.

Cincinnati Conference—Bishop M'Kendree Injured.

Tuesday, September 6. We arrived in Cincinnati. We progressed in our conference business very well, although deprived of the presence of the bishops to preside. Bishop M'Kendree had been thrown from his horse, and was severely wounded in the hip and ribs. John Sale presided with great propriety. He also finished the plan of the stations from a general draft I furnished him. We closed our labors in peace. The news has reached us of the descent of the British in Maryland, and the burning of the public buildings at Washington.

Ky.] Poor Bishops—"Sick, Lame, and in Poverty."

Thursday, 29. We came upon the camp-ground, where we are to hold our conference.

Sabbath, October 2. I ordained about twenty deacons, and gave a sermon and an exhortation. Our encampment cook is Brother Douglass. We are two hours in the chapel, four hours at the preaching-stand, and then come home. We sit six hours a day in conference. Poor bishops—sick, lame, and in poverty! I had wished to visit Mississippi, but the injury received by Bishop M'Kendree being so great that it is yet doubtful whether he will so far recover as to be present at the South Carolina Conference, I must decline going.

S. C.] Asbury's Traveling Companion Unequaled.

Tuesday, 18. Our ride brought us to Jarratt's, on Pigeon River. O my excellent son John Bond! Is there his equal to be found in the United States? He drives me along with the utmost care and tender-

ness ; he fills my appointments by preaching for me when I am disabled ; he watches over me at night after the fatigue of driving all day, and if, when he is in bed and asleep, I call, he is awake and up in the instant to give me medicine, or to perform any other services his sick father may require of him ; and this is done so readily, and with so much patience ! Ought we not to have a Holston Conference, and unite with the circuits west of the Blue Ridge, Botetourt, and New River the circuits in North Carolina ?

N. C.]

Old Friends—Reminiscences.

Tuesday, 25. I preached in the house of Father Benjamin Bird ; there was much feeling manifested. I had for twenty years past wished to visit the Cove ; it is done, and I have seen my old, tried friends, dear Richard and Jonah Bird and William Fulwood, who sheltered and protected me when, during the war of Independence, I was compelled to retire to the swamps and thickets for safety.

Asbury's Little Jersey Wagon his-Pulpit.

Sabbath, 30. I passed a restless, feverish night, yet as I was expected to preach on the camp-ground, I discoursed to a large, simple-hearted congregation. I sat in the end of my little Jersey wagon, screened by the drawn curtain behind me. It was no common time to either speaker or hearers.

Ga.]

Asbury at Conference Work, but Feeble.

Wednesday, December 21. Our conference began and continued until the 27th. There were nearly one hundred characters examined and six admitted upon trial. Twelve are located. Ten elders have

been ordained and twenty-two deacons. Eighty-two preachers have been stationed. None are dead, and none have been expelled. I preached at the ordinations, but with so feeble a voice that many did not hear.

S. C.] *Asbury Expectorates Blood.*

Wednesday, January 18, 1815. Crossed the lakes and Waccamaw, and got in after eight o'clock to Brother Frink's. At William Guse's I saw my kind mothers in Israel, Guse and Rogers. I continue to expectorate blood. It is possible that the children of the French Protestants, martyrs to the tyranny of Louis XIV. and his bloody priesthood, can never forget the God of their fathers? Noble, holy men, may God gather in your children to the latest generations!

N. C. *A Cold Time at Newbern.*

Sabbath, 29. I preached, and there was a trembling from first to last under the word, but it was with cold. Ah, people hard and dull! John Bond preached three times. Possibly in my short exhortation to the society I talked down the tempers of some of the members. Ah, wretched use of liquid fire!

Monday, 30. Cold indeed. My feet suffer. We made twenty-six miles to a house. No wood at the door, and none to cut wood.

A Temporary Paradise.

Wednesday, February 1. We came twenty-two miles. I was nearly done. Had we followed our first plan, and gone to Norfolk, it would have probably cost me my life. It was time to lower our sails and drop anchor at Edward Hall's, near Tarborough. It is paradise regained for a few days.

Va.] Conference at Lynchburg—Treaty of Peace.

Friday, 17. We came into Lynchburg in great weariness. *Sunday*, I preached in the new, neat brick chapel, forty feet by fifty. *Monday* and *Tuesday*, we progressed well in our business. Doctor Jennings preached us a great sermon on "I am the vine, ye are the branches." *Friday*, we ordained elders, and I tried to speak on Phil. ii, 19-22. I failed; I have been almost strangled with an asthmatic cough and vomiting of blood. *Sunday*, I keep the house, and busy myself to organize the stations. Thanks to the God of peace! we are confirmed in the belief that a treaty has been made between the United States and Great Britain. We have ordained twenty deacons and eight elders. Is there not a declination in gifts as well as members? We settled at seventy-one dollars each man.

Md.] "A Few Scattering Shot."

Sunday, *March* 12. In the chapel I lectured on a chapter of Hosea. My mind, perhaps, partakes of the weakness of my body. I let fly a few scattering shot. I keep up a kind of running fire with my small-gun sermonizing. Our ranks are thinned if one hundred have died in the Lancaster, Virginia, circuit. I beheld the ruins of the capitol and the President's house. The navy yard we burned ourselves. O war! war!

Asbury at the Baltimore Conference.

Monday, 13. A cold ride brought us to Elk Ridge, and our old friend, Widow Honor Dorsey, gave us shelter and a welcome. *Tuesday*, came into Baltimore. My kind, inquiring friends are coming in

from morning till night. I am with my old friend, Widow Dickins. *Saturday*, I preached at the Point. Our conference began on *Monday*, and prudence restrained me to one session per day. Perhaps I did not speak officially six times during the continuance of conference. When it was understood that the ancient superintendent did not attend in the afternoon, the visits to him were renewed. Stationing about eighty-five preachers we found to be no small work.

Curiosity of the People to See Asbury.

Wednesday, April 5. James Smith went forward and preached in the Elk chapel. At one o'clock we came up, exhorted, sung, and prayed. We must attend to our appointments, though we should speak but little, for the people wish to see us. We have lived and labored so long that we have become *a spectacle to men*. This place, Elkton, has been founded about fifty years. It may be visited by the Lord in the fourth or fifth generation.

Del.]

Trials and Consolations.

Thursday, 13. I preached once more at Johnstown. The day had been set apart for a general thanksgiving for peace, and I remembered it in the pulpit. We dined with P. Wells, and rode back to Milford. Dust, fever, and too much company, these are my trials. Peace, and perfect love, these are my consolations.

Pa.]

A New Chapel in Philadelphia.

Sunday, 23. Instead of filling an appointment, I was taken with a chill, followed by high fever. I have groaned away the whole week.

Sunday, 30. At three o'clock I preached in the chapel in Tenth-street. What a noble building!

N. J.]

Mr. M'Dowell.

Friday, May 5. We came through bad roads thirty-seven miles, to Mr. Baker's tavern—wearied down. Our host was very attentive, and we had prayer in course. *Saturday*, called upon Thomas Morrell. Had an interview with Mr. M'Dowell, the stationed minister of the Presbyterian congregation in Elizabeth-town. He is modest and pious. O for such men in all Protestant Churches! We drove up to George Suckley's, Greenwich. The weather is most distressing to my feelings.

N. Y.] Asbury Preaches Dr. Coke's Funeral Sermon.

Sunday, 21. By vote of conference I preached the funeral sermon for Doctor Coke—of blessed mind and soul—of the third branch of Oxonian Methodists—a gentleman, a scholar, and a bishop, to us—and as a minister of Christ, in zeal, in labors, and in services, the greatest man in the last century. Poor wheezing, groaning, coughing Francis visited the conference chamber on *Tuesday* and *Thursday*. Although confined to my room, I was not prevented from entering deeply into the consideration of the plan of the stations. The elders thought I came out well. Alas! what miseries and distresses are here. How shall we meet the charge of seventy married out of ninety-five preachers—children—sick wives—and the claims of conference? We are deficient in dollars and discipline.

Mass.] George Pickering Presides at the Unity Conference.

Wednesday, June 7. At Unity George Pickering presided over conference. Our business progressed well. I ordained twelve deacons and twelve elders. I must reduce my projected tour of sixteen hundred miles to a straight ride of three hundred and eighty miles to New York, and thence through Philadelphia to Little York and my son Francis Hollingsworth's. As I passed through Ashgrove I preached in the chapel. *Monday*, to Pittsfield; *Tuesday*, to Troy; *Wednesday*, to Judge Van Ness's; *Thursday*, to Freeborn Garrettson's.

Sabbath, 11. I preached for them; very feeble. *Wednesday*, we started for Poughkeepsie, lodging in a tavern. *Thursday*, we had a heavy ride over Peekskill Mountains.

N. Y.] Asbury's Last Visit to New York City.

Friday, 16. Came rapidly to New York, forty-two miles.

Sabbath, 18. Attended at Fourth-street (Allen-street) chapel; my subject Zeph. i, 12. Time was when I could have preached upon this text.

Tuesday, 20. I spoke a few words at the African chapel, both colors being present. We hasted to Elizabeth that evening. *Wednesday*, to Barkelow's; *Thursday*, to Burlington; *Friday*, to Philadelphia.

Pa.] Asbury's Journal a History of Early Methodism.

Thursday, 29. How the new bridge stretches its pride of length across the wide Susquehanna! Will not the father of eastern waters some day rise in the fury of a winter flood, and tear away this slight fetter

which the puny art of man has thrown over him? Columbia bridge is surely a noble work. We came to son Francis Hollingsworth's, Little York. I sit seven hours a day, looking over and hearing read my transcribed journal. We have examined and approved up to 1807. As a record of the early history of Methodism in America, my journal will be of use; and, accompanied by the minutes of the conferences, will tell all that will be necessary to know. *Friday*, we came away to Carlisle.

Ohio.]

One More Camp-Meeting Sermon.

Friday, August 11. Came to Zanesville. There is a camp-meeting now in operation five miles from this town.

Sabbath, 13. I preached on the camp-ground. My subject was 2 Cor. v, 2: "Knowing the terrors of the Lord, we persuade men."

Politics and Piety do not Mingle Well.

Wednesday, 23. We left Chillicothe in the rain. Some folks are fond of railing out against Methodists, taking the worst as a sample; but bad as they are, I would not take the best of the railers without a change in sentiment, in heart, and in manners. Ah! let us take heed that party and politics do not drive out our piety; they do not mingle well. Foolish people will think they have a right to govern themselves as they please; aye, and Satan will help them. Will this do for us? is not this republic, this land, this people, the Lord's? We acknowledge no other king but the eternal King. And if our great men will not rule in righteousness, but forget God and Christ, what will be the consequence? Ruin.

Ohio Conference at Lebanon.

On *Tuesday, September 12*, we began our journey.

Thursday, 14. Our Ohio Conference began at Lebanon, and all our fears vanished. We have great peace, abundance of accommodation, and comfortable seasons in preaching, noon and night, in the chapel and court-house. We hold in Ohio Conference sixty-eight preachers, sixty-seven of whom are stationed. Ten delegates have been chosen for the coming General Conference.

Asbury in Earnest Talk with Bishop M'Kendree.

Thursday, 21, we came away to Cincinnati. Bishop M'Kendree and myself had a long and earnest talk about the affairs of our Church and my future prospects. I told him my opinion was that the western part of the empire would be the glory of America for the poor and pious; that it ought to be marked out for five conferences, to wit: Ohio, Kentucky, Holston, Mississippi, and Missouri; in doing which as well as I was able, I traced out lines and boundaries.

M'Kendree and "The Boys on the Wing."

Wednesday, 27. We came rapidly to Cincinnati.

Friday, Bishop M'Kendree's fractures are all repaired, and bones strong again I suppose, for he has flown away like a bird with the boys. We must stay and distribute the word of God to the poor, collect a little mite money, and then away, preaching in every town we pass through.

Tenn.] Conference in Tennessee—Asbury Failing.

Friday, October 20. We opened our conference.

Saturday, great peace, great order, and a great deal of business done.

Sabbath, 22. I ordained the deacons and preached a sermon, in which Doctor Coke was remembered. My eyes fail. I will resign the stations to Bishop M'Kendree—I will take away my feet. It is my fifty-fifth year of ministry, and forty-fifth year of labor in America. My mind enjoys great peace and divine consolation. My health is better, which may in part be because of my being less deeply interested in the business of the conferences. Bishop M'Kendree called upon me to preach at the ordination of elders.

Va.] Made Perfect by Labor and Suffering.

November 19. I die daily—am made perfect by labor and suffering, and fill up still what is behind. There is no time or opportunity to take medicine in the day-time, I must do it at night. I am wasting away with a constant dysentery and cough.

S. C.] Last Entry in Asbury's Journal.

Saturday, December 2. A melancholy and awful scene has been witnessed here. Doctor Ivey Finch, about thirty years of age, in driving a violent horse out of Columbia in his chair, was dashed between the shaft and wheel and his skull fractured. The unhappy man was the only son of my dear friend, Edward Finch. I preached on the *Sabbath*. My consolations are great. I live in God from moment to moment.

Thursday, 7. We met a storm and stopped at William Baker's, Granby.

The Last Scenes of Asbury's Life.

Here the journal of Bishop Asbury closes. And having followed him through such a laborious and

useful, and very often suffering, life, it is thought the reader would be gratified in following him to his grave, that he might witness the end and final triumph of this apostolic minister of the Lord Jesus.

The following sketch of the closing scene of his life is taken chiefly from the minutes of the conferences for the year 1816; the only documents now in our possession from which authentic information in reference to this subject can be derived.

It seems that, notwithstanding his extreme debility, which could not be witnessed without awakening the liveliest sensibilities, he flattered himself with the prospect of meeting the ensuing General Conference, which was to assemble in Baltimore on the 2d of May, 1816. In this expectation he was, however, disappointed; the disease with which he was afflicted, terminating in the consumption, made such rapid progress as to baffle the power of medicine, and to prostrate the remaining strength of a constitution already trembling under the repeated strokes of disease, and worn down by fatigue and labor. He appeared, indeed, more like a walking skeleton than like a living man.

His great mind, however, seemed to rise superior to his bodily weakness, and to bid defiance to the hasty approaches of dissolution. Hence, impelled on by that unquenchable thirst to do good, by which he had been actuated for more than fifty years, he continued with his faithful traveling companion, John W. Bond, in a close carriage, to journey from place to place as his exhausting strength would permit, frequently preaching, until he came to Richmond, Virginia, where he preached his last sermon, March 24,

1816, in the old Methodist church. Previous to his entering upon this last pulpit exercise, perceiving his great weakness of body, some of his friends endeavored to dissuade him from preaching ; but he resisted their dissuasions by saying that he must once more deliver his public testimony in that place. Yielding their own tenderness for his temporal welfare to his desire to proclaim once more the counsel of his God, they carried him from his carriage in which he rode—for he was unable either to walk or stand—to the pulpit, and seated him on a table prepared for that purpose.

Though he had to make frequent pauses in the course of his sermon, for the purpose of recovering breath, yet he spoke nearly an hour with much feeling from Rom. ix, 28 : “For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness : because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.” This closed *his* public labors on the earth. The audience were much affected. Indeed, how could it well be otherwise ?

After having delivered his testimony he was carried from the pulpit to his carriage, and rode to his lodgings.

On Tuesday, Thursday, and Friday he journeyed, and finally came to the house of his old friend, Mr. George Arnold, in Spottsylvania. It was his intention to have reached Fredericksburg, about twenty miles further ; but the weather being unfavorable, and his strength continuing to fail, he was compelled to relinquish his design, and accordingly he remained under the hospitable roof of his friend, Mr. Arnold. Hearing Brother Bond conversing with the family

respecting an appointment for meeting, he observed that they need not be in haste. A remark so unusual with him gave Brother Bond much uneasiness. As the evening came on his indisposition greatly increased, and gave evident intimations that his dissolution could not be far distant. About three o'clock next morning he observed that he had passed a night of great bodily affliction.

Perceiving his distress of body, and anxious to retain him as long as possible on the shores of mortality, his friends urged the propriety of sending for a physician; but he gave them to understand it would be useless, saying that before the physician could reach him his breath would be gone, and the doctor could only pronounce him dead! Being asked if he had any thing to communicate, he replied that as he had fully expressed his mind in relation to the Church in his addresses to the bishop and to the General Conference, he had nothing more to add.

About eleven o'clock on Sabbath morning he inquired if it was not time for meeting; but recollecting himself, he requested the family to be called together. This being done agreeably to his request, Brother Bond sung, prayed, and expounded the twenty-first chapter of the Apocalypse. During these religious exercises he appeared calm and much engaged in devotion. After this, such was his weakness, he was unable to swallow a little barley-water which was offered to him, and his speech began to fail. Observing the distress of Brother Bond, he raised his dying hand, at the same time looking joyfully at him. On being asked by Brother Bond if he felt the Lord Jesus to be precious, exerting all his

remaining strength, he, in token of complete victory, raised both his hands. A few minutes after, as he sat on his chair with his head reclined upon the hand of Brother Bond, without a struggle, and with great composure, he breathed his last on Sabbath, the 21st day of March, in the year of our Lord 1816, and in the seventy-first year of his age, after having devoted to the work of the ministry about fifty-five years. forty-five of which were spent in visiting the cities, villages, and wildernesses of North America. During thirty of these he had filled the highly responsible office, and conscientiously discharged the arduous duties, of general superintendent of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

His immortal spirit having taken its flight to the regions of the blessed, his body was committed to the earth, being deposited in the family burying-ground of Mr. Arnold, in whose house he died. His remains were, by order of the General Conference, and at the request of the society of Baltimore, taken up and brought to that city, and deposited in a vault prepared for that purpose under the recess of the pulpit of the Methodist church in Eutaw-street. A vast concourse of the citizens of Baltimore, with several clergymen of other denominations, followed the corpse as it was carried from the General Conference room in Light-street to the place prepared for its reception in Eutaw-street, being preceded by Bishop M'Kendree as the officiating minister, and Brother Black, a representative from the British to the American Conference, and followed by the members of the General Conference as chief mourners. The corpse was placed in Eutaw church, and a funeral oration pronounced

by the Rev. William M'Kendree, the only surviving bishop, after which the body of this great man of God was deposited in the vault, to remain until the resurrection of the just and unjust.

It is needless to make reflections here, or to pass encomiums upon his character the preceding journal speaks for itself, and loudly proclaims the man deeply devoted to God, exerting all his powers of soul and body to promote "peace on earth and good will to men;" and who ceased not his labors until compelled by the command of Him who first called him into being.

May that Church which so long enjoyed the services of this eminent minister of the sanctuary, and for whose prosperity he so diligently and conscientiously toiled and suffered not only cherish a grateful remembrance of his Christian and ministerial virtues, but be long blessed with a succession of ministers who shall make *his* virtues *their* exemplar, and transmit to posterity unsullied those pure doctrines of Christ which FRANCIS ASBURY so faithfully and so successfully proclaimed!

THE END.

NEW BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY CARLTON & LANAHAN,
805 BROADWAY, NEW YORK.

Greek Philosophy in its Relations to Christianity.

By B. F. COCKER, D.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Michigan. 12mo., pp. 531. Price, \$2 75.

This work comprises a profound discussion of the leading philosophical and religious problems of the day, with special reference to the theories of Comte, Sir William Hamilton, Herbert Spencer, and other great thinkers of a recent period, together with a copious exposition of the ancient Greek systems, and the social condition of Athens. It is a work of rare erudition. The writer has mastered his subject and the learning which pertains to it. He is familiar with the prominent systems, and well understands their scope and bearings. He has a remarkable talent for concise, methodical, and exact statements on abstruse subjects. At the same time his learning does not oppress him—does not interfere with his own mental action. He is a firm and independent thinker. His work forms a valuable guide to the history of ancient and modern speculation, while it is full of important original suggestions. Its publication really forms an epoch in the history of American philosophical literature, and elevates its author to a high rank among the philosophical writers of the age. Every philosophical student in the country will find it a treasure.—*Harper's Magazine.*

Rome and Italy at the Opening of the Ecumenical Council.

Depicted in Twelve Letters written from Rome to a Gentleman in America. By EDMOND DE PRESSENSÉ, D.D., Pastor of the Evangelical Church in Paris, Author of "Early Years of the Christian Church," and "Life and Times of Jesus Christ." Translated by Rev. GEORGE PRENTICE, A.M. 12mo. Toned paper. Price, \$1 50.

Of Pressensé the *North British Review* says, "His sentences are like cut crystal." . . . In the present work he gives free range to his powers. He expatiates over the scenes of natural beauty which wonderful Italy spreads before his eye. He lingers in delighted yet critical enthusiasm among her multitudinous works of art. He walks the Roman streets, and paints the monuments of the past and movements of the living present. He descends into those wonders of subterranean Rome, the Catacombs, where lie the nations of the dead in one vast monumental city, cut by nine hundred miles of streets, and where the epitaphs of a whole glorious army of martyrs reveal to us the wonders and glories of the early faith. In the great pivotal questions of the age he is at home. He understands their genesis from the history of Europe. His penetrative eye reads Papal Rome through and through. His prescient eye sees hope only in the far future; a period of blessed sunshine after Europe has tried the awful experiment of utter godlessness.—*Methodist Quarterly Review.*

NEW BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY CARLTON & LANAHAN.

805 BROADWAY, NEW YORK.

Sermons.

By Rev. RICHARD WINTER HAMILTON, D.D., LL.D., Author of "The Doctrine of Rewards and Punishments," "Pastoral Appeals," etc. With a Sketch of his Life by Rev. BISHOP SIMPSON. 12mo., pp. 479. Toned Paper. Price, \$1 75.

Hamilton was celebrated for his conversational powers, his wide range of learning, his commanding oratory. His sermons remind us of what we heard once said of Dempster in his younger days: "He laid his foundations in the skies, and built upward." There is a grandeur in their build, there is a largeness in their component parts, that reminds you of an old cathedral. Of all American preachers, he reminds us most of Henry B. Bascom. But what strikes one as a difference is, that with Bascom the grand pulpit oration was the end; when he had finished, and received the assurance that his sermon was an oratorical success, his entire object seemed gained. With the burning as well as the lofty soul of Hamilton it was but a means, an instrument, upon which, as a production, he set no high estimate, since he was looking to a farther end—the success of the cause for which he wrought.... His sermons cannot be recommended as a model. They serve as a mental stimulus. They are grand Miltonian poems. At the same time they are rich unfoldings of sacred truths, clothed in a style that tasks our language, and ennobling conceptions that task the reader's imagination.—DR. WHEDON, *in the Quarterly Review*.

Principles of a System of Philosophy.

An Essay toward solving some of the more difficult Questions in Metaphysics and Religion. By A. BIERBOWER, A.M. 16mo., pp. 240. Price, \$1 25.

This is a small but very remarkable book. It is seldom that we find so much compactly put up in such a readable form. The author grapples with the stupendous problems of sin, evil, foreknowledge, man's responsibility, God's authorship, providence, prayer, and it seems to us that he should have touched prophecy. The foundation principle of the book is necessary laws, a force that cannot be annihilated, and contrary to which nothing can be created. For example, God himself could not make a triangle with but two sides, nor can he so make a triangle but that the three angles would be equal to two right angles. He cannot make $2 \times 2 = 5$. He cannot make a free moral agent without the possibility of his sinning. Certain evils are necessarily incidental to doing the best things, or to doing any one of several things that might be best. God, therefore, not only does not do every thing, but cannot do every thing, and so neither does he know every thing. We are exceedingly thankful to our Editor and Agents at New York for a work of this kind. It must stir up thought, and give clearer views of God's glorious economy. If it be not entirely satisfactory, it will contribute something toward solving the most difficult problems of the ages. We advise our ministers generally to purchase this work, and read it with care from end to end.—*Northwestern Advocate*.

NEW BOOKS

BY

CARLTON & LANAHAN,

805 BROADWAY, N. Y.

Commentary on Matthew and Mark.

By D. D. WHEDON, D.D. 12mo..... \$1 75
Half morocco..... 2 50

Commentary on Luke and John.

By D. D. WHEDON, D.D. 12mo..... 1 75
Half morocco..... 2 50

Commentary on Acts and Romans.

By D. D. WHEDON, LL.D. 12mo..... 1 75
Half morocco..... 2 50

Bible Geography, Hand-Book of

Containing the Name, Pronunciation, and Meaning of every Place, Nation, and Tribe mentioned in both the Canonical and Apocryphal Scriptures. By Rev. GEO. H. WHITNEY, A.M. Illustrated by nearly One Hundred Engravings and Forty Maps and Plans. Three hundred and Eighty-six closely printed pages..... 2 25
Morocco antique..... 4 50

Topics for Teachers.

A new and valuable work for Ministers, Sunday-school Teachers, and others, on an entirely new plan. By J. COMPER GRAY. 2 vols., 12mo. Illustrated. Also six Maps..... 3 00

Harmony and Exposition of the Gospels.

By JAMES STRONG, S.T.D. Beautifully illustrated by Maps and Engravings. 8vo..... 5 00
Half calf or half morocco..... 6 00

Foster's New Cyclopædia of Illustrations.

Extra cloth, beveled boards..... 5 00
In library leather..... 6 00
Half morocco..... 7 00

NEW BOOKS BY CARLTON & LANAHAN,

805 Broadway, New York.

Problem of Evil.

Translated from the French of M. Ernest Naville. By Prof.
JOHN P. LACROIX. 12mo..... \$1 50

Prince of Pulpit Orators.

A Portraiture of Rev. George Whitefield, M.A. Illustrated
by Anecdotes and Incidents. By Rev. J. B. WAKELEY.
Large 16mo..... 1 25

Wesley His Own Historian.

Illustrations of his Character, Labors, and Achievements.
From his own Diaries. By Rev. EDWIN L. JANES. 12mo.. 1 50

Consecrated Talents ;

Or, The Life of Mrs. Mary W. Mason. With an Introduction
by Bishop JANES. 12mo..... 1 50

Sacred Memories ;

Or, Annals of Deceased Preachers of the New York and
New York East Conferences. With a full Account of the
Reunion Services held at St. Paul's M. E. Church, New York,
April 3, 1868, together with the Addresses there delivered.
By Rev. W. C. SMITH, of the New York Conference. With
an Introduction by Rev. Bishop JANES. 16mo..... 1 25

Garden of Sorrows ; or, The Ministry of Tears.

By Rev. JOHN ATKINSON. Revised edition. 12mo..... 1 50
Gilt edges..... 2 00

Proverbs of Solomon.

Illustrated by Historical Parallels from Drawings by John
Gilbert. Twenty Illustrations. Square 12mo., beveled.... 2 50
Morocco, extra..... 5 00

Mission of the Spirit.

By Rev. L. R. DUNN. 16mo..... 1 25

Saving Faith.

By Rev. I. CHAMBERLAYNE. 12mo..... 1 25

Inventor, Trials of an

Or, Life of Charles Goodyear. Large 16mo..... 1 25

Views from Plymouth Rock.

By Z. A. MUDGE. Large 16mo..... 1 50

NEW BOOKS BY CARLTON & LANAHAN,

805 Broadway, New York.

Spiritualism ; with the Testimony of God and Man against it.

By Rev. W. McDONALD. 16mo..... \$1 25

The Manuscript Man ; or, The Bible in Ireland.

By Miss E. H. WALSHE. Illustrated. 12mo..... 1 25

The Jews :

Manners and Customs of. 12mo..... 0 50

Rites and Worship. 12mo..... 0 50

Laws and Polity. 12mo..... 0 50

The Forest Boy.

A Sketch of the Life of Abraham Lincoln. By Rev. Z. A. MUDGE. Large 16mo..... 1 25

Witch Hill.

A History of Salem Witchcraft, including Illustrated Sketches of Persons and Places. By Rev. Z. A. MUDGE. Large 16mo. 1 25

Round the World.

A Series of Letters. By Bishop CALVIN KINGSLEY, D.D.
Two volumes. 16mo..... 2 50
Gilt edges..... 3 00

Our Oriental Missions : India, China, and Bulgaria.

By Bishop EDW. THOMSON, D.D., LL.D. Two vols. 16mo. 2 50
Gilt..... 3 00

Irving, Washington, Memoir of

With Selections from his Works, and Criticisms. By CHAS. ADAMS, D.D. Large 16mo..... 1 25

Anecdotes of the Wesleys.

By Rev. J. B. WAKELEY. Large 16mo..... 1 25

Six Years in India.

Large 16mo..... 1 25

Facts about Wives and Mothers.

By Rev. R. DONKERSLEY. 16mo..... 1 25

NEW BOOKS BY CARLTON & LANAHAN,

805 Broadway, New York.

Will, The Freedom of the

By D. D. WHEDON, D.D. 12mo..... \$1 75

Meditations on the Essence of Christianity.

By M GUIZOT. 12mo..... 1 75

Meditations on the Actual State of Christianity.

By M. GUIZOT. 12mo..... 1 75

Christian Purity ; or, The Heritage of Faith.

Revised. By R. S. FOSTER, D.D., LL.D. 12mo..... 1 75

Living Words ;

Or, Unwritten Sermons of the late John M'Clintock, D.D., LL.D. Reported Phonographically. With a Preface by Bishop Janes.....

1 75

Morocco antique..... 4 00

Word of God Opened.

By Rev. B. K. PEIRCE. Large 16mo..... 1 25

Misread Passages of Scripture.

By J. BALDWIN BROWN. 12mo..... 0 75

Philosophy, Principles of a System of

An Essay toward Solving some of the more difficult Questions in Metaphysics and Religion. By A. BIERBOWER, A.M.

Large 16mo..... 1 25

Religion and the Reign of Terror ;

Or, The Church during the French Revolution. Prepared from the French of M. Edmond De Pressensé. By Rev.

J. P LACROIX, A.M. 12mo..... 1 75

Christianity, Early Years of

The Apostolic Era. By E. DE PRESSENSE, D.D..... 1 75

Rome and Italy at the Opening of the Œcumenical Council.

Depicted in Twelve Letters written from Rome to a Gentleman in America. By EDMOND DE PRESSENSE, D.D. 12mo.. 1 50

BOOK CONCERN PUBLICATIONS,

805 Broadway, New York.

Life and Times of Asbury.

The Pioneer Bishop; or, the Life and Times of Francis Asbury By W. P. STRICKLAND. With an Introduction by NATHAN BANGS, D.D.

12mo. Half calf
Full calf, gilt
Morocco

Harmony of the Gospels.

Harmony and Exposition of the Gospels. By JAMES STRONG, S.T.D. Beautifully illustrated by Maps and Engravings.

8vo. Sheep

Clarke's Commentary.

Imperial 8vo., 6 vols. Turkey mor., full gilt, and antique

Hymns.

A variety of sizes and styles of binding.

Hymns and Tunes.

Morocco antique

Biographical Sketches.

8vo. Imitation morocco

This splendid book contains sketches of Wesley, M'Kendree, Emory, Roberts, Hedding, Fletcher, Garrettson, Fisk, Pickering, Levings, Olin, and Bunting, and a sketch of the Old New England Conference, and is most superbly illustrated.

The True Woman.

By J. T. PECK, D.D.

12mo. Muslin, gilt
Morocco

Friendships of the Bible.

12mo. Muslin
Silk

Here are beautifully displayed the most touching incidents of human friendship that are found in the Book of books.

Ministering Children:

A Story showing how even a Child may be as a Ministering Angel of Love to the Poor and Sorrowful.

Illustrated. Muslin
Do. Gilt edges
Do. Morocco and full calf

BOOK CONCERN PUBLICATIONS,

805 Broadway, New York.

Story of a Pocket Bible.

Illustrated.

Missionary in many Lands.

By ERWIN HOUSE.

Illustrated.

Missionary among Cannibals.

Illustrated.

The Christian Maiden.

Memorial of Miss Eliza Hessel.

The Object of Life:

A Narrative illustrating the Insufficiency of the World and the Sufficiency of Christ. With four Illustrations.

Mother's Mission.

Poet Preacher.

Illustrated.

Palissy the Huguenot Potter.

Illustrated.

Lady Huntingdon Portrayed:

Including Brief Sketches of some of her Friends and Co laborers. By the Author of "The Missionary Teacher," "Sketches of Mission Life," etc.

Leaves that never Fade;

Or, Records of Divine Teaching and Help.

24xo.

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: May 2006

PreservationTechnologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066



